



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

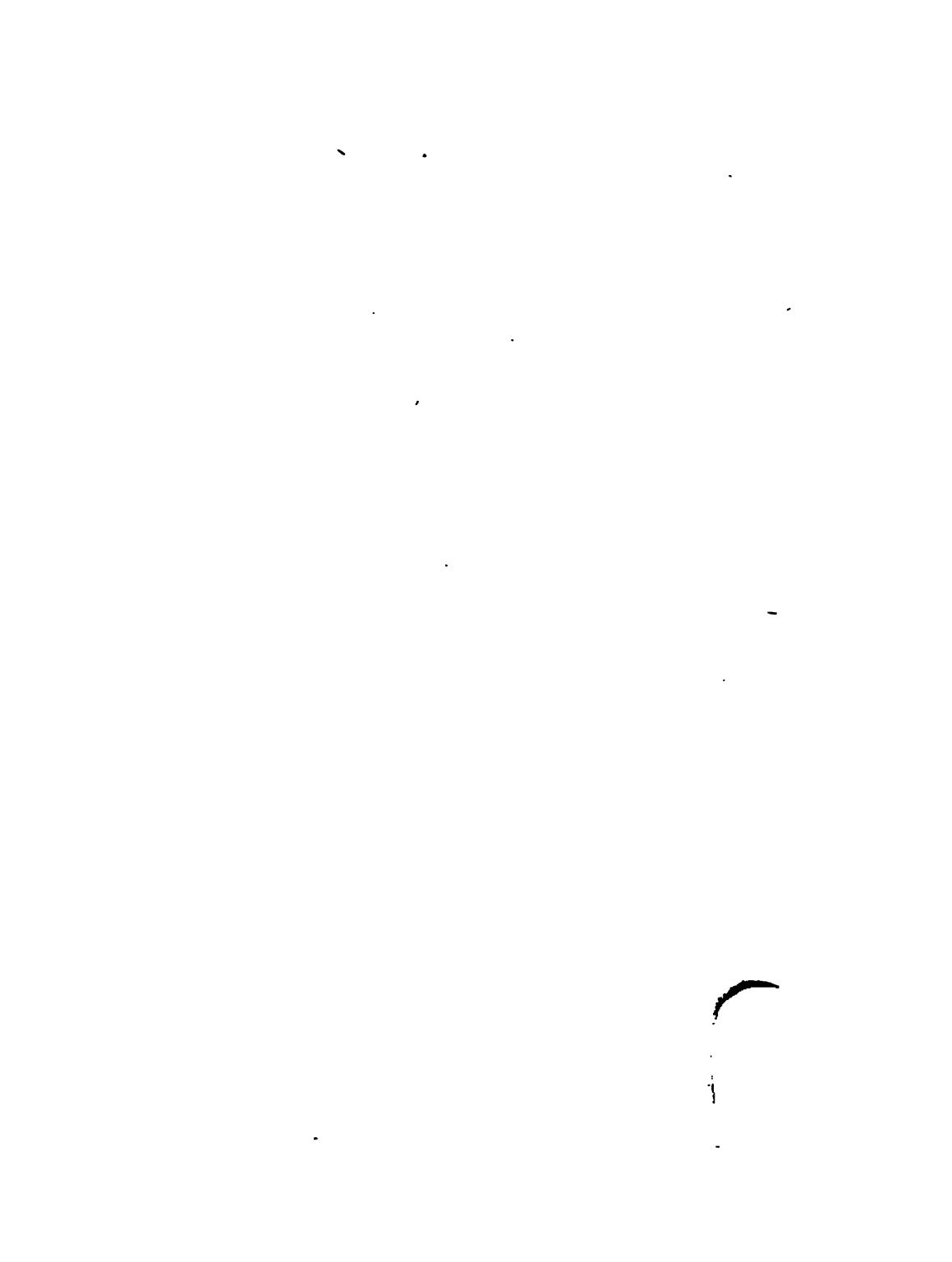
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

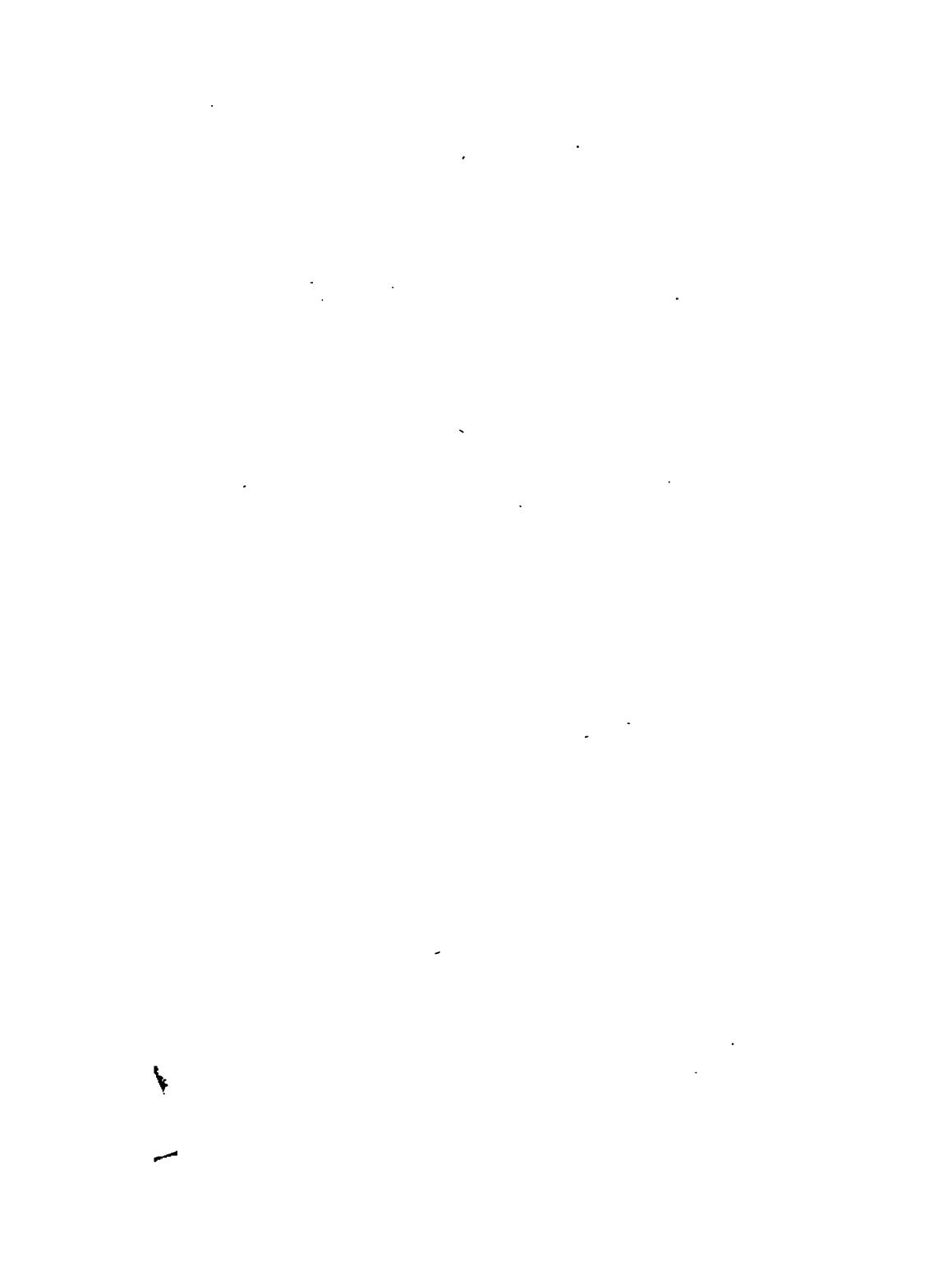


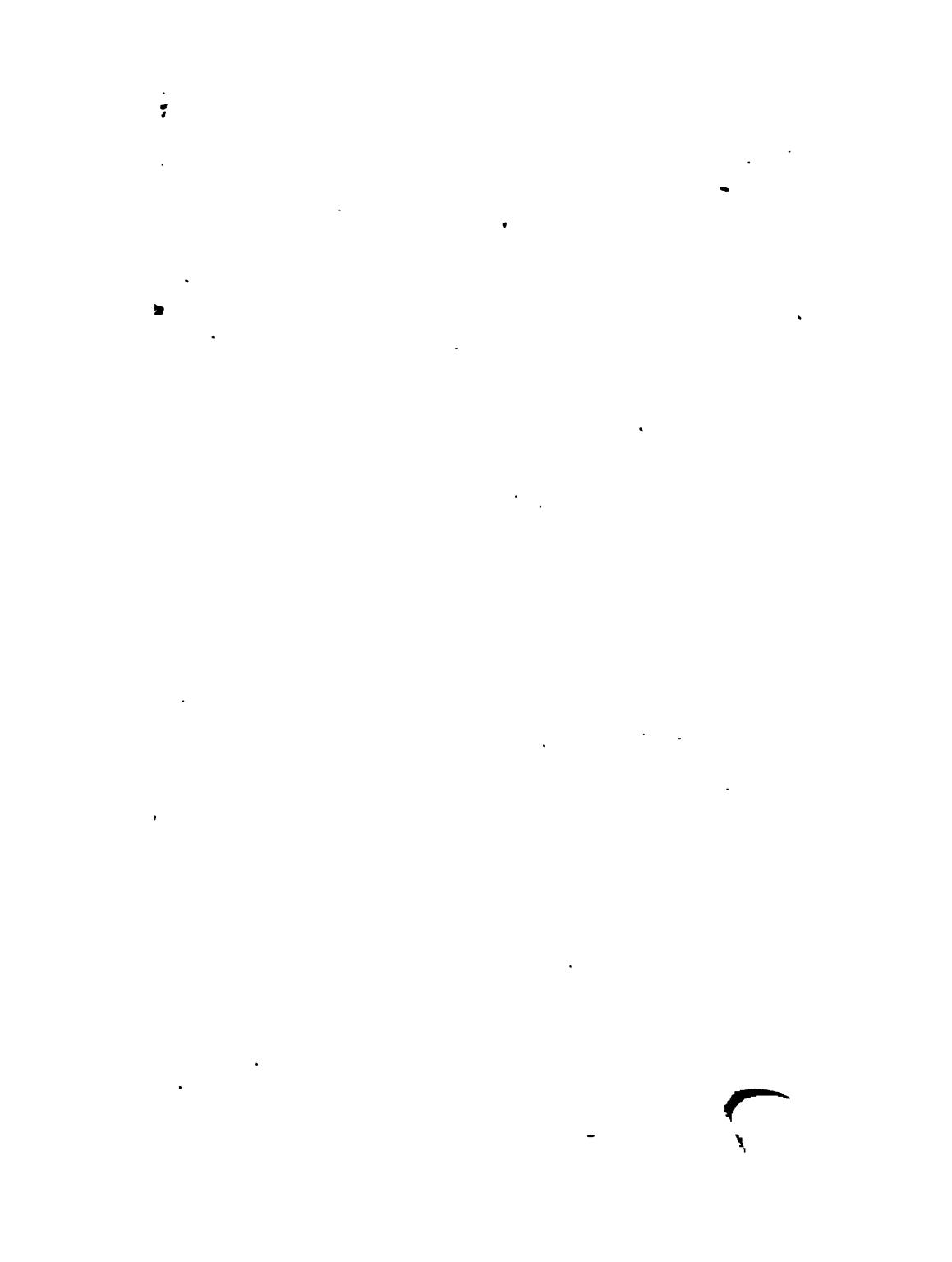


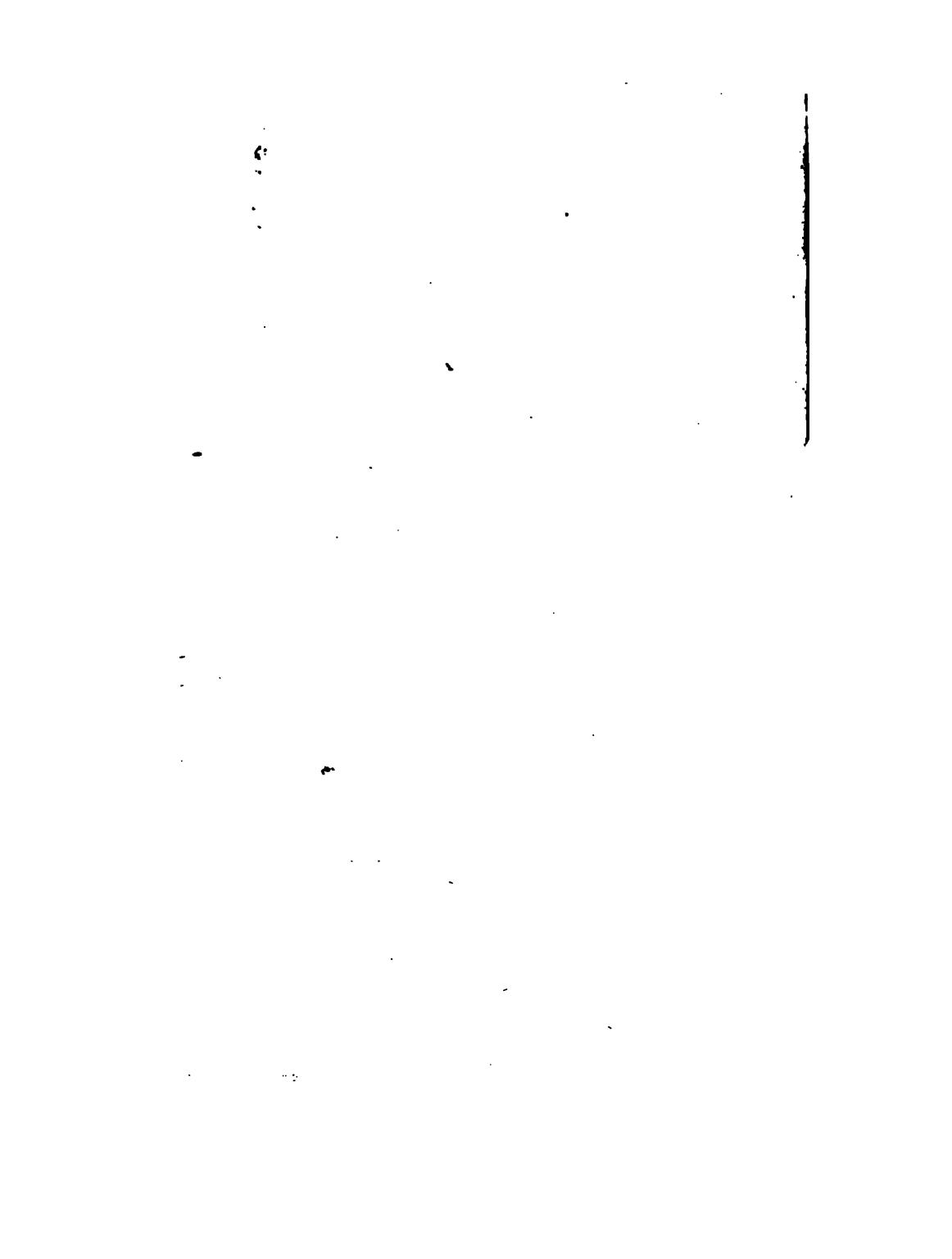


H674



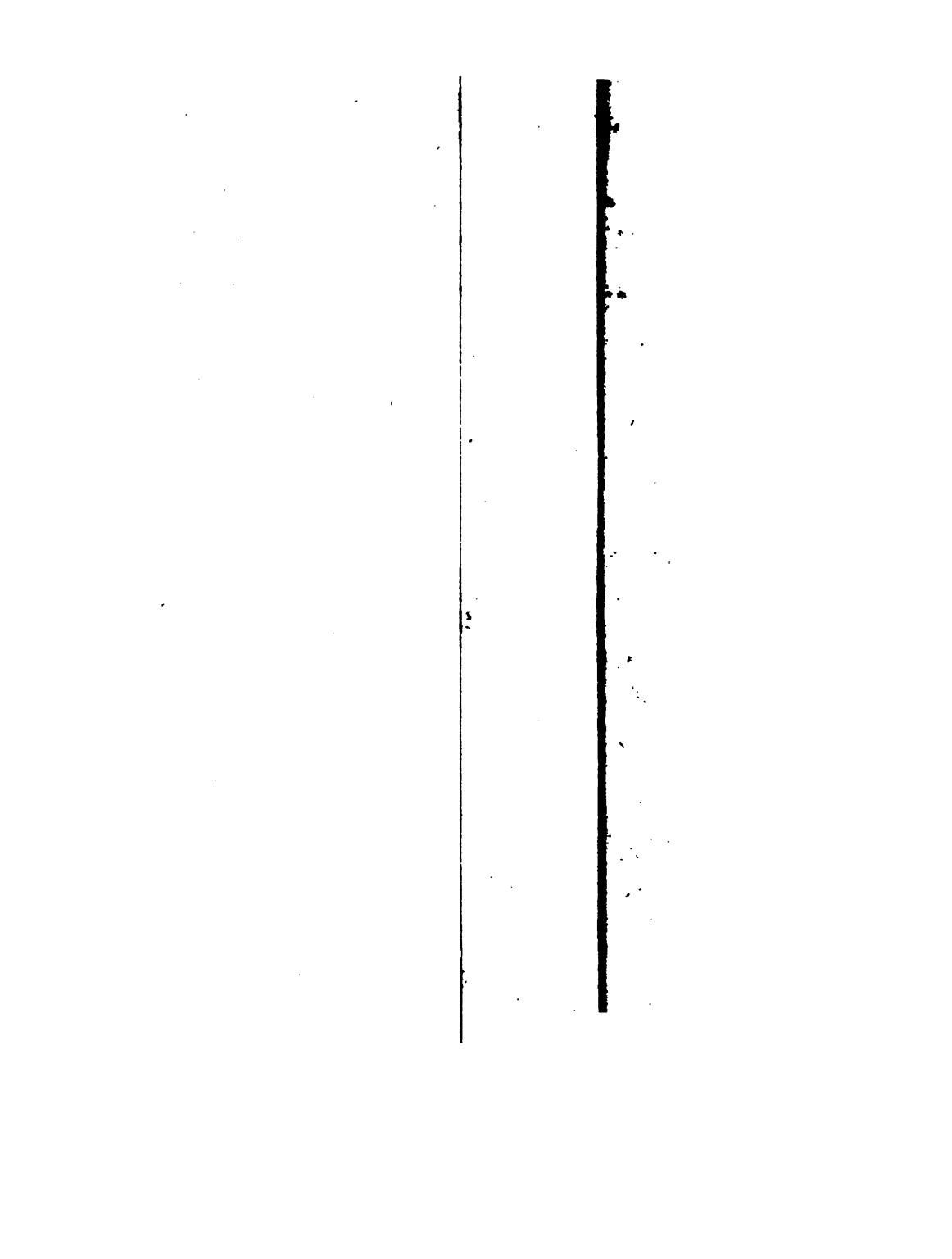








24



# ELEMENTARY GEOLOGY.

---

BY EDWARD HITCHCOCK,

PROFESSOR OF CHEMISTRY AND NATURAL HISTORY IN AMHERST COLLEGE, AND  
GEOLOGIST TO THE STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS.

---

STANFORD LIBRARY

AMHERST:

PUBLISHED BY J. S. & C. ADAMS.

BOSTON: CROCKER AND BREWSTER. NEW YORK: F. J. HUNTINGTON,  
AND CO. GOULD, NEWMAN AND SAXTON. PHILADELPHIA:  
THOMAS, COWPERTHWAIT AND CO., MARSHALL, AND CO.

1840.

64

**211281**

Entered according to the Act of Congress, in the year 1840, by

**EDWARD HITCHCOCK,**

in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of Massachusetts.

**WILLIAM J. HITCHCOCK**

**©**

## P R E F A C E.

---

In preparing this work, three objects have been kept principally in view. The first was to prepare a Text Book for my Classes in Geology: the second, to bring together the materials for a Synopsis of Geology, to be appended to my Final Report on the Geology of Massachusetts, now in the press: And the third was, to present to the public a condensed view of the present state of geological facts, theories, and hypotheses; especially to those who have not the leisure to study very extended works on this subject. In its execution, the work differs from any with which I am acquainted, in the following particulars. 1. It is arranged in the form of distinct Propositions or Principles, with Definitions and Proofs: and the Inferences follow those principles on which they are mainly dependent. This method was adopted, as it long has been in most other sciences, for the convenience of teaching: but it also enables one to condense the matter very much. 2. An attempt has been made to present the whole subject in its proper proportions; viz. its facts, theories, and hypotheses, with their historical and religious relations, and a sketch of the geology of all the countries of the globe that have been explored. All geological works with which I am acquainted, either omit some of these subjects, or dwell very disproportionately upon some of them. 3. It is made more American than republications from European writers, by introducing a greater amount of our geology. 4. It contains copious references to writers, where the different points here briefly discussed, may be found amply treated. 5. It contains a *Palaeontological Chart*, whose object is to bring under a glance of the eye, the leading facts respecting organic remains. (When first prepared, I had supposed this method of illustration entirely new: but I find it has recently appeared in Germany.) Whether these peculiarities of the present work will be regarded by the public as improvements, important enough to deserve their patronage, time only can show.

Type of two sizes is employed in this work. The most important principles, facts, and proofs, are in larger typé, to call the special attention of the student or reader: while many of the details and remarks are in smaller type. The subject is subdi-

vided into the following heads ; whose abbreviations will not need explanation : viz. *Definition* : *Principle* : *Description* : *Inference* : *Remark* : *Proof* : *Details* : *Illustration*. Where an inference depends upon several principles, I have added a synopsis of all the proofs on which it rests.

In European countries especially, and to a good degree in our own country, geology has become a popular and even fashionable study. In most of our higher Seminaries of learning, it is explained by at least a course of lectures. But in Institutions of a lower grade, it receives far less attention than its merits deserve. Why should not a science, whose facts possess a thrilling interest; whose reasonings are admirably adapted for mental discipline, and often severely task the strongest powers ; and whose results are many of them as grand and ennobling as those of Astronomy itself; (such Astronomers as Herschel and Whewell being judges,\*) why should not such a science be thought as essential in education as the kindred branches of Chemistry and Astronomy? That all the parts of this Science are not yet as well settled as those of Astronomy and Chemistry, is no objection to making it a branch of education, so long as every intelligent man must admit that its fundamental facts and principles are well established.

---

Upon the Junior Class in Amherst College, for whose use this Treatise is primarily intended, I would take this opportunity of urging the importance of studying the Collections of Geological Specimens in the Cabinet of the Institution. For since rocks and organic remains form the chief data in geological reasonings, how can the student understand those reasonings, unless he examines the rocks either in the Cabinet or in the mountains ? And he cannot successfully study the latter, without some acquaintance with the former. The Collections in the College Cabinet, have been recently so much enlarged as to furnish the most ample means for the study of the rocks of the Eastern as well as the Western Continent. I would recommend that the Collections be studied in the following order.

1. A General Collection of Rocks and Organic Remains of about 900 specimens, the larger part of them American, arranged nearly according to the classification adopted in this Treatise.

\* "Geology, in the magnitude and sublimity of the objects of which it treats, undoubtedly ranks, in the scale of the sciences, next to astronomy."—*Sir John Herschell.*

2. A Collection of 600 specimens, of rocks and organic remains from Continental Europe. This is arranged according to the system of Prof. Leonhard; and is so complete as to leave little to be desired as to the rocks of that part of the world. Nearly every variety described in geological works will be found here.

3. Rocks and organic remains from England, amounting to 325 specimens. This is far less complete than the Collection from Continental Europe. (For want of room, this Collection, as well as about 1200 specimens of the Massachusetts rocks, are not yet arranged in the College Cabinet: But they are accessible in my private Cabinet.)

4. Rocks and fossils from the West Indies, amounting to 225 specimens. This is a part of the late bequest of Prof. Hovey; and is particularly rich in tertiary organic remains.

5. Rocks of Syria, Palestine, and other parts of Asia Minor and Persia, amounting to 229 specimens. This is particularly valuable as illustrating the geology of Mount Lebanon and Anti-Libanus; which belong mostly to the cretaceous formation. We are indebted for these specimens chiefly to Rev. Messrs. Hebard, Homes, Schneider, Powers, Perkins and Merrick, American Missionaries in Asia Minor and Persia.

6. An Economic Collection of 300 specimens from Continental Europe. This is intended to exhibit specimens of all the rocks and minerals that are employed in the useful and ornamental arts, and embraces the most important ores, precious stones, coals, &c. and without so much knowledge of mineralogy as to be able to recognize these, no one ought to consider himself a geologist.

7. Rocks, soils, and minerals of Massachusetts; amounting to 2700 specimens.

8. Rocks and minerals of Connecticut; amounting to about 600 specimens. This is the donation of Prof. Shepard; and, as well as the specimens from Massachusetts, will illustrate the insensible manner in which rocks pass into one another.

9. A Collection of 32 Specimens, illustrating the Gold Formation of North Carolina.

10. A Collection of 52 Specimens, illustrating the Gypsum Formation of Nova Scotia.

11. A Collection of 172 Specimens, taken along a Section extending from Boston to the Lake of the Woods.

12. A Collection of 75 Specimens of fossil footmarks and the impressions of rain drops from New England and Germany.

By consulting a Geological Map of Massachusetts, it will be seen that nearly all the principal groups of rocks, stratified and unstratified, except the newer secondary and tertiary, occur within a short distance of Amherst College: And the Student, who

means to become a geologist, must not rest satisfied till he has seen these in their native beds.

Perhaps I cannot more effectually meet the wishes of a highly esteemed friend in a far distant land, than by introducing an extract of his letter on the importance of an acquaintance with geology, by those looking forward to the missionary work: and some such I hope, may always be found in the classes whom I may be called to address. Rev. Justin Perkins, American Missionary in Oromiah, in Persia, under date of Oct. 1, 1839, thus writes.

"Did not my missionary work press upon me so constantly, and with such mountain weight, I should feel strongly tempted to study geology, (of which I know very little,) so wonderfully interesting, in a geological point of view, does the face of Persia appear to me. Indeed, I often feel that this interesting and important science has peculiar claims on American Missionaries. Visiting, as they do, all portions of the world, they enjoy opportunities of contributing to it, with almost no sacrifice of time or effort, which are possessed by no other class of American citizens. I know not that I can better atone for my own deficiency in this respect, than by requesting you, in my behalf, to urge upon the missionary students in College, the high importance of their obtaining a good practical knowledge of geology and mineralogy, while attending your lectures, as they would enhance their usefulness, in future life. It is the combined light of **ALL TRUTH, scientific, as well as religious**, which is to render so perfect and glorious the splendor of millenial day!"

I will add only, that Mr. Perkins' "deficiency," of which he speaks, is much less than his modesty would lead us to infer: and to enforce his recommendation by another consideration, I will quote a few sentences from the letter of another American Missionary, on Mount Lebanon, who has charge of a seminary for youth, at Beyroot. Rev. Story Hebard writes thus from the Island of Cyprus, on the 23d of April, 1840.

"Our Seminary at Beyroot is in a flourishing condition. I wish very much to interest my pupils in the study of the Natural Sciences. They are well acquainted with our language, and are now sufficiently advanced to study some of these with advantage. Next fall, or winter, I wish to give them a course of lectures on mineralogy and geology."

*Amherst College, Mass.*

*Aug. 1, 1840.*

## CONTENTS.

---

### SECTION I.

A General Account of the Constitution and Structure of the Earth, and of the Principles on which Rocks are Classified. . . . .	9
--	---

### SECTION II.

The Chemistry and Mineralogy of Geology. . . . .	39
--	----

### SECTION III.

Lithological Characters of the Stratified Rocks . . . . .	47
---	----

### SECTION IV.

Lithological Characters and Relative Age of the Un- stratified Rocks. . . . .	64
--	----

### SECTION V.

Palæontology, or the Science of Organic Remains. . . . .	80
--	----

### SECTION VI.

Operation of Aqueous and Atmospheric Agencies in pro- ducing Geological Changes. . . . .	162
---	-----

## SECTION VII.

Operation of Organic Agencies in producing Geological Changes.	203
--	-----

## SECTION VIII.

Operation of Igneous Agencies in producing Geological Changes.	211
--	-----

## SECTION IX.

Connection between Geology and Natural and Revealed Religion.	258
---	-----

## SECTION X.

The History of Geology.	276
-------------------------	-----

## SECTION XI.

Geographical Geology.	288
-----------------------	-----

# ELEMENTARY GEOLOGY.

---

## SECTION I.

### A GENERAL ACCOUNT OF THE CONSTITUTION AND STRUCTURE OF THE EARTH, AND OF THE PRINCIPLES ON WHICH ROCKS ARE CLASSIFIED.

**Definition.** Geology is the History of the mineral masses that compose the earth, and of the organic remains which they contain.

**Remark 1.** Some writers divide Geology into two branches: 1. *Geognosy*, or Positive Geology, which embraces only the known facts of the science. 2. *Geogony*, or Speculative Geology, which attempts to point out the causes of those facts, and the inferences that result from them. See *Traité Élémentaire de Géologie par M. Rozet: Discours Préliminaire*, p. V. Also, *Dictionnaire Classique d'Hist. Naturelle: Art. Géologie*. Others make these divisions. 1. Physical Geography. 2. Geognosy. 3. Geogony. See *Éléments de Géologie*, par J. G. Omalius D'Halloy, p. 1. Others embrace all legitimate theory under Geogony, and confine the hypothetical part of the subject to Geology. See *Tableau des Terrains*, par Alexandre Brongniart, p. 2. But these distinctions are of little importance, and not much used by English and American writers.

**Remark 2.** A division of geology of more practical value is the following:

1. *Economical Geology*, or an account of rocks with reference to their pecuniary value, or immediate application to the wants of society.

2. *Scenographical Geology*, or an account of rocks as they exhibit themselves to the eye in their general outlines: in other words, an account of natural scenery.

**Observation.** With the exception of vegetation, natural scenery is all produced by the rocks that constitute the surface: and the geologist can often determine the nature of rocks by the peculiarities of their great outlines.

3. *Scientific Geology*, or the history of rocks in their relation to science, or philosophy.

**Def.** Every part of the globe, which is not animal or vegetable, including water and air, is regarded as Mineral.

**Def.** The term Rock, in its popular acceptation, embraces only the solid parts of the globe: but in geological language,

Includes also the loose materials—the soils, clays, and gravels—that cover the solid parts.

**Principle.** The form of the earth is that of a sphere, flattened at the poles, technically, an oblate spheroid. The polar diameter is about 26 miles shorter than the equatorial.

**Proof.** 1. Measurement of a degree of the meridian in different latitudes. 2. Astronomical phenomena; particularly the precession of the equinoxes.

**Inference.** Hence it is inferred that the earth must have been once in a fluid state; since it has precisely the form which a fluid globe, revolving on its axis with the same velocity as the earth would assume.

**Prop.** Taken as a whole, the earth is about five times heavier than water; or 2 1-2 times heavier than common rocks.

**Prop.** 1. Careful observations upon the relative attracting power of particular mountains and the whole globe, with zenith sector. 2. The disturbing effect of the earth upon the heavenly bodies.

**Inference.** We hence learn that the density of the earth increases from the surface to the center: but it does not follow that the nature of the internal parts is different from its crust. For in consequence of condensation by pressure, water at the depth of 362 miles, would be as heavy as quicksilver, and air as heavy as water, at 34 miles in depth: while at the center, steel would be compressed into one fourth, and stone into one eighth of its bulk at the surface. *Mrs Somerville's Connection of the Physical Sciences.*

**Descrip.** The surface of the earth, as well beneath the ocean as on the dry land, is elevated into ridges and insulated peaks, with intervening vallies and plains. *Rozet*, p. 86.

**Descrip.** The highest mountains are about 29000 feet above the ocean level, and the mean height of the dry land does not exceed two miles. *De la Beche's Manual of Geology*, p. 2.

**Third Edition.**

**Details.** The height of a few of the most elevated mountains on the globe is as follows: *See Encyclopedia of Geography*, Vol. 3, p. 605.

Sorata in Upper Peru.	25,400 feet.
Illinani in " do.	24,200 "
Chimborazo, Andes	21,000 "
Himalayah Mountains, E. Indies	29,000 "
Mont Blanc, Europe	15,668 "
Ararat	17,700 "

**Descrip.** The mean depth of the ocean is probably between two and three miles, *De la Beche's Manual of Geology* p. 2. It has been calculated from the phenomena of tides that the Atlantic in its middle part is above nine miles deep. *Phillips Geology* p. 23.

**Inf.** Hence it appears that the present dry land might be spread over the bottom of the ocean, so that the globe should

be entirely covered with water. For nearly three fourths of the surface is at present submerged.

*Obs.* It is stated in most modern geological works, that an extensive country around the Caspian Sea, is sunk from 200 to 300 feet below the general level of the ocean. But recent and more accurate examinations have shown this statement to be incorrect. *Lyell's Geology*, Vol. 3. p. 270, first edition; Also same work Vol. 2. p. 392. First American from 5th. London Edition.

### *Stratification.*

*Def.* The rocks which compose the globe are divided into two great classes, the STRATIFIED and UNSTRATIFIED.

*Def.* Stratification consists of the division of a rock into regular masses, by nearly parallel planes, occasioned by a peculiar mode of deposition. Strata vary in thickness from that of paper to many yards.

*Obs.* Strata are often very tortuous and sometimes quite wedge shaped. Nevertheless the fundamental idea of stratification is that of parallelism in the layers: *Macculloch's Classification of Rocks*, p. 100: also *his System of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 67: also *Greenough's Geology*, chap. 1.

*Def.* The term *Stratum* is sometimes employed to designate the whole mass of a rock, while its parallel subdivisions are called *beds* or *layers*. The term *bed* is also employed to designate a layer, whose shape may be more or less lenticular, or wedge shaped, included between the layers of a more extended rock; as a bed of gypsum, a bed of coal, a bed of iron, &c. In this case the bed is sometimes said to be subordinate.

*Def.* When beds of different rocks alternate, they are said to be interstratified.

*Def.* A seam is a thin layer of rock that separates the bed or strata of another rock: Ex.gr. a seam of coal, of limestone &c. The term is also employed sometimes in this country to designate the interval or crack between two contiguous beds.

*Descrip.* A bed or stratum is often divided into thin laminae, which bear the same relation to a single bed, as that does to the whole series of beds. This division is called the *lamination* of the bed; and always results from a mechanical mode of deposition. The appearance of fissility which it gives to a rock, is often deceptive; since the layers separate with great difficulty. This is especially true in gneiss.

*Descrip.* The lamination is sometimes parallel to the planes of stratification; sometimes they are much inclined to each other; and often it is undulating and tortuous.

Fig. 1, shows the different kinds of lamination.

Fig. 1.

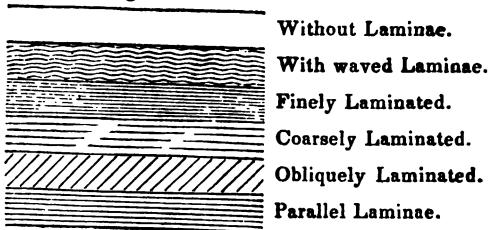


Fig. 2, is a case of very contorted lamination, in a stratum of gneiss two or three feet thick, copied from a loose block in Colebrook, in Connecticut.

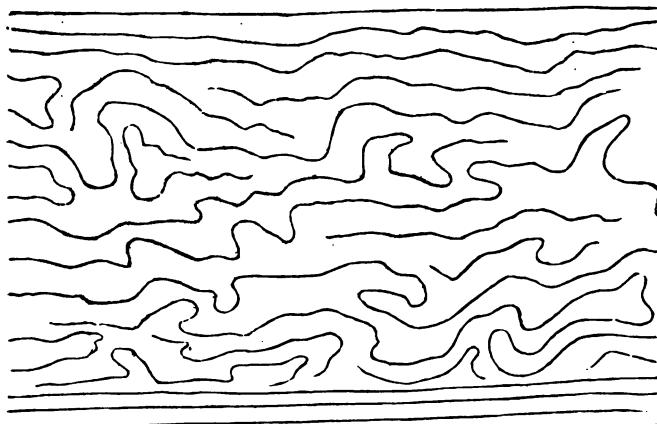
Fig. 2.



*Contorted Laminæ of Gneiss: Colebrook, Ct.*

Fig. 3, exhibits a section in a bed of diluvial clay, in Deerfield, in Massachusetts. It will be seen that the layers of clay above and below those disturbed, (which are only three feet thick,) are horizontal and undisturbed,

Fig. 3.

*Contorted Laminae of Clay: Deerfield, Mass.*

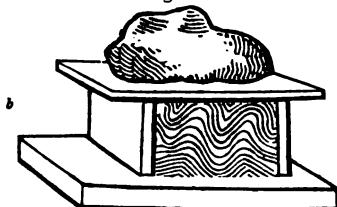
*Inf.* The laminae of beds could not have been deposited originally in the curved position shown in the preceding figures: hence the flexure must have been the result of some subsequent operation.

*Inf.* Hence the layers at some period after their deposition, must have been in a state so plastic that they could be bent without breaking.

#### *Origin of the varieties of Lamination.*

*Causes.* All the lamination of stratified rocks was undoubtedly produced originally by deposition in water, and the varieties have resulted from modifying circumstances. 1. The parallel laminae are the result of quiet deposition upon a level surface. 2. The waved lamination, in many instances, is nothing but *ripple marks*; such as are seen constantly upon the sand and mud at the bottom of rivers, lakes, and the ocean. In the secondary rocks this is too manifest to be mistaken. 3. The oblique lamination has generally been the result of deposition upon a steep shore, where the materials are driven over the edge of an inclined plane. 4. Highly contorted lamination has often resulted from lateral and vertical pressure, as illustrated by Fig. 4.

Fig. 4.



*Illus.* If pieces of cloth of different colors be placed upon a table c, and covered by a weight, a, and then lateral forces b b, be applied; while the weight will be somewhat raised, the cloth will be folded and contorted precisely like the laminae of many rocks; as is shown in the figure.

*Prin.* The agency of water and heat is sufficient to bring rocks, in nearly every known case, into that plastic state which is necessary to make them bend without breaking.

*Proof.* 1. Water alone renders clay eminently plastic; and it imparts a degree of plasticity to nearly every variety of unconsolidated strata; so that this, without heat, may have prepared all such strata for the flexures which they exhibit. Water also renders some solid rocks quite flexible; as limestones and sandstones; and it penetrates very deep into the solid crust of the globe; so that some of the flexures even in the solid rocks may have been produced by forces acting upon them when saturated with water.

2. Flexures are the most abundant and extensive in the vicinity of rocks that have been melted. And it is admitted that all the older stratified rocks have been exposed more or less to the influence of heat from the unstratified; and it is also true, that rocks may be heated almost to the melting point without destroying their stratified and laminated structure. So that in heat, we have a cause sufficient to prepare rocks for any possible degree of contortion.

*Prin.* Volcanic forces have operated from beneath upon most of the older rocks, whereby they have been bent upward. The weight of the ocean, of diluvium, &c., has bent them downward; gravity and other agencies more local, have produced a lateral pressure; especially when the strata were highly inclined: and these various agencies will account for nearly every case of flexure, not only of the laminae, but of the beds also. But more on this point further on.

*Descrip.* In clay beds containing disseminated carbonate of lime, we frequently find nodules of argillo-calcareous matter, sometimes spherical, but more usually flattened. These are generally called *Claystones*, and the common impression is, that they were rounded by water. But they are unquestionably the result of molecular attraction. The slaty divisions of the clay often extend through the concretions: and on splitting them open, a leaf, or a fish, or some other organic relic, is frequently found. In New England, however, both the slaty cleavage and the organic nucleus are usually wanting.

Fig. 5.

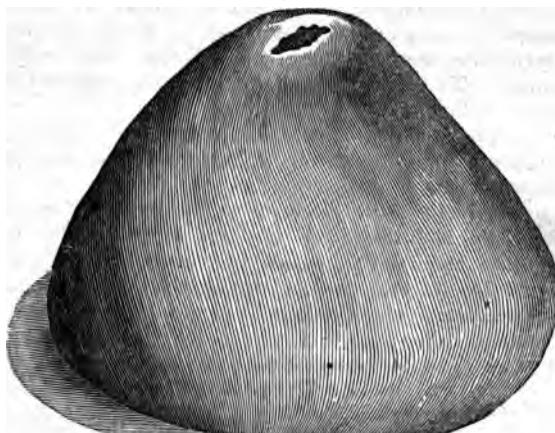


Fig. 5, will convey an idea of the manner in which these concretions are situated in the clay.

**Descrip.** Similar concretions abound in argillaceous iron ore, which is often disseminated in clay beds or shale. These nodules are usually made up of concentric coats of the ore: but sometimes the slaty structure of the rock containing them, extends through them, and organic relics are found to form their nucleus.

Fig. 6. Represents a concretion of hydrate of iron from the clay cliffs of Gay Head in Massachusetts. The axis consists of a piece of lignite, and its resemblance to a pear is very striking: or rather to a large garden squash: for its diameter is more than seven inches.

Fig. 6.



Concretion of Iron Ore: Gay Head.

**Descrip.** The internal parts of these concretions of limestone and hydrate of iron, often exhibit numerous cracks, which sometimes divide the matter into columnar masses, but more frequently into irregular shapes. When these cracks are filled with calcareous spar, as is often the case in calcareous concretions, they take the name of *Ludus Helmontii*,—*Turtle Stones*, or more frequently of *Septaria*. From these is prepared in England the famous Roman Cement. Fig. 7. is a section of one of these.

Fig. 7.



*Remark.* From Septaria obtained in Springfield and West Springfield in Massachusetts, I have prepared a cement which will harden in the air or the water, in 15 or 20 minutes. I believe the Roman Cement has never before been prepared in this country; although hydraulic lime is very common.

*Descrip.* Certain limestones called Oolites, are often almost entirely composed of concretions made up of concentric layers: but the spheres are rarely so large as a pea.

*Descrip.* The concretionary structure, however, often exists in limestone on a very large scale, forming spheroidal masses not only many feet, but many yards in diameter.

#### *Divisional Structures.*

*Def.* Both the stratified and unstratified rocks are traversed by divisional planes, called *joints*; which divide the masses into determinate shapes, which are different from beds and their laminæ. Those only which occur in the stratified rocks will be here noticed.

*Descrip.* The most important of these joints—called *master-joints*, are more or less parallel, and so extended as to imply some general cause of production.

*Descrip.* When these joints cross the beds obliquely, as they usually do, and there are two sets of them, they divide the rock into rhomboidal masses of considerable regularity; though wanting in that perfect equality in the corresponding angles of the prisms which is found in crystals of the same mineral substance.

Figs. 8, 9, are examples: the first from the unconsolidated diluvial clay beds of West Springfield in Massachusetts, and the latter from the gneiss of Monson in the same State.

Fig. 8.

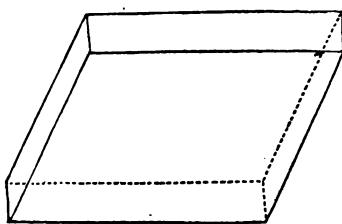
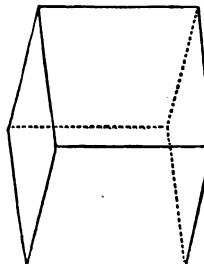


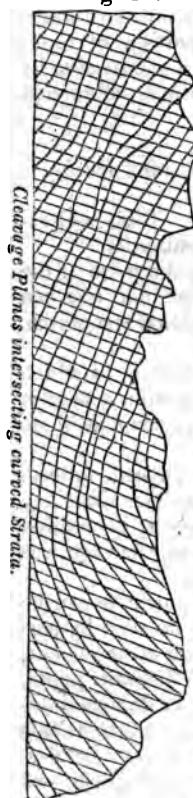
Fig. 9.



**Descrip.** Other divisional planes separate the rock into irregular fragments: and sometimes the fissures are filled with calcareous spar, or other mineral substance.

*Cleavage.*

Fig. 10.



**Descrip.** Some rocks are divided by a set of parallel planes, coincident neither with the stratification, the lamination, nor the joints. These are called *cleavage planes*, because they are supposed always to result from a crystalline arrangement of the particles of the rock, super-induced after its original deposition.

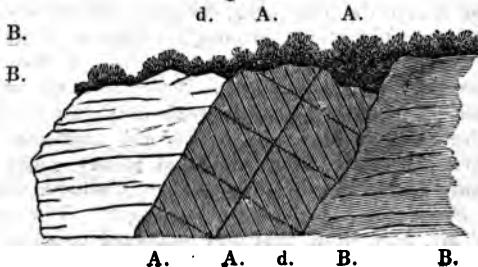
**Descrip.** This cleavage is most common in argillaceous slate, and in many cases constitutes its slaty structure. But in many instances this structure is the result of original deposition, and corresponds to, or rather constitutes, the lamination. This is particularly true of the finer slates, both argillaceous, micaceous, talcose and chloritic, in this country. *Lyell's Elements of Geology*, p. 238.

**Descrip.** The cleavage planes are often inclined to the planes of stratification and lamination at an angle of  $30^{\circ}$  or  $40^{\circ}$  and sometimes the two planes dip in opposite directions. The cleavage planes are remarkable for their almost perfect parallelism, while the strata and their laminæ are usually contorted.

Fig. 10. exhibits a set of cleavage planes crossing the curved strata in the slate rocks of Wales.

In Fig. 11. are exhibited the planes of stratification B B, B B, the joints A A, A A, and the slaty cleavage d d.

Fig. 11.



*Descrip.* Strata and laminae may be distinguished from joints and cleavage, 1. By the alternation of different materials in the former. 2. By a difference of organic remains in the successive layers. 3. By ripple marks and tortuosities. 4. By a difference in color of successive portions of the rock.

*Descrip.* Joints may be distinguished from cleavage planes chiefly by two marks. 1. A jointed structure rarely extends through large masses of rocks; at least not without more interruption than is found in cleavage. 2. The portion of rocks included between two joints is not capable of a subdivision by parallel planes: but in cleavage the subdivision may be carried on to an extreme degree of fineness.

*Origin of the different Structures in the Stratified Rocks.*

*First Cause:* Original deposition from water. This will explain all the phenomena of stratification and lamination.

*Second Cause.* Desiccation. By contracting the mass of the rock it is compelled to separate into fragments: but this can explain only some of the more irregular divisional structures, such as those of septaria and iron stone.

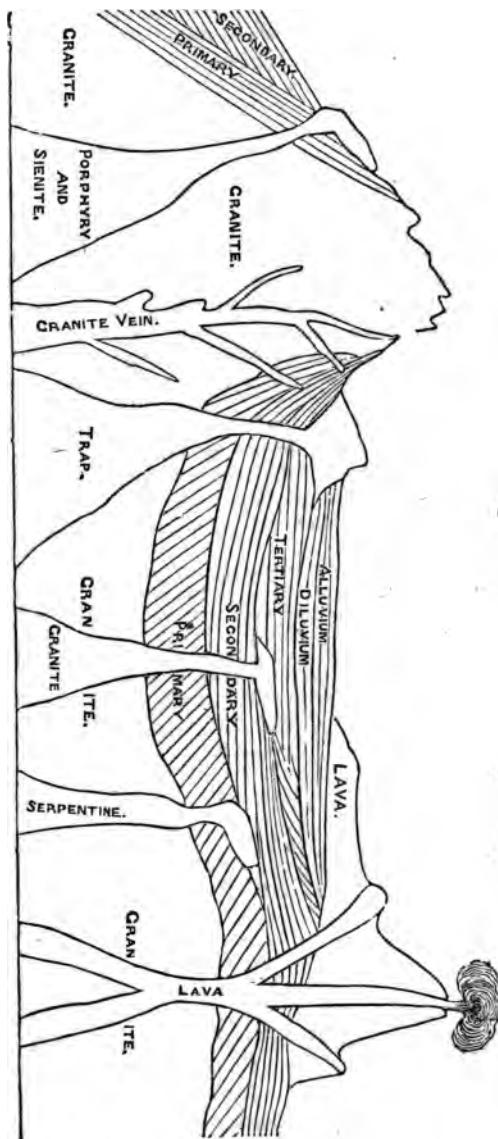
*Third Cause.* A mechanical force acting beneath, by which fissures are produced, either parallel or radiating from a centre, or without symmetry in their direction. This may explain some varieties of joints.

*Fourth Cause.* Heat. This must be supposed intense enough to give so much of mobility to the particles that they can obey molecular attraction, and assume a partially crystalline form. In this way, probably nearly every case of cleavage was produced, and many cases of a jointed structure.

*Fifth Cause.* Water. If by this agent the particles can be made to move among one another—as they will do even by partial diffusion—they can then assume a crystalline arrangement, as in the case of heat. And the example of distinct joints, which I have given in Figs. 8 and 9, occurring in unconsolidated horizontal clay beds, seems to require such a cause as this for its explanation; although I have seen no similar case described by writers on geology. But in West Springfield and Deerfield in Massachusetts, these joints are very numerous and distinct; occurring, however, in only a few of the layers of clay, while those above and below are unaffected. This clay has certainly never been subjected to any great degree of heat, being of diluvial, or perhaps even of alluvial origin.

*Sixth Cause.* Galvanic Electricity. The recent experiments of Mr. Fox show that clay subjected to a long continued vol-

Fig. 12.



Ideal Section of the Earth's Crust.

28  
VEINS.

... ~~are~~ ~~are~~ laminated, so as to resemble clay slate in ~~are~~ ~~are~~. Very probably an electric agency is essential in ~~are~~ ~~are~~ where heat and water seem to produce the effect; ~~are~~ ~~are~~ the latter causes operate chiefly by exalting the electric force and giving mobility to the particles.

~~are~~ ~~are~~ In the difficult subject of the structure of rocks, I have followed closely the original views of Professor Sedgwick, in his paper on the States of Cumberland and Wales, in the *Geological Transactions*, Vol. 3, p. 601, Second Series. Also Professor Phillips in his *Treatise on Geology*, 8 vols. London 1837 and 1839; also Mr. Lyell in his *Elements of Geology*, London 1838. The subject will probably need still further attention before it is perfected. Yet much has been done.

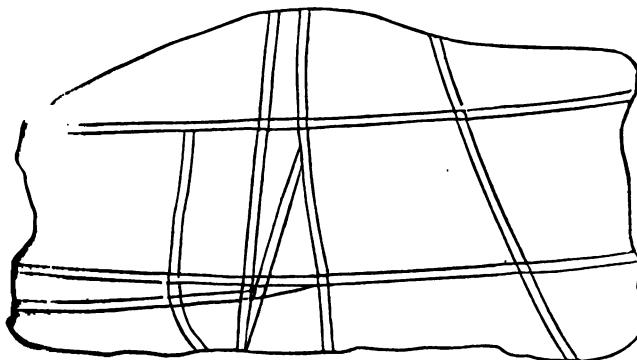
~~are~~ ~~are~~ The unstratified rocks occur in four modes. 1. as irregular masses beneath the stratified rocks. 2. as veins crossing both the stratified and unstratified rocks. 3. as beds or irregular masses thrust in between the strata. 4. as overlying ~~are~~ ~~are~~. All these modes are shown in Fig. 12.

~~are~~ ~~are~~ The phenomena of veins, being very important, require a more detailed explanation.

~~are~~ ~~are~~ Veins are of two kinds: 1. Those of segregation: 2. Those of injection. The former appear to have been separated from the general mass of the rock by elective affinity, when it was in a fluid state; and consequently they are of the same age as the rock. Hence they are often called contemporaneous veins.

~~are~~ ~~are~~ Fig. 13, represents a boulder of granitic gneiss in Lowell, about five feet long traversed by several veins of segregation, whose composition differs not greatly from that of the rock, except in being harder and more distinctly granitic. Where veins of this description cross one another, they coalesce so that one does not cut off the other. The author of the gneiss near Merrimack river in Middlesex County is often covered with reticulations produced by veins of this description.

Fig. 13.



Veins of Segregation and Gneiss: Lowell.

*Obs.* Quartz veins are usually veins of segregation. But I have seen some of this description in Massachusetts a foot or more in width, perfectly straight and continuous, for a great distance through talcose slate, that are with difficulty referable to such an origin.

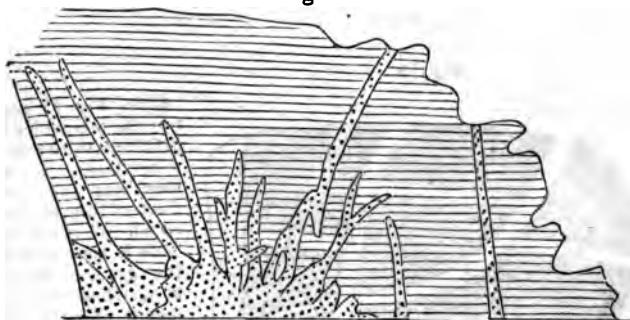
*Def.* The second class were once open fissures, which at a subsequent period, were filled by injected matter.

*Descrip.* Veins of segregation are frequently insulated in the containing rock; they pass at their edges by insensible gradation into that rock; are not separated by a fissure and are sometimes tubercular or even nodular.

*Descrip.* Injected veins can often be traced to a large mass of similar rock, from which, as they proceed, they often ramify and become exceedingly fine, until they are lost. Usually, especially in the oldest rocks, they are chemically united to the walls of the containing rock; but large trap veins have often very little adhesion to the sides.

Fig. 14 exhibits granite veins protruding from a large mass of granite into hornblende slate in Cornwall.

Fig. 14.



Granite veins in Hornblende slate, Cornwall, Eng.

*Def.* The large veins that are filled with trap rock or recent lava, are usually called *dykes*. These differ from true veins, also, in rarely sending off branches.

*Inference.* It is hence inferred, either that the matter of dykes was less fluid, because less hot, than granite, or that the rocks through which veins pass, had a higher temperature than those into which dykes were injected: so that the latter sooner cooled the fluid matter than the former. Hence, when the small lateral fissures were produced, as they probably usually were by the heat of the injected matter, the granite flowed into them, while the trap had become too hard.

*Descrip.* Trap dykes are sometimes several yards wide, and extend 60 or 70 miles; as in England and Ireland.

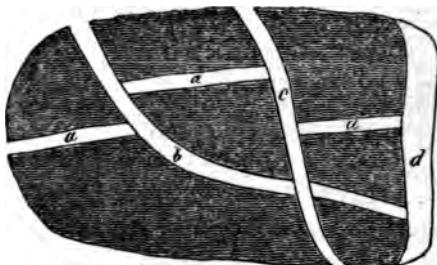
*Descrip.* Dykes and veins frequently cross one another; and in such a case, the one that is cut off is regarded as the oldest.

*Rem.* Undoubtedly this rule, in general, can be depended on for determining the relative age of injected veins. Yet it is easy to conceive how a vein of considerable size might be filled with matter not very fluid, without filling all the lateral fissures; and should these be subsequently filled with more perfectly fluid matter, they would appear to be cut off by the larger vein; and hence, by the rule, be regarded as the oldest, although in fact more recent.

*Prin.* By this rule it may be shown that granite has been erupted at not less than four different epochs.

*Rem.* I do not find any European writer describing more than three epochs of the eruption of granite. *Macculloch's System of Geology, Vol. 1, p. 137.*

Fig. 15.



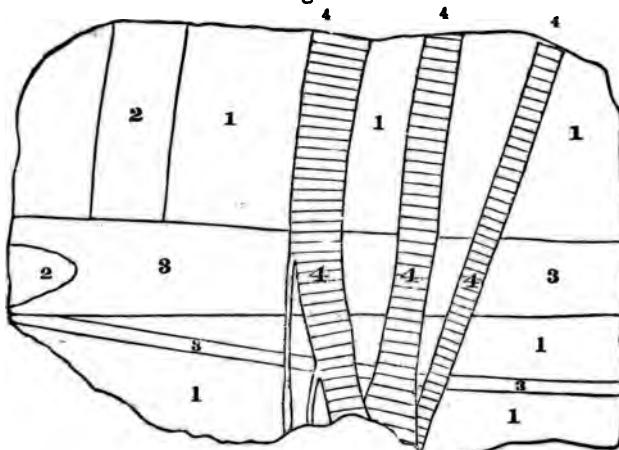
*Granite Veins in Granite, Westhampton.*  
epoch; while *b*, as well as *a*, are cut off by the granite veins *c* and *d*, of a fourth epoch.

*Prin.* By the same rule can be proved successive eruptions of the trap rocks.

*Illus.* Fig. 16, shows several interesting veins in sienite in the north part of Cohasset, Mass. No. 1, is the basis or sienite: No. 2, a dyke of porphyry, 10 feet wide: No. 3, are dykes of common greenstone, the largest 20 feet wide: No. 4, dykes of common greenstone, 5, 6 and 8 feet wide. Here then we have four successive epochs of eruption.

*Illus.* Fig. 15, represents a boulder in Westhampton, Mass. whose base was the product of the earliest epoch of eruption. This is traversed by the granite vein *a*, *a*, which was injected at a second epoch; *b*, is a granite vein cutting *a*, and therefore produced at a third

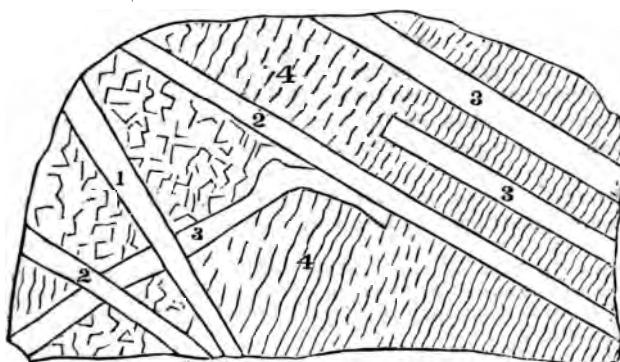
Fig. 16.



Dykes in Sienite: Cohasset, Mass.

Fig. 17, exhibits veins in metamorphic gneiss on the sea shore in Beverly, Mass. The gneiss is almost converted into sienite. No. 1, is a vein of granite. No. 2, dykes of common greenstone. No. 3, dykes of porphyritic greenstone. These last are obviously the oldest; and one of them is very much displaced.

Fig. 17.



Dykes in Metamorphic Gneiss: Beverly, Mass.

**Descrip.** In one remarkable example of veins of different kinds, I have been able to trace eleven epochs of the eruption of unstratified rocks. (See plate 2.)

*Illus.* This case is in the city of Salem, Mass. near the entrance of the bridge leading to Beverly on the west side. The basis rock, No. 1, is sienitic greenstone. The oldest vein, or dyke, (2) is greenstone, a few inches wide. Nos. 3 and 4, are veins of reddish granite,—nearly all feldspar, which cut across the greenstone dyke No. 2. These are very numerous; much more so than is shown upon the drawing; and of very irregular width—often branching out into strings a mere line in breadth. They belong to at least two epochs of eruption: for some of them are cut off by the others and probably still more eruptive epochs might be traced among them: But they are so complicated that I have not been able to do it. No. 5, is a dyke of greenstone, which cuts off 3 and 4. No. 6, which is 40 inches wide, is porphyritic greenstone and cuts off No. 5. A small dyke and nearly parallel, appears to be of the same age. No. 7 is porphyritic greenstone cutting off No. 6. No. 8, (of which there are two running nearly parallel,) intersects Nos. 5 and 7, and is granite or feldspar. No. 9, consists of two large dykes of greenstone, which cut off all the others that have been described, except No. 8; and perhaps this also: but the intersection is covered by soil. No 10, of which there are small veins near the bottom of the sketch, and near the top, and is of the same kind of granite as Nos. 3 and 4, intersects nearly all the preceding veins. Finally, No. 11, consists of the same kind of granite veins, a mere line in width, running diagonally across the sketch. The whole space represented, is 36 by 27 feet, and the lower part of it is covered by the ocean at high tide, and the upper surface by soil.

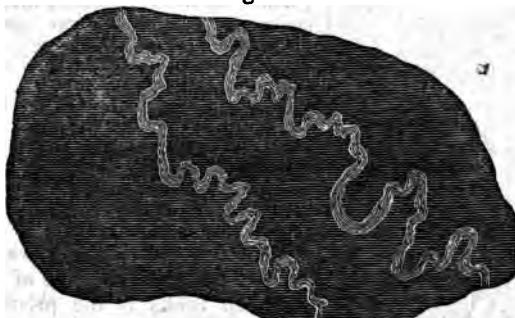
I have spent a good deal of time in examining this complicated and very interesting net work of veins and dykes; and I cannot see why we have not evidence here, of the extraordinary fact—unique so far as I know—of eleven successive eruptions of granite and trap rock. Or if we regard the basis rock as metamorphic—that is, formed by the fusion of gneiss,—and it may be so,—still, we have ten subsequent injections!

*Descrip.* Veins and dykes usually cross the strata at various angles of obliquity. But not unfrequently for a part of their course they have been intruded between the strata; and hence have been mistaken for beds, and have given rise to the discussion whether granite was not stratified.

*Descrip.* Dykes are usually nearly straight; but granite veins are sometimes very tortuous.

*Illus.* Fig. 19, shows two small but very distinct granite veins in homogeneous micaceous limestone in Colrain, Mass. If these are injected veins, as they appear to be, it is extremely difficult to account for their tortuosity.

Fig. 19.



Granite Veins in micaceous limestone: Colrain, Mass.

Fig. 20.



Fig. 20, represents a granite vein only one eighth of an inch thick, conforming to the flexures of mica slate in Conway, Ms. Perhaps this may be a segregated vein.

Fig. 21, (see next page) is a tortuous vein of granite in talcose slate in Chester, Mass. which does not conform to the flexures of the slate. It is possible, however, that it may correspond to the original curves of deposition, and that the present slaty structure is superinduced; though I have strong reasons to think that this is not the case.

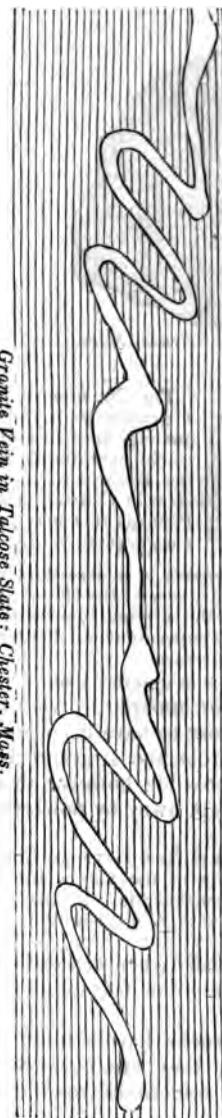
**Descrip.** In modern volcanoes the lava is ejected from circular vents, called craters. But the older unstratified rocks, although evidently of volcanic origin, appear to have been protruded along extended fissures, either across the strata, or in the same direction as their strike. It is possible, however, that craters did once exist, but have been swept away by powerful denudation of the surface.

**Example.** A range of greenstone commences at New Haven in Connecticut, and runs diagonally across the valley of the Connecticut, until it terminates in Hampshire County in Massachusetts. It must be 70 or 80 miles in length, and one or two in breadth, and it conforms to the strike of the sandstone.

**Descrip.** The unstratified rocks, especially when exposed to the weather, are usually divided into irregular fragments by fissures in various directions.

**Descrip.** Sometimes, however, these rocks have a concreted structure on a large scale; that is, they are composed of concreted layers whose curvature is sometimes so slight, that they are mistaken for strata.

Fig. 21.



Granite Vein in Talcose-Slate: Chester, Mass.

*Obs.* Cases of this sort can be distinguished from stratification, first by the concreted divisions not extending through the whole rock. Secondly, by the want of a laminar or slaty structure in the parallel masses.

*Exam.* A fine example of this concreted structure occurs at one of the quarries in sienite near Sandy Bay on Cape Ann. Another occurs in granite, at the granite quarry in the hill east of the village of Worcester. Another in the trap rock at Nahant.

*Def.* An interesting variety of jointed structure in some of the unstratified rocks is the prismatic or columnar, by which large masses of rocks are divided into regular forms, from a few inches to several feet in diameter; but with no spaces between them.

*Obs.* This curious phenomenon will be more particularly described in a subsequent section.

*Descrip.* The layers of the stratified rocks are sometimes horizontal; but more frequently they are tilted up so as to dip beneath the horizon at every possible angle.

*Def.* The angle which the surface of a stratum makes with the plane of the horizon is called its *inclination or dip*; and the direction of its upturned edge is called its *strike or bearing*.

*Obs.* Of course horizontal strata have neither strike nor dip. The exposure of a stratum at the surface is called in the language of miners, its *out-crop, or bassetting*.

*Descrip.* As a general fact the newer or higher rocks are less inclined than those below. The highest are usually horizontal; while the oldest are often perpendicular.

*Obs.* This admits of too many exceptions to be employed as a means for determining the age of rocks. Thus, a considerable part of the gneiss rocks of New England (usually the oldest of the

stratified rocks,) has a less dip than the sandstones, or even than some of the tertiary rocks of the same region.

*Descrip.* The instrument employed for ascertaining the dip of a stratum, is called a *Clinometer*. Every geologist, however, ought to be able to determine the dip with sufficient accuracy for most purposes by the eye. A good pocket compass will answer for finding the strike.

*Des.* Unstratified rocks do not probably occupy one tenth part of the earth's surface.

*Descrip.* In Great Britain, says Dr. Macculloch, "they do not cover a thousandth part of the superficies of the island." In Massachusetts, they occupy nearly a quarter of the surface.

*Prin.* These rocks, however, we have reason to suppose, occupy the internal parts of the earth to a great depth, if not to the center; over which the stratified rocks are spread with very unequal thickness, and in many places are entirely wanting.

*Explanation.* Fig. 12. will convey a better idea than language of the relative situation of the two classes of rocks. The different groups of stratified rocks, viz. Alluvium, Diluvium, Tertiary, Secondary and Primary, are here shown resting upon one another, and upon granite beneath. This granite also, is shown protruding to the surface; and upon its sides lie the stratified rocks highly inclined: veins of sienite, prophyry, trap, serpentine and lava, are also shown protruding through the granite, and coming from beneath it; as they must do, because they have been erupted since the granite. Veins of sienitic granite of a posterior date are likewise shown, penetrating the stratified rocks to the top of the secondary strata, which is the most recent granite yet discovered. The sienites and prophyry rise no higher than the top of the secondary: but the trap rises to the top of the tertiary; and finally, modern lava overspreads alluvium. The stratified rocks are represented as inclined at different angles; the lowest being the most tilted up. Although, therefore, this is not a section of any particular portion of the earth's crust, yet it will give a correct idea of the relative situation of the groups both of stratified and unstratified rocks. For a much larger and more detailed section of this sort, see Buckland's *Bridgewater Treatise*, Plate 1.

#### *Formations.*

*Remark.* It is not possible in geology as in other departments of natural history, to describe species with definite and invariable characters; because each rock is found to be made up of varieties, often very numerous, which insensibly graduate into one another; as do also the rocks themselves in many instances. In botany, mineralogy and zoology, species are separated by definite lines, and never do thus pass into one another. If, therefore, we employ in geology the same exactness of specific description as in these sciences, we shall impose on nature a logical precision which will not fit her in this department of her works. Another method must, therefore, be adopted. See *Macculloch's Geological Classification of Rocks, Chap. 1.*

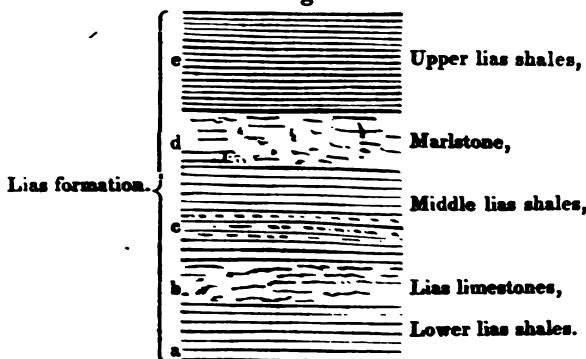
*Def.* Each rock, in its most extended sense, consists of several varieties, agreeing together in certain general characters, and occupying such a relative situation with respect to one an-

other, as to show that all of them were formed under similar circumstances, and during the same geological period. Such a group constitutes a *Formation*. Ex. gr. Graywacke Formation, Gneiss Formation &c.

*Def.* This term often embraces several distinct rocks, when there is reason to suppose them the result of the same geological period.

Fig. 22. will give an idea of the English Lias Formation lying between the Oolite formation above, and the red sandstone formation beneath.

Fig. 22.



*Def.* The English word *group*, and the French *Terrain*, are nearly synonymous with formation. The term *series* is also very convenient in description.

*Def.* When the planes of stratification are parallel to one another in different formations, the stratification is said to be *conformable*: when not parallel it is *unconformable*.

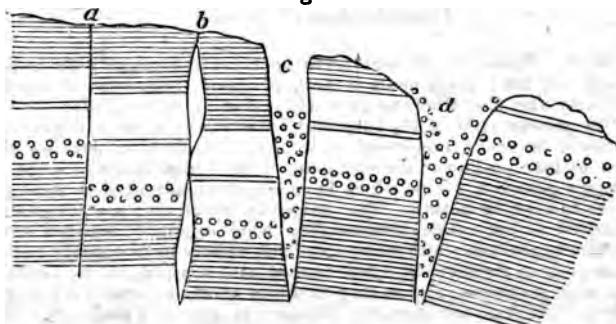
*Descrip.* The stratification in different formations is usually unconformable, as is shown in the position of the secondary and primary formations in Fig. 12.

*Inf.* It is hence inferred that the stratified rocks were elevated at different epochs: in other words, those formations which are the most highly inclined, must have been partially elevated before the others were deposited upon them.

*Descrip.* These numerous elevations of the strata have produced in them a great variety of cracks, fissures, and slides.

*Def.* When the continuity of the strata is interrupted by a fissure, so that the same stratum is higher on one side than on the other, or has been shifted laterally, that fissure is called a *fault*, or a *trouble*—a *skip*—a *dyke*, &c: as a, b, c, d, Fig.

Fig. 23.



*Rem.* A fault is generally filled with fragments of rock, clay, &c. as *d*. It often occasions great trouble in the working of mines because when it is reached it is impossible to decide whether the continuation of the mineral sought is above or below the level, or to the right or left.

*Def.* If the fissure is open and of considerable width, and is succeeded at each extremity by a wider valley, it is called a *gorge*, as *c*.

*Def.* If it be still wider, with the sides sloping or rounded at the bottom, a valley is produced; as *d*.

*Prin.* In a similar way most of the valleys of primitive countries, were formed.

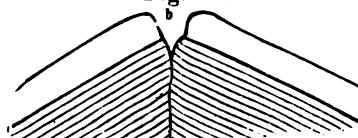
*Def.* The line forming the top of a mountain ridge, or running through a valley, along which the strata dip in opposite directions, is called an *anticlinal line*, or *anticlinal axis*: as at *a*, Fig. 24, and *b*, Fig. 25.

Fig. 24.



*Def.* When the strata dip towards this line on each side of it, it is called a *synclinal line*, or *axis*, as at *b*, Fig. 24.

Fig. 25.



*Def.* When the strata dip from any point in all directions outwards, (as around the crater of a volcano,) the dip is said to be *quaquaversal*.

*Classification of Rocks.*

*Remark.* Numerous attempts have been made to classify the rocks. But none of the arrangements hitherto proposed, possess so decided a superiority over the others as to be adopted in every particular.

In the present state of the subject, all that can be done is to give the outlines of the most important systems of classification, leaving the reader to take his choice among them. I shall first describe some of the larger groups of rocks, which have long been admitted by most geologists to exist in nature. The names by which they are designated are indeed objectionable, because they were originally founded upon uncertain hypothesis: and many excellent writers have entirely excluded them from their works. But as they still continue to be employed by most geologists, and as they now can hardly mislead even a tyro in the science, and are moreover founded in nature, I shall retain the most of them in the following familiar description of the earth's crust.

*Descrip.* If we suppose ourselves placed in a meadow which has resulted from the successive deposites of annual floods, and begin a perpendicular excavation into the earth, we shall pass through the different classes of rocks in the following order.

*Def.* For a few feet only—rarely as many as 100, we shall pass through layers of loam, sand, and fine gravel, arranged in nearly horizontal beds. This deposit, from an existing river, is denominated *Alluvium*.

*Def.* All deposites from causes now in action, which have taken place since the present order of things commenced on the globe, are usually regarded as alluvial.

*Def.* The second formation which we shall penetrate, is composed of coarse sand and gravel, with fine sand and even sometimes clay, containing, however, large rounded masses of rock called *Boulders*; the whole mixed together, yet often distinctly, and horizontally stratified. This formation, evidently the result of powerful currents of water, is called *Drift* or *Diluvium*. It is distinguished from alluvium, first by its inferior position; secondly, by the marks of a more powerful aqueous agency; and thirdly, by extending over regions where no existing streams or other causes now in action could have produced it.

*Obs.* Some geological writers do not admit the existence of Diluvium as a distinct formation, but include it all in the formations above or beneath. See *Lyell's Principles of Geology, passim*.

*Def.* The third series of strata which we penetrate in descending into the earth, is composed of layers of clay, sand, gravel, and marl, with occasional quartzose and calcareous beds more or less consolidated; all of which were deposited in waters comparatively quiet and in separate basins. They also contain many peculiar organic remains, and sometimes dip at a

small angle, though usually they are horizontal. These strata are called *Tertiary*.

*Obs.* It is only a few years since all the formations above described were regarded as alluvium.

*Def.* The formations which we penetrate after passing through the tertiary, are composed for the most part of solid rocks. They are, however, mostly made up of sand, clay, and pebbles, bound together by some sort of cement. With these are interstratified many varieties of limestone; and throughout the whole series is found a great variety of the remains of animals and plants, very different from those in the tertiary strata. These groups of rocks sometimes lie horizontal; but are usually more or less elevated, so as to make them dip at various angles. They are called *Secondary Rocks*.

*Obs.* It will be seen that all the fossiliferous rocks below the tertiary are here included in the secondary class. Many geologists, even to the present time, have separated some of the lower groups into a class named *Transition*, because they appear as if produced when the earth was in a transition state from desolation to a habitable condition, and have a texture partly mechanical and partly chemical. I do not attempt to define such a class, because I cannot fix upon any characters by which it can be distinguished from the secondary strata.

*Def.* The stratified rocks below the secondary, are distinguished by the absence of organic remains, by having a structure more or less crystalline, and by being more highly inclined. They are called *Primary Rocks*.

*Remark.* D'Halloy, Dr. Macculloch, Prof. Phillips, and some others include some of the fossiliferous rocks—as clay slate, and graywacke, in the Primary Class, as may be seen on the Tabular View near the end of this Section.

*Descrip.* Immediately beneath the primary stratified rocks, we find the unstratified ones.

*Inf.* As this is found to be the case wherever the stratified rocks have been penetrated, it is inferred that the internal parts of the globe, beneath a comparatively thin crust, are made up of unstratified rocks: at least to a very great depth.

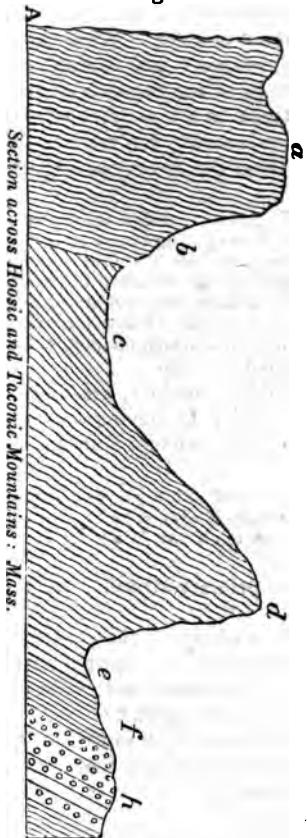
*Descrip.* Among the primary rocks there is no settled order of superposition. Perhaps gneiss most commonly lies immediately above granite; but the other members of the series are frequently found also in the same position.

*Descrip.* Among the fossiliferous rocks there exists an invariable order of superposition.

*Exception.* 1. In a few cases internal forces have not merely lifted upon their edges, but actually overturned strata of considerable thickness. The section in Fig. 24, was taken in the Alps, and exhibits a case of this kind. G, is gneiss, L, L, limestone, C, conglomerate, locally called *Nagelfluh*. Now

the limestone is really an older rock than the conglomerate; and yet it lies above the conglomerate, because the whole series has been tossed over, so as to bring the newer rock beneath the older.

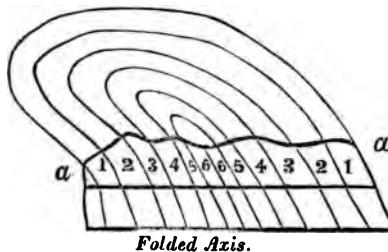
Fig. 26.



er strata of the Taconic dip continues to Hudson river. Although this disturbance must have been on a vast scale, I think it the most reasonable explanation of the facts, to suppose that all the strata west of Hoosic mountain have been thrown over, so as to bring the newer rocks beneath the older ones.

*Excep. 2.* If I mistake not, a similar case occurs along the western borders of New England, and the eastern part of New York; and according to Prof. H.D. Rogers, and Prof. W. Rogers, the examples of overturned strata are among the most common geological phenomena of Pennsylvania and Virginia. A. B. Fig. 26, is a section extending westerly from the top of Hoosic Mountain, *a*, across the Taconic range *d*, (where runs the west line of Massachusetts,) a few miles into New York. At *a*, the mica slate, 2000 feet high, is in nearly perpendicular strata. On the western side we find gneiss *b*, (as in Washington,) succeeded by quartz rock, and this by limestone, *c*, whose strata are usually much less inclined, across the valley of Berkshire. The mica and talcose slates of the Taconic range *d*, dip under the white limestone. At the western base of this range, we have a blueish nearly compact limestone at *e*, succeeded by argillaceous slate at *f*; and this by graywacke, *h*, which sometimes becomes a conglomerate and sometimes a fine slate; but all of these different rocks appear to dip under the older Hoosic ranges; and this same

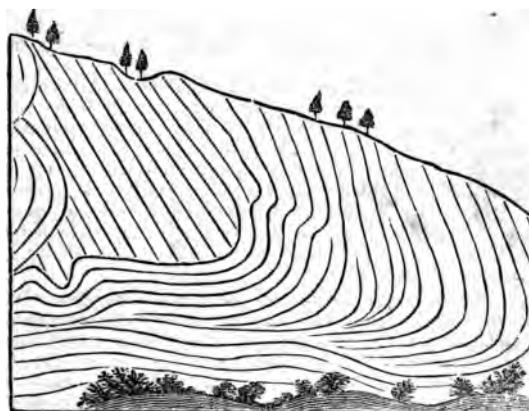
**Descrip.** In some instances the strata have been folded together on a vast scale, and in such a manner as to bring some of the newer rocks beneath the older. Fig. 27 is a section of Fig. 27.



they correspond outward on each side of these; as 5, 5; 4, 4; &c. Such an example as this has been called a *folded axis*.

**Descrip.** Sometimes the strata, after descending in this inverted manner from 1000 to 1500 feet, curve in such a direction as to bring them into their proper position: as is shown in Fig. 28, taken in the Alps.

Fig. 28.



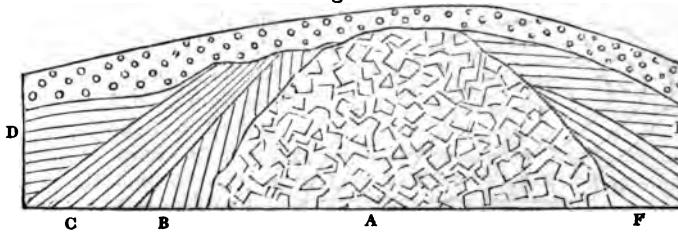
*Curved Strata in the Alps.*

**Descrip.** One or more rocks are frequently wanting in the secondary series, which brings those of very different ages into contact: but the order of arrangement is never thereby disturbed.

**Examples.** Thus in Fig. 29, on the left side of the central mass of granite (A,) we have the primary, (B,) secondary, (C,) and tertiary,

(D,) in regular order: But on the other side, the secondary is wanting, and the tertiary, D, lies directly upon the primary, F, as well as upon the granite, while a deposite of diluvium, E, comes in contact with all.

Fig. 29.



#### Other Systems of Classification.

*Descrip.* Dr. Macculloch divides the strata into four principal classes. His Alluvial Class embraces Alluvium and Diluvium: His Tertiary Class is the same as that already described: his Secondary Class extends no further downward than to the bottom of the Old Red Sandstone; and the remainder of the fossiliferous rocks, with the stratified non-fossiliferous ones constitutes his Primary Class. He also distributes the unstratified rocks through the two latter classes, and adds a fifth, or the Volcanic Class. Reckoning the stratified and unstratified rocks together, he divides the whole into ten groups, which he also denominates Classes, by the designation *Protolith*, *Deutolith*, &c. This latter arrangement he denominates the *Natural System*, and the former the *Artificial System*. *Macculloch's System of Geology* Vol. 2. p. 78.

*Descrip.* In Professor Conybeare's Arrangement, Alluvium, Diluvium, and the Tertiary strata, are called the *Superior Order*: the rocks from the chalk to the coal measures, form his *Supermedial Order*: the coal measures, Carboniferous Limestone, and old Red Sandstone, form his *Medial Order*: the remaining Fossiliferous rocks constitute his *Submedial Order*: and the stratified primary groups his *Inferior Order*. The unstratified rocks are distributed among the stratified, according to their supposed age. This system has the merit of being both simple and free from all hypothetical allusions. See *Conybeare and Philip's Geology of England and Wales*, Vol. 1.

*Descrip.* De la Beche divides all rocks into two great classes, the *Stratified* and *Unstratified*. The latter he treats as a single family: the former he subdivides into ten groups. The first is called the *Modern Group*, and corresponds to alluvium: the second is the *Erratic Block Group*, corresponding to Diluvium: the third the *Supercretaceous Group*, embracing the tertiary strata: the fourth, the *Cretaceous Group*: including only the chalk and some associated strata: the fifth, the *Oolitic Group*, comprehending the Oolite and the Lias: the sixth the *Red Sandstone Group*, or the New Red Sandstone: the seventh, the *Carboniferous Group*, containing the coal measures, carboniferous limestone, and the old red sandstone: the eighth, the *Graywacke Group*, or the Graywacke formation: the ninth the *Lowest Fossiliferous Group*, or fossiliferous slates lying below the graywacke: and the tenth the primary stratified non-fossiliferous rocks. This arrangement is also exceedingly natural and satisfactory. See *De la Beche's Manual of Geology*, p. 38. third edition.

*Descrip.* Lyell's first class embraces only alluvium, and is called *Recent*: the second class contains and is named the *Tertiary*: diluvium being included in the upper part, or *Never Pliocene* strata: the third class he denominates *Secondary*, which extends to the bottom of the old Red sandstone: next succeeds his *Primary fossiliferous Class*, which includes all the remaining fossiliferous rocks. His *Metamorphic Rocks* embrace all the stratified non-fossiliferous groups. The unstratified rocks are distributed through these several classes; and he has likewise made a division of those unstratified rocks, that exist below the stratified ones, into *Primary Plutonic*, *Secondary Plutonic*, *Tertiary Plutonic*, and *Recent Plutonic*, reckoning in a descending order. *Lyell's Principles of Geology* Vol. 2, p. 504. *Also his Elements of Geology*, p. 279.

*Descrip.* Omalius d'Halloy, a French Geologist, in 1831, proposed the following system of arrangement. He first divides all rocks into *Neptunian*, or the stratified, and the *Plutonian*, or unstratified: then under his first class, or *Modern Formation*, he places alluvium; under tertiary formations he puts diluvium and the tertiary strata: under *Ammonian Formations*, he includes the subjacent rocks as far as the coal measures; and under *Hemilyrian Formations*, all the remaining stratified rocks. The unstratified ones he divides into two classes; the first embracing granite and porphyry, is called *Agalyrian*; the second, embracing basalt, trachyte and lava, is called *Pyroidal*. His three first classes he also denominates *Secondary*; and the remaining class of stratified rocks, with the first division of the unstratified, *Primordial*. *Elements de Geologie*, par J. J. D'Omalius D'Halloy, Paris, 1831.

*Descrip.* Prof. Alexander Brongniart, another distinguished French geologist, in 1829, proposed to embrace all the rocks under the *Jovian Period*, or the existing era; and the *Saturnian Period*, or the era preceding the last revolution of the globe. His first period embraces only alluvium; which he divides into the Alluvial, Lysian, and Pyrogenous Formations. His second period embraces first the *Stratified or Neptunian Formations*, and secondly the *Massive or Typhonian Formations*: The first of these is divided into the *Clysmian Formations*, or diluvium; the *Izemian Formations*, or the tertiary strata; and the secondary as far down as the Mountain Limestone; *Hemilyrian Formations*, embracing all the remaining fossiliferous strata; and the *Agalyrian Formations*, which include all the primary stratified rocks. His Typhonian class he divides into the *Plutonian*, and *Vulcanian* formations. *Tableau des Terrains, &c. par Prof. Al. Brongniart Paris, 1829.*

*Descrip.* Rozet, another French author, in 1835, divided all rocks into two great *Series*, the first embracing the stratified and the second the unstratified rocks. His first series he divides into six geognostic epochs, the first embracing alluvium, the second diluvium, the third the tertiary strata, the fourth the subjacent rocks as deep as the coal measures, the fifth the remaining fossiliferous rocks, and the sixth the non fossiliferous stratified rocks. *Traite Elementaire de Geologie*, par M. Rozet, Paris, 1835.

*Descrip.* Dr. Mantell proposes a chronological Arrangement of the rocks. His two great classes are the *Fossiliferous Strata*, and the *Metamorphic Rocks*: the latter embracing the unstratified rocks as well as the stratified primary. Under *Modern and Ancient Alluvium*, he places Alluvium and Diluvium. Next come the *Tertiary Strata*: then, as the first group of the *Secondary Formations*, the *Chalk or Cretaceous System* The second group is the *Wealden*: the third the *Qolite*: the fourth the *Lias*: the fifth the *Saliferous Strata*: *the*

sixth the *Carboniferous System, or Coal*: the seventh the *Silurian System*, or upper members of the *Graywacke series*; and the eighth the *Cambrian or Graywacke system*. His metamorphic rocks comprehend three groups: 1. *Mica Schist*. 2. *Gneiss*. 3. *Granite*. *Mantell's Wonders of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 178, London, 1838.

*Des.* Professor John Phillips divides all rocks into the stratified and unstratified: and then like De la Beche, and Dr. Buckland, he does not attempt to distribute the latter among the former, but treats of each class separately. The stratified class he thus subdivides. Alluvium and diluvium are placed under *Superficial Accumulations*, and denominated, *Alluvial Depositions*, and *Diluvial Depositions*. The Tertiary strata he divides into the *Crag, Freshwater Marl, and London Clay*. The Secondary strata, which extend to the bottom of the Old Red Sandstone, he subdivides into the *Cretaceous System, the Oolitic System, the Siliferous or Red Sandstone System, and the Carboniferous System*. Next succeed his *Primary Strata*, which embrace the *Silurian System, the Cambrian or Graywacke System, the Skiddaw or Clay Slate System, the Mica Schist System, and the Gneiss System*. The subdivision of these systems may be seen in the accompanying Table. *A Treatise on Geology from the Encyclopaedia Britannica* Vol. 1. Edinburgh, 1838. Also a *Treatise on Geology in 2 Vols* London, 1837, and 1839.

*Descrip.* The most important changes in the classification of the stratified rocks that have of late been proposed, are those by Mr. Murchison, and Professor Sedgwick, in the group that has long been known under the general name of *Graywacke*. The former gentleman, after years of study, has produced a splendid quarto, with a geological map, upon the upper members of these strata, which he denominates the *Silurian Group*, because it is well developed in the ancient British kingdom of the Silures. The lower members of the *Graywacke* with *clay slate*, Prof. Sedgwick denominates the *Cambrian System*, because fully developed in North Wales. (*Philips' Treatise on Geology* Vol. 1. p. 56). Prof. Sedgwick has recently presented his views of the classification of all the stratified rocks below the Old Red Sandstone. His first Class, or the lowest, is denominated *Primary Stratified Groups*, comprehending *Gneiss, Mica Slate, Quartz Rock, &c.* His second class he calls *Palæozoic Series*: which is thus subdivided. 1. The Lower Cambrian System, 2. The Upper do. 3. The Silurian System. *Philosophical Magazine*, for 1838, p. 299.

*Rem.* De la Beche objects to these substitutes for *Graywacke*, except as mere local designations, on the ground that it is unwise to change old terms, until we can be sure that the new terms will answer for the whole earth. *Report on the Geology of Cornwall and Devon* p. 38. London, 1839.

*Descrip.* A Classification founded upon Palaeontological principles has been suggested by several writers, and in the following Table one of this character has been added, copied chiefly from Mr. Lyell. It is believed that at least six groups of animals and plants, too unlike to have lived in the same condition of the earth, can be traced in the organic remains found in the rocks. The first group embraces the tertiary strata; the second the Cretaceous; the third the Oolitic; the fourth the upper New Red Sandstone, embracing the limestone called by the Germans *Muschelkalk*; the fifth the Lower New Red Sandstone, the coal Formation, and the Old Red Sandstone; and the sixth, the remaining fossiliferous strata. This arrangement, however, will probably require some modifications, when organic remains shall be more extensively studied. *Lyell's Elements of Geology*, p. 280.

*Rem. 1.* The following Table affords a synoptical view of most of the Systems of Classification that have now been described. More full descriptions of these Systems may be found in the works referred to above. It should be recollect that these systems have been mostly derived from the study of the rocks of Great Britain, and a part of the continent of Europe. But in their great outlines they are found to apply almost equally well to all other parts of the globe hitherto examined. This Table embraces only the stratified rocks. The unstratified class will receive more attention in a subsequent Section.

*Rem. 2.* It was desirable thus early to describe the most important systems of Classification adopted by geologists: yet in doing it, it was necessary to presume upon a knowledge of some facts by the reader, which have not yet been explained.

*Rem. 3.* A cursory view of the preceding Table is apt to convey the impression that almost everything relating to the classification of rocks is unsettled, and that there is scarcely no agreement among the different systems. Some explanations and inferences, therefore, seem desirable, to present the subject in its true light.

*Prin.* In judging of a classification of natural objects, it is important that we distinguish natural from artificial characters. Thus, in Botany, plants may be divided into classes and orders depending upon the number and situation of the stamens and pistils of their flowers; or upon the anatomical structure of the plant. By the first arrangement we shall bring together plants the most unlike in their general properties; and therefore there is no necessary connection between those properties and the number and situation of the stamens, and pistils, and therefore such characters are artificial or-arbitrary. But those plants which are alike in anatomical structure, correspond in most of their properties: and such characters, therefore, are natural.

*Inf. 1.* In applying this principle to rocks, we find first, that their division into stratified and unstratified is natural: that is, it brings together those kinds whose origin and other important characters are similar. Now we shall find that this division enters into nearly all the more recent systems of classification that have been described.

*Inf. 2.* In the division of the rocks into fossiliferous and non-fossiliferous, all geologists agree: And in fact there is scarcely a possibility of disagreement on this point. So that here we have another important natural character as the basis of classification.

*Inf. 3.* In nearly all the systems of classification, the formations coincide: which is a presumptive proof that they are natural: since so many different observers agree in forming their boundaries. These formations ought perhaps to be regarded as the *Species* in Geology.

*Inf. 4.* Classification founded upon the relative age of different rocks, is entirely natural, because all observers agree that

they were produced at different times. But as superposition and organic remains are the only safe criteria of relative age, there is ground for a diversity of opinion in assigning places to the different formations: since these criteria can be ascertained sometimes only imperfectly.

*Inf. 5.* Characters dependent upon theoretical considerations are artificial, since few of the theories are so certainly settled as not to be liable to considerable modification. Hence such terms as Primary, Transition, Secondary, Tertiary, Diluvial, &c. are objectionable, if they are not understood to refer simply to superposition.

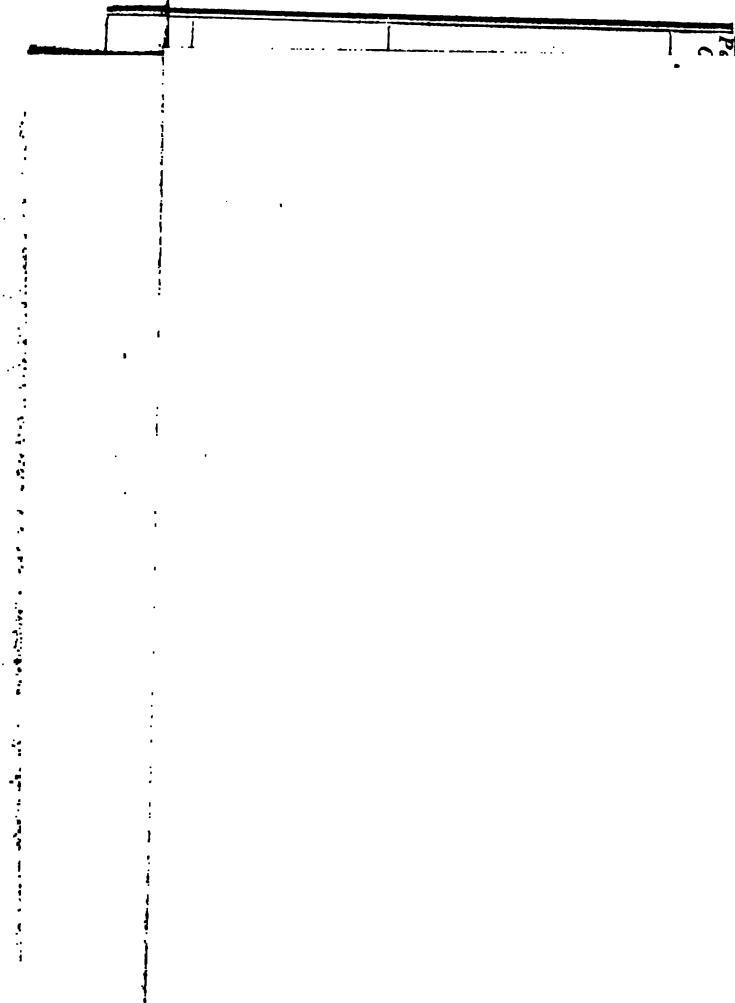
*Rem.* Neology is often a greater evil in science than the continued use of objectionable terms: continued I mean, until terms are proposed which are so decidedly good as to force themselves into use. It is partly on this ground that the terms, Primary, Transition, Secondary, Tertiary, and Diluvial, still continue in use. But it is partly, also, because, apart from theoretical views, there does exist in nature some foundation for a division of the rocks into groups of this sort. How well marked for instance, is the distinction between the tertiary and the secondary group: and how difficult will it be to strike out from American geology such a deposit as diluvium. I know not why the ingenious arrangement of Mr. Conybeare has not been adopted, unless it be because it simply indicates superposition; and geologists feel as if this did not express the whole truth in respect to the larger groups of rocks; and therefore prefer to use terms which mean too much, rather than such as fall short of the truth.

*Inf. 6.* Characters founded upon lithological distinctions are artificial, for the same reason that those derived from the number and situation of stamens and pistils are bad in botany.

*Inf. 7.* Discrepancy in classification often springs from carrying the subdivisions of a formation too far; for the same reason that characters in botany and zoology could not be depended on, that were derived from the varieties of a species.

*Inf. 8.* Finally, it appears that in all the essential principles of the classification of rocks, geologists are nearly agreed. They all admit one class to be stratified and another unstratified:—one portion of the stratified rocks to be fossiliferous and another portion not fossiliferous. And they generally agree, also, as to the extent of the different distinct formations: although some would make their number greater than others—just as it is in respect to species in mineralogy, botany, and zoology. Now these three principles are all that are essential for classification: and some of the best geologists, as may be seen by the Table, limit themselves to these. But if others choose to subdivide the formations still farther, and to refer the groups to primary, secondary, &c. classes, even though they differ widely here, it must not be hence inferred that they are at variance in respect to the essential principles of classification.

## ED ROCKS.



ly in the sulphurets and sulphates that are so widely disseminated. Chlorine is found chiefly in the ocean, and in the rock salt dug out of the earth. Fluorine occurs in most of the rocks, though in small proportion. Still less is the amount of

phosphorus, though widely diffused in the rocks and soils, and abundant in organic remains.

*Descrip.* Nearly all the simple substances above mentioned have entered into their present combinations as binary compounds: that is, they were united two and two before forming the present compounds in which they are found. The following constitute nearly the whole binary compounds of the accessible parts of the globe.

1. Silica. 2. Alumina. 3. Lime. 4. Magnesia. 5. Potassa. 6. Soda. 7. Oxide of Iron. 8. Oxide of Manganese. 9. Water. 10. Carbonic Acid.

*Obs.* It is meant only that these binary compounds, and the sixteen simple substances that have been enumerated, constitute the largest part of the known mass of the globe: for many other binary compounds and probably all the known simple substances are found in small quantity in the rocks; but not enough to be of importance in a geological point of view.

*Descrip.* It has been calculated that oxygen constitutes 50 per cent of the ponderable matter of the globe, and that its crust contains 45 per cent of silica, and at least 10 per cent of alumina: Potassa constitutes nearly 7 per cent of the unstratified rocks, and enters largely into the composition of some of the stratified class: Soda forms nearly 6 per cent of some basalts and other less extensive unstratified rocks; and it enters largely into the composition of the ocean: Lime and Magnesia are diffused almost universally among the rocks in the form of silicates and carbonates—the carbonate of lime having been estimated to form one seventh of the crust of the globe; at least three per cent of all known rocks are some binary combination of iron, such as an oxide, a sulphuret, a carburet, &c; manganese is widely diffused, but forms much less than one per cent of the mass of rocks.

*Descrip.* The following table presents an approximate estimate of the mean amount of metallic bases and of oxygen in some of the important rocks. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 24.

100 parts of Granite	= 52	Metallic Basis	48	Oxygen,
" Basalt	= 57	"	43	"
" Gneiss	= 53	"	47	"
" Clay Slate	= 54?	"	46	"
" Sandstone	= 49 to 53	"	47 to 51	
" Limestone	= 52	"	48	"

*Descrip.* The following Table shows the approximate amount of silica and alumina in the most important rocks.

	<i>Silica per cent.</i>	<i>Alumina per cent.</i>
Granite	69.40.	12.34.
Greenstone	54.86	15.56.
Basalt	52.00	14.12.

Compact Feldspar	55,50	21,00
Gneiss	70,6	15,20.
Mica Slate	67,50	14,26.
Hornblende Rock	54,86	15,16.
Talcose Slate	78,15	13,20.

*See De la Beche's Researches in Theoretical Geology, p. 29 and 30.  
Also Traité Élémentaire de Minéralogie, par S. F. Beudant, Tome 1. p. 112. Paris, 1830.*

*Descrip.* Eight or nine simple minerals constitute the great mass of all known rocks: These are 1 quartz, 2 Feldspar, 3 Mica, 4 Hornblende, 5 Carbonate of Lime, 6 Talc, embracing chlorite and soapstone, 7 Augite, 8 Serpentine. Oxide of iron is also very common; but it does not usually show itself till the decomposition of the rock commences.

*Obs.* The student of geology should become very thoroughly conversant with these minerals in all their modifications: for in the rocks their characters are often very obscure.

*Descrip.* Other minerals forming rocks of small extent, or entering so largely into their composition as to modify their character, are the following; Sulphate of Lime, Diallage, Chloride of Sodium (common salt), Coal, Bitumen, Garnet, Schorl, Staurolite, Epidote, Olivine, Pyrites.

*Descrip.* A few of these minerals exist in so large masses as to be denominated rocks; ex. gr. quartz, carbonate of lime, &c. but in general, from two to four of them are united to form a rock; ex. gr. quartz, feldspar and mica, to form granite. In some instances the simple minerals are so much ground down, previously to their consolidation, as to make the rock appear homogeneous; ex. gr. shale and clay slate.

*Descrip.* Water constitutes a part of nearly all rocks; but in most cases it appears to be mechanically combined; for with one or two exceptions, it does not exist in the simple minerals that enter into the composition of rocks.

*Obs.* In the simple minerals that have been enumerated, analysis has detected water only in the following.

Sulphate of Lime (Gypsum)	19.88 per cent.
Serpentine	12,75
Diallage	8,20
Talc	4,20
Pyroxene (a few varieties)	3,74
Mica	2,65
Quartz	1,62
Hornblende	0,55

*Geological Situation of Useful Rocks and Minerals.*

*Prin.* The rocks and minerals useful in an economical point of view, are in a few instances found in almost every part of the rock series: but in a majority of cases, they are confined to one or more places in that series.

*Examples.*

*Granite, Sienite and Porphyry:* found intruded among all the stratified rocks as high in the series as the tertiary strata: but they are almost entirely confined to the primary rocks. *De la Beche's Manual*, p. 94.

*Greenstone and Basalt* are found among and overlying all the primary and secondary rocks: but they are mostly connected with the secondary strata. *Macculloch's System of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 102.

*Lara*, some varieties of which, as *Peperino*, are employed in the arts, being the product of modern volcanoes, is found occasionally overlying every rock in the series.

*Clay:* the common varieties used for bricks, earthen ware, pipes, &c. occur almost exclusively in the tertiary strata: but we have reason to think some of them belong to the diluvial epoch. Porcelain clay results from the decomposition of granite, and is found in connection with that rock.

*Marl*, or a mixture of carbonate of lime and clay, is confined to the alluvial and tertiary strata: and differs from many varieties of limestone, only in not being consolidated.

*Limestone*, from which every variety of marble, one variety of alabaster, and every sort of quicklime are obtained, is found in almost every rock, stratified and unstratified, below diluvium. In the oldest stratified rocks and in the unstratified, it is highly crystalline; and in the newest strata (ex. gr. chalk) it is often not at all crystalline. The most esteemed marbles are obtained from the newer primary and older secondary strata.

*Serpentine* occurs chiefly in connection with the older stratified rocks. This is generally the case in N. England. It is found however, with some secondary rocks and not unfrequently with trap rock.

*Sulphate of Lime, or Gypsum*, which produces one variety of alabaster, and is employed for taking casts, forming hard mortar, and spreading upon land in the state of powder, occurs chiefly in the new red sandstone series. It is found also in the Lias, Oolite, Green Sand, and Tertiary strata. In this country it is found associated with the oldest of the secondary (transition) rocks.

*Rock Salt* (Chloride of Sodium) is frequently found associated with gypsum in the new red sandstone. It occurs also in the supercretaceous or tertiary strata; as at the celebrated deposites at Wieliczka in Poland: and in Sicily, and Cardona (Spain) in cretaceous strata: in the Tyrol, in the Oolites, and in Durham, England, salt springs occur in the coal formation. *Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 72. *De la Beche's Manual*, p. 246.

*Descrip.* If vegetable matter be exposed to a certain degree of moisture and temperature, it is decomposed into the substance called *Peat*, which is dug from swamps, and belongs to the alluvial formation.

*Lignite or Brown Coal*, the most perfect variety of which is jet, is found chiefly in the tertiary strata; sometimes in the higher secondary; and appears to be peat which has long been buried in the earth, and has undergone certain chemical changes, whereby bitumen has been produced. It generally exhibits the vegetable structure.

*Bituminous Coal* appears to be the same substance which has been longer buried in the earth, and has undergone still farther changes; though their precise nature is not well known. Its principal deposit is in that part of the secondary series called the coal formation, or coal measures. But it occurs in small quantity in the New Red Sandstone series, in England, Poland, and Massachusetts: and in Scotland it is worked in the lias limestone. A thick bed of it has also been found in the Plastic Clay of the Tertiary strata in Hesse. Prof. Conybeare's Report (1832) on *Geology to the British Association*, p. 330. Also, *Philosophical Magazine*, Vol. 2. New Series, p. 101 and 108.

*Obs.* The French geologists describe a variety of coal intermediate in its characters and position between cannel coal and lignite: but it is doubtful whether on strict mineralogical principles even lignite can be separated from bituminous coal. See *Tableaux des Terrains par Al. Brongniart and Traite Elementaire de Mineralogie par F. S. Beudant*.

The principal deposit of anthracite in Europe, is in the graywacke formation; and it is supposed that this substance is common coal which has undergone still farther changes and lost its bitumen. In this country, however, there is reason to suppose that the vast deposit of anthracite in Pennsylvania, the largest in the world, is associated with the common coal measures. See Prof. H. D. Roger's *Second Annual Report on the Geological Exploration of the State of Pennsylvania*, 1838.

The anthracite of Rhode Island, and the south eastern part of Massachusetts is in a rock whose exact place in the series has not been satisfactorily determined, but probably it may belong to the graywacke. In Worcester the anthracite occurs in a sort of bastard mica slate. On the continent of Europe it occurs also in mica slate, in primary limestone, and in gneiss. *Murchison's System of Geology*. Vol. 2. p. 296.

Prof. Alexander Brongniart describes a true anthracite as occurring in the Plastic Clay of Mount Meissner in Hesse. This however appears to have been formed from bituminous coal by the action of igneous rocks; and such cases have led some geologists to suppose that anthracite was always thus produced. It occurs in small quantities in almost all the stratified rocks from the oldest to the plastic clay.

*Graphite, Plumbago, or Black Lead*, appears to be anthracite which has undergone still farther mineralization: at least, in some instances, when coal has been found contiguous to igneous rocks, it is often converted into plumbago; and hence such may have been the origin of the whole of it. In the Alps plumbago is found in a clay slate that lies above the lias. (*Annales des Sciences Naturelles*, Tome XV. 1828 p. 377.) It is found also in the coal formation. *Traite Elementaire de Mineralogie par F. S. Beudant*, Tome 2. p. 263.

*Descrip.* All the varieties of coal that have been described, occur in the form of seams, or beds interstratified with sandstones and shales: and most usually there are several seams of coal with rocks between them; the whole

being arranged in the form of a basin. Fig. 94 (See Section 6,) is a sketch of the great coal basin of South Wales, in Great Britain; which contains twenty three beds of coal; whose united thickness is ninety three feet. When we consider how much this arrangement facilitates the exploration and working of coal, we can hardly doubt but it is the result of Divine Benevolence.

*Descrip.* The *Diamond*, which is pure crystallized carbon, has been found associated with new red sandstone at Golconda in South America, and at Panna in India. This rock is there in proximity with, and based upon granite, and perhaps the crystallization of the carbon resulted from this cause. *Edinburgh Journal of Science*, Vol. X. p 184. *Conybeare's Report on Geology*, p. 395 and 398. In general the diamond is found in diluvium; having been washed from its original situation by water: and we may always presume that every mineral existing in the older rocks will be found also in diluvium; because their detritus must contain them.

*Inference.* It has been inferred from the preceding facts, that all the varieties of carbon above described, had their origin in vegetable matter; and that heat and water have produced all the varieties which we now find. *Macculloch's System of Geology* Vol. 2. p 297. All geologists, however, do not concur in this opinion. See *Featherstenhaugh's Geological Report*, (1835) p. 24.

Almost all the precious stones, such as the sapphire, emerald, spinel, carysoberyl, chrysoprase, topaz, iolite, garnet, tourmaline, chalcedony, amethyst, &c are found exclusively in the oldest and most crystalline rocks. Quartz in the various forms of rock crystal, chalcedony, carnelian, cacholong, sardonyx, jasper, &c. is found sometimes in the secondary strata, and especially in the trap rocks, associated with the secondary formations.

*Descrip.* Some of the metals, as platinum, gold, silver, mercury, copper, bismuth, &c. exist in the rocks in a pure, that is, a metallic state; but usually they occur in the state of oxides, sulphurets, and carbonates, and are called *ores*. It is rare that any other ore is found in sufficient quantity to be an object of exploration on a large scale.

*Descrip.* These ores occur in four modes: 1 In regular interstratified layers, or beds: 2 In veins or fissures, crossing the strata and filled with ore united to some gangue or matrix. 3 In irregular masses: 4 Disseminated in small fragments through the rocks.

*Descrip.* Iron is the only metal that is found in all the formations in a workable quantity. Among all its ores, only four

are wrought for obtaining the metal: viz. the magnetic oxide, the specular or peroxide, the hydrated per oxide, and the proto-carbonate.

Manganese occurs in the state of a peroxide and a hydrate;—and is confined to the primary rocks; except an unimportant ore called the earthy oxide, which exists in earthy deposits.

The most important ores of copper are the pyritous copper and the carbonates. These are found in the primary rocks, and as high in the secondary series as the new red sandstone; in one instance in tertiary strata. *Wonders of Geology Vol. 2. p. 651.*

The only ore of lead of much importance is the sulphuret. This generally occurs in the primary rocks both stratified and unstratified, but it exists also in the newer rocks as high in the series as the lias.

The deutoxide of tin is the principal ore of that metal. This is most commonly found in the oldest formations of gneiss, granite, and porphyry: also in the porphyries connected with red sandstone. It is found likewise in quantity sufficient to be wrought in diluvium.

Of zinc the most abundant ore is the sulphuret, which is commonly associated with the sulphuret of lead, or galena. Other valuable ores are the carbonate, silicate, and the oxide, which occur in secondary rocks.

The most common ore of antimony, the sulphuret, has hitherto been found chiefly in granite, gneiss, and mica slate.

The principal ore of mercury, the sulphuret, occurs chiefly in new red sandstone:—sometimes in a sort of mica slate.

Silver in its three forms of a sulphuret, a sulphuret of silver and antimony, and a chloride, has been found mostly in primary and transition slates:—sometimes in a member of the new red sandstone series; and in one instance in tertiary strata. *Wonders of Geology. Vol. 2. p. 651.*

Gold and Platinum always occur in a metallic state; and they have usually been explored in diluvium. They are often associated, however, with the older rocks; and in this country especially, a gold deposit has been traced from Canada to the southern part of Georgia, and the metal is embraced in the talcose slate formation, in veins, usually of quartz. It is found also rarely in graywacke, and even in tertiary strata.

Cobalt, bismuth, arsenic, &c. are usually found associated with silver, or copper; and of course occur in the older rocks. The other metals, which, on account of their small economical value and minute quantity, it is unnecessary to particularize, are also found in the older strata; frequently only disseminated, or in small insulated masses.

*Obs.* An excellent and much more extended view of the geological situation of useful minerals, may be found in Beudant's *Traité Élementaire de Mineralogie, Tome Premier, Livre Quatrième: Paris, 1830.*

*Inf.* It appears from the facts that have been detailed respecting the situation of the useful minerals, that great assistance in searching for them may be derived from a knowledge of rocks and their order of superposition.

*Illustration.* No geologist, for instance, would expect to find valuable beds of coal in the oldest crystalline rocks, nor in the tertiary strata; but in the secondary fossiliferous rocks alone: and even here, he would have but feeble expectations in any other rock except the coal formation. What a vast amount of unnecessary expense and labor

would have been avoided, had men, who have searched for coal, been always acquainted with this principle, and able to distinguish the different rocks! Perpendicular strata of mica and talcose slate would never have been bored into at great expense, as they have been in search of coal: nor would schorl have been mistaken for coal, as it has been!

By no mineral substance have men been more often deceived, than by iron pyrites; which is very appropriately denominated *fool's Gold*. When in a pure state, its resemblance to gold in color is often so great, that it is no wonder those unacquainted with minerals, should suppose it to be that metal. Yet the merest tyro in mineralogy can readily distinguish the two substances; since native gold is always malleable, but pyrites never. This latter mineral is also very liable to decomposition, and such changes are thereby wrought upon the rocks containing it, as to lead the inexperienced observer to imagine that he has got the clue to a rich despository of mineral treasures; and probably nine out ten of those numerous excavations that have been made in the rocks of this country, in search of the precious metals, had their origin in pyrites, and their termination in disappointment, if not poverty. This ore also, when decomposing, sometimes produces considerable heat, and causes masses of the rock to separate with an explosion. Hence the origin of the numerous legends that prevail respecting lights seen, and sounds heard, in the mountain where the supposed treasure lies, and which so strongly confirm the ignorant in their expectation of finding mineral treasures. Now all this delusion would be dissipated in a moment, were the eye of a geologist to rest on such spots, or were the elementary principles of geology more widely diffused in the community.

Another common delusion respects gypsum; which is as often sought among the primary, as in the secondary and tertiary rocks: although it is doubtful whether primary gypsum has ever been found. A few years since, however, a farmer in this country supposed that he had discovered gypsum on his farm, and persuaded his neighbors that such was the case. They bought large quantities of it, and it was ground for agriculture, when accidentally it was discovered that it was only limestone: a fact that might have been determined in a moment at first, by a single drop of acid.

*Caution.* It ought not to be inferred from all that has been said, that because a mineral substance has been found in only one rock, it exists in no other. But in many cases we may be almost certain that such and such rocks cannot contain such and such minerals. Of such cases, however, the practised geologist can alone judge with much correctness, and hence the importance of an extensive acquaintance with geology in the community. An amount of money much greater than is generally known, has been expended in vain for the want of this knowledge.

*Observation.* The chemical changes which rocks have undergone since their deposition, as well as the operation of decomposing agents to which they are now exposed, properly belong to the chemistry of geology. But these points will be deferred to subsequent sections; because they will there be better understood.

## SECTION III.

## THE LITHOLOCICAL CHARACTERS OF THE STRATIFIED ROCKS.

*Def.* The Lithological character of a rock embraces its mineral composition and structure as well as its external aspect, in distinction from its zoological and botanical characters, which refer to its organic remains.

*Remark.* I shall describe the stratified rocks under the names and in the order in which they are given in the Tabular Synopsis at the close of Section 1. They are, however, arranged into Groups or Systems, nearly corresponding with, those of Professor John Phillips. I have also arranged these systems, under the terms Alluvium, Diluvium, Tertiary, Secondary, and Primary;—not because I feel satisfied with these terms; but chiefly because they have become so incorporated with geological descriptions that their use is still convenient, and but little liable to lead the learner astray; especially if he be forewarned against the hypothetical intimations which they contain. Yet another reason for using them, is, that there does exist in nature a ground for grouping together the rocks in some analogous manner; and these terms may be employed until some decidedly better ones are proposed.

## 1. ALLUVIUM.

*Descrip.* The following stratified deposits are the result of alluvial agency.

1. Soil.	8. Siliceous Marl, or Deposites of the skeletons of Infusoria.
2. Sand.	9. Bitumen.
3. Peat.	10. Sulphate of Lime.
4. Marl.	11. Hydrate of Iron.
5. Calcareous Tufa or Travertino.	12. Hydrate of Manganese.
6. Coral Reefs.	13. Chloride of Sodium (Sea Salt).
7. Siliceous Sinter.	14. Geic Compound (Apothemicite).
15. Sandstones, Conglomerates, and Breccias.	

*Prin.* Soil is disintegrated and decomposed rock, with such a mixture of vegetable and animal matter that plants will grow in it.

*Proof* 1. We see almost every where the rocks crumbling down into soil. 2 Chemical analysis shows that the soils are composed generally of silica, alumina, lime, magnesia and iron, in about the same proportion as they are found in the rocks. Silica is much the most abundant ingredient.

*Remark.* The most interesting examples of alluvial soil are those deposits formed by the overflowing of rivers, along their banks.

*Descrip.* Vast accumulations of sand, the result of alluvial

agency, occur not merely in the bed of the ocean and in lakes, but also upon the dry land, where they are called *dunes* or *downs*. These are composed almost entirely of silica; and being destitute of organic matter, cannot retain vegetation.

*Descrip.* The manner in which peat is formed has already been explained in general terms. (Section II.) When perfectly formed, it is destitute of a fibrous structure, and is, when wet, a fine black mud: and when dry, a powder. It consists chiefly of the substance called *geine*; a part of which is soluble, and a part insoluble in water. These deposits of peat are sometimes 30 or 40 feet thick; but they are not formed in tropical climates, on account of the too rapid decomposition of the organic matter.

*Des.* *Alluvial Marl* is usually a fine powder, consisting of carbonate of lime, clay, and soluble and insoluble *geine*; and is found usually beneath peat in limestone countries; sometimes at the bottom of ponds. It is produced partly by the decay of the shells of molluscous animals, and partly by the deposition of the carbonate of lime from solution in water. It contains numerous small fresh water shells, and has received the name of *shell marl*.

*Method of detecting calcareous marl.* The great value of this substance in agriculture, and the confusion that prevails in its description, render it desirable to point out a test by which it can be distinguished. That test is an acid of some sort, the common mineral acids, oil of vitriol, aqua fortis, and muriatic acid being the best; but strong vinegar will answer. If the substance effervesce, when the acid is applied, we may be sure that it is genuine marl: otherwise not.

*Other kinds of Marl.* Several other substances that contain no carbonate of lime have often been denominated marl by agriculturists and not without reason; for they have produced effects analogous to those of calcareous marl. But it seems very desirable that terms should not be applied too loosely, and I propose the following designations for these substances.

*Calcareous Marl*: that which contains carbonate of lime in any quantity.

*Siliceous Marl*: that in which silica predominates, and no calcareous matter is present.

*Aluminous Marl*: that in which clay predominates and no calcareous matter is present.

*Green Sand Marl*: that which contains green sand. This is the substance that has been of late employed with signal success as a fertilizer of land in New Jersey, Virginia, Delaware, &c. If it contain any carbonate of lime, the compound term *Calcareo-green sand marl*, might be employed.

*Method of searching for alluvial Marl.* The presence of Marl beneath a peat bog can be determined with a good degree of certainty, by plunging a pole,—the rougher the better, through the peat, until it reaches the solid bottom of the morass; and on withdrawing it, some of the marl if any exist, will adhere to the surface; though a coating of the black mud may cover it.

*Descrip. Calcareous Tufa or Travertino*, is a deposite of carbonate of lime, made by springs containing that substance in solution. It forms a solid limestone, sometimes even crystalline, and of considerable extent; so as to be used for architectural purposes. Thermal waters produce it most abundantly, as in Central France, Hungary, Tuscany, and Campagna di Roma: but it is also deposited by springs of the ordinary temperature, as at Saratoga and in the Appenines. (*Dr. Dau-beny's Report on Mineral and Thermal Waters*. p. 56. *London*, 1837. *Also De la Beche's Manual of Geology*, p. 158. *Also Lyell's Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 198.) Travertino is also precipitated by rivers, as in Tuscany; and at the mouths of rivers on the coast of Asia Minor. (*Lyell's Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 237.) Very similar are the concretionary calcareous depositories formed in caverns: those depending from the roof are called *Stalac-tites*, and those on the floor, *Stalagmites*.

*Descrip. Coral Reefs* are extensive depositories of carbonate of lime, formed by myriads of polyparia, or radiated animals, in shallow water, in the south seas. They form the habitations of these animals; and of course are organic in their structure.

*Descrip. Silicious Sinter, or Tufa* is a deposite of silica, made by the water of thermal springs, which sometimes hold that earth in solution. Successive layers of sinter and clay frequently occur and these are sometimes broken up and re-cemented so as to form a breccia. *Prof. J. W. Webster in the Edinburgh Philosophical Journal*. Vol. VI.

*Descrip. Siliceous Marl, or the Fossil Shields of Infusoria*. Beneath the beds of peat and mud in the primary regions of this country, a deposite often occurs from a few inches to several feet thick, which almost exactly resembles the calcareous marl that is found in the same situation. When pure, it is white and nearly as light as the carbonate of magnesia: but it is usually more or less mixed with clay. It is found by analysis to be nearly pure silica; and it turns out to be almost entirely composed of the siliceous shields, or skeletons, of those microscopic animals called *Infusoria*, or *Animalculæ*, which have lived and died in countless numbers in the ponds at the bottom of which this substance has been deposited.

*Rem.* The discovery of this curious fact (concerning which more will be said in a subsequent Section,) in relation to this country, was made by Prof. Bailey of West Point. *American Journal of Science* Vol. 35. p. 118. Analogous substances occur in Europe: but whether exactly identical with ours, I am unable to say. Perhaps the *Bergmehl* of Prof. Ehrenberg may be the same, as our Siliceous Marl.

*Descrip.* Some springs deposite large quantities of bitumen in the form of naphtha and asphaltum. Their localities and extent will be described in a subsequent section.

*Descrip.* Although sulphate of lime very generally exists in the waters of springs, yet it is rarely deposited. One or two examples only are mentioned, where a deposite of this salt has been made; as at the baths of San Philippo in France. *De la Beche's Manual* p. 158.

*Descrip.* Hydrate of Iron or Bog ore is a common and abundant deposite from waters that are capable of holding it in solution: and it appears also, that this ore is often made up of the shields of Infusoria, which are often ferruginous. *Wonders of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 660.

*Descrip.* The Hydrate of Manganese also, by a somewhat similar process, is frequently deposited in the form of the earthy oxide, or *Wad*, in low grounds: and it can hardly be doubted but it is an alluvial product. *Report on the Geology of Massachusetts*, 2d Edition, p. 130.

*Descrip.* Chloride of Sodium or Rock Salt, is very rarely deposited from its solution in water so as to be visible; though some have supposed that this deposition does take place extensively at the bottom of such seas as the Mediterranean. It is said, however, to accumulate in some of the cavities of the rocks along the shores of the Mediterranean, in such quantity as to be collected by the inhabitants.

*Rem.* The Rev. Justin Perkins, American Missionary, who resides on the borders of lake Ooromiah in Persia, states in a letter, that the waters of the lake rise 5 or 6 feet in the spring, and as they gradually subside in the summer, "a very thin incrustation of salt is left on the land that has been overflowed." He was also informed by a Nestorian Bishop and others, that for some years past, the mean level of the waters has been rising; and that formerly the deposite of salt was so great as to form permanent alternating layers with sand. A specimen of this water just received, appears to be nearly saturated with salt.

*Des.* In Essex County, Mass. a curious substance of alluvial origin has been deposited in low grounds, which appears to be essentially a *percate of iron*; and which has received the name of *Apothemicite*. It will probably be found in many places, and seemed to deserve a passing notice among the products of alluvial action: although for details, I must refer to another place. *Report on a Re-examination of the Geology of Massachusetts*, p. 89.

*Descrip.* Alluvial Sandstone, conglomerate, and breccia, are formed by the cementation of sand, rounded pebbles, or angular fragments, by iron, or carbonate of lime, which is infiltrated

through the mass in a state of solution. They are not very common, nor on a very extended scale.

*Def.* When sand is cemented, the solid mass is called *Sand-stone* : rounded pebbles produce a *Conglomerate* or *Plum Pudding Stone* ; and angular fragments, a *Breccia*.

*Def.* The varieties of alluvium, that have been described may be regarded as a Formation in the geological sense : and the period during which such a group is in the progress of deposition, that is, until some important change takes place in the material or mode of production, is called a *Geological Period* : and the point of time when the change occurs is called an *Epoch*.

## 2. DILUVIUM OR DRIFT.

*Remark.* This formation is probably more difficult to study than any other in the whole series of rocks : perhaps because geologists have yet given it less careful attention than most other rocks. Although some of its features are very marked and very distinct from those of alluvium above and tertiary strata beneath, yet the limits between these strata and diluvium are not always easy to determine.

*Descrip.* The great mass of diluvium is composed of sand and gravel of different degrees of comminution, mixed together just in the manner that violent currents of water would do it. This gravel is often not derived from the rocks beneath it, but from those at a distance of several miles, and in this country usually from ledges which lie in a north-westerly direction. The surface of this gravel is often scooped out into deep basin-shaped depressions, and raised into corresponding elevations, the difference of level being sometimes 20 or 30 and even 100 or 200 feet.

*Descrip.* Scattered through this gravel, are rounded masses of rock larger than pebbles, which are called *boulders* : and as they are frequently found a great distance from the place of their origin, they are also denominated *erratic blocks*, and *lost rocks*. Oftentimes alluvial agency has removed the sand and gravel from these boulders, so that they lie insulated upon the surface.

*Def.* When they happen to be thus insulated upon other rocks and so poised that a small force will make them oscillate, they are called *Rocking Stones*.

Fig. 31 exhibits a rocking stone in the west part of Barre, Mass.

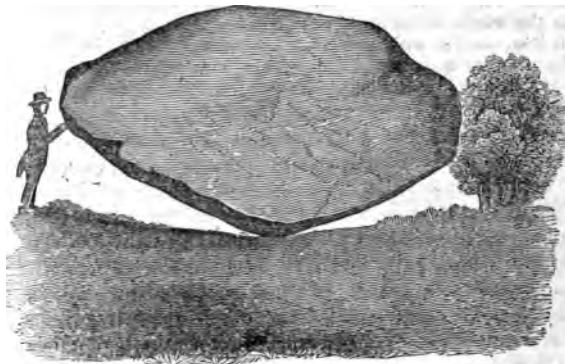
Fig. 31.



*Rocking Stone: Barre.*

Fig. 32 is a rocking stone in Fall River, Mass. poised upon granite.

Fig. 32.



*Rocking Stone: Fall River.*

*Descrip.* On many plains through which no existing stream now passes, and lying over the diluvial gravel above described, we find thick beds of sand and clay, deposited in much more quiet waters than common diluvium, and yet apparently near the close of the same period, by the subsiding waters. The usual order of the series is, first and lowest, the coarse materials, then clay, then sand. *Traite Elementaire Geologie, par M. Rozet. p. 256. Tome 1.*

*Descrip.* Sometimes the diluvial sand and gravel that have been described, are consolidated into sandstone and conglomerate, by the infiltration of iron or carbonate of lime: as in Poultney Vermont. *Report on the Geology, of Massachusetts, p. 147. Also Tableau des Terrains, p. 66.*

*Descrip.* Another variety of diluvium, found especially in Europe, is *Osseous Breccia*: composed of fragments of bones.

united by a calcareous cement, and occupying fisures and caverns in older rocks. See *Dr. Buckland's Reliquiae Diluvianae*. These breccias, however do not all belong to the diluvial period.

*Descrip.* Pisiform iron ore occurs in a similar situation ; that is, in fisures in rocks, uniting together masses of limestone : but there is some doubt whether the exact situation of this iron has been determined. *Rozet p. 286, Tome 1. Elementa de Geologie par J. J. D'Omalius D'Halloy, p. 132.*

*Descrip.* Many of the most valuable of the precious stones and metals are found in diluvium ; such as the diamond, the sapphire, the topaz, the ruby, and the zircon ; as well as platinum, gold, and tin. Platinum, gold, and the diamond are explored almost exclusively in this formation. *Tableaux des Terrains, p. 115.*

### 3. TERTIARY STRATA. (*Supercretaceous Group of De la Beche.*)

*Historical Remark.* Until the publication by Cuvier and Brongniart of their Memoir on the tertiary strata around the city of Paris, in 1810, these formations were confounded with alluvium. Since that period, other similar depositories have been studied with diligence and success ; and it is found that tertiary strata occupy more than half the surface of Europe ; and in this country they embrace nearly all the level region in the eastern part of the middle and southern states.

*Descrip.* The tertiary rocks have been divided into four distinct groups of marine strata, distinguished by important peculiarities in their organic remains, and separated from one another, by strata which contain fresh water and terrestrial remains. - *Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise, Vol. 1. p. 76.*

*Rem.* Marine strata are easily distinguished from those of freshwater origin by the occurrence in the former of animals peculiar to the ocean, and in the latter of those peculiar to fresh water.

*Descrip.* Mr Lyell has divided these strata into four groups, to which he gives the names *Eocene, Miocene, and Older and Newer Pliocene*. In the first, the number of shells identical with living species is very small, only 3 1-2 per cent. In the second group, reckoning upwards, it is 17 per cent ; in the Older Pliocene 35 to 50 per cent, and in the Newer Pliocene 90 to 95 per cent. And by this character are the groups distinguished. *Lyell's Elements of Geology, p. 284.* Other geologists object to these characters as too indefinite. *De la Beche's Theoretical Geology, Chap. XVII. Phillips Treatise on Geology, p. 180.*

*Descrip.* The tertiary rocks are in general distinctly stratified, and the strata are usually horizontal. In some cases, however, (as in the Isle of Wight and at Gay Head,) they are inclined at a large angle.

*Prin.* All the stratified rocks appear to have been originally deposited from water.

*Proof.* The manner in which the ingredients of these rocks are arranged, viz. in parallel strata and laminae, is precisely like that of the subaqueous depositories which are now forming in many localities, so that these latter need only to be hardened into stone, (when they are not already consolidated,) and in some cases rendered more crystalline, in order to be converted into the former. And by no other agent that we know of, by which rocks are formed, is a stratified and schistose arrangement produced. Again, the materials composing these stratified rocks, viz. clay, sand, and carbonate of lime, are very similar to those depositories which water is now producing. And further, the organic remains which many of these rocks contain, can be accounted for only on the supposition that the rocks enveloping them were deposited from water.

*Descrip.* Rocks are deposited by water in two modes: first, as mere sediment, by its mechanical agency, in connection with gravity: secondly, as chemical precipitates from solution.

*Def.* The first kind of rocks is called *mechanical or sedimentary rocks*; the second kind, *chemical depositories*.

*Descrip.* As a general fact, the lower we descend into the rock series, we meet with less and less of a mechanical and more and more of a chemical agency in their production. The primary stratified rocks have generally been regarded as destitute of every mark of a mechanical origin except their parallel arrangement; but in fact, the greater part of them are made up of the fragments of crystals more or less worn and cemented together.

*Remark.* I possess specimens of mica slate, talcose slate, and quartz rock, from various parts of New England, which are made up of fragments as distinctly rounded by attrition, as those of any fossiliferous conglomerate: and these pebbles are cemented by similar materials in a finer state. Most of these specimens are associated with highly inclined strata of the oldest primary rocks in New England. They are good examples of what are called *Metamorphic Rocks*. *Phillip's Geology*, p. 75.

*Descrip.* In the fossiliferous rocks we sometimes find an alternation of mechanical and chemical depositories: but for the most part, these rocks exhibit evidence of both modes of depository, acting simultaneously.

*Remark.* It is difficult to conceive how any rock can be consolidated without more or less, of chemical agency, except perhaps in that imperfect consolidation which takes place in argillaceous mixtures by mere desiccation. Even in the coarsest conglomerate there must be more or less of chemical union between the cement and the pebbles.

*Descrip.* In the tertiary rocks a mechanical agency decidedly predominates: nevertheless, several beds are the result of chemical precipitation; as gypsum, limestone, and rock salt.

*Descrip.* The varieties of rocks composing the tertiary strata

are concretionary, tufaceous, argillaceous, and siliceous; or limestone, marl, plastic clay, siliceous and calcarous sands, green sand, gypsum, lignite, rock salt, and buhrstone.

#### 4. SECONDARY ROCKS.

*Def.* Under *Secondary Rocks*, I include all the fossiliferous strata below the Tertiary: that is, I embrace under Secondary, all those denominated by many writers Secondary and Transition. The entire want of agreement among geologists as to the upper limit of the Transition Class, proves to my mind that there is no mark in nature for fixing that limit. Some commence the Transition rocks with the coal Formation: Others with the Carboniferous Limestone: others with the Old Red Sandstone: and others with the Graywacke.

##### 1. *Cretaceous System.*

*Descrip.* In Europe this formation is usually characterised by the presence of chalk in the upper part, and sands and sandstones in the lower: In this country chalk is wanting: yet some of our geologists suppose that the Ferruginous Sand Formation is the equivalent of the chalk formation of Europe. *Dr. Morton in Journal of Academy of Natural Sciences, Vol. VI. Also American Journal of Science, Vol. XVII. p. 274. and XVIII. p. 243. and XXIV. p. 128.*

*Descrip.* The Cretaceous system is thus arranged by Dr. Fitton:

Chalk.	<table> <tr> <td>Upper,</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Lower,</td></tr> <tr> <td>Marly.</td><td></td></tr> </table>	Upper,	}	Lower,	Marly.	
Upper,	}					
Lower,						
Marly.						
Green Sand.	<table> <tr> <td>Upper Green Sand,</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Gault,</td></tr> <tr> <td>Lower Green Sand.</td><td></td></tr> </table>	Upper Green Sand,	}	Gault,	Lower Green Sand.	
Upper Green Sand,	}					
Gault,						
Lower Green Sand.						
Wealden.	<table> <tr> <td>Weald Clay,</td><td rowspan="2">}</td></tr> <tr> <td>Hastings Sands,</td></tr> <tr> <td>Purbeck Strata.</td><td></td></tr> </table>	Weald Clay,	}	Hastings Sands,	Purbeck Strata.	
Weald Clay,	}					
Hastings Sands,						
Purbeck Strata.						

*Observations on some of the Strata between the Chalk and Oxford Oolite in the South East of England, By W. H. Fitton. p. 105. London, 1836.*

*Descrip.* Chalk is a pulverulent carbonate of lime, and its varieties have resulted from the impurities that were deposited with it. The upper beds are remarkable for the great quantity of flints dispersed through them, generally in parallel position.

*Descrip.* *Green Sand* is a mixture of arenaceous matter, with a peculiar green substance greatly resembling chlorite, or green earth.

*Composition.* The coloring matter of green sand has been analyzed with much care by several distinguished chemists with the following results.

<i>French Green Sand.</i>	<i>English Do.</i>	<i>Massachusetts Do.</i>	<i>N. Jersey Do.</i>
	<i>By M. Berthier.</i>	<i>By Prof. Turner.</i>	<i>By Dr. S. L. Dana.</i>
Silica	50.0	48.5	56.700
Protoide of Iron	21.0	22.0	20.100
Alumina	7.0	17.0	13.320
Water	11.0	7.0	7.000
Potassa	10.9	traces	9.99
Lime			1.624
Magnesia		3.8	1.176
Manganese		traces	0.080
		traces and loss	

*See Dr. Fitton on the Strata Below the Chalk, p. 109. Also Prof. H. D. Roger's Report on the Geological Survey of N. Jersey, p. 47. *et seq.* Also Report on a re-examination of the Geology of Massachusetts, p. 78.*

*Use of Green Sand.* This substance has been applied within a few years in this country with great success as a manure, especially in N. Jersey. If its fertilizing power depends on the potassa alone, the English and Massachusetts deposits would be of no value: but if, as some suppose, the oxide of iron and the other ingredients assist in this respect, it may prove of great importance.

*Descrip.* *Gault or Galt*, is a provincial name for a blue marly clay, or marl, forming an inter-stratified bed in the green sand of England.

*Descrip.* *The Wealden Formation*, which has been found in the South-east of England, chiefly in the *wealds* or woods of Sussex and Kent, is composed of beds of limestone, conglomerate, sandstone, and clay, which abound in the remains of fresh water and terrestrial animals, and appear to have been deposited in an estuary that once occupied that part of England. Similar beds occur in Scotland and in a few places on the European Continent.

*Remark.* Some of the most remarkable facts in fossil geology have been derived from this formation, which will be found described in *Dr. Mantell's illustrations of the Geology of Sussex &c. And Geology of the South East of England: Also in Dr. Fitton's Observations on the Strata below the Chalk; and in Dr. Mantell's Wonders of Geology*, 2 vols. 1838.

## 2. Oolitic System.

*Descrip.* In many of the rocks of this series, small calcareous globules are imbedded, which resemble the roe of a fish, and hence such rock is called Roestone or Oolite. But this structure extends through only a small part of this formation, and it occurs also in other rocks.

*Descrip.* The Oolitic series consists of interstratified layers of clay, sandstone, marl, and limestone. The upper portion, or that which is Oolite proper, is divided into three systems or groups, called the Upper, Middle, and Lower, separated by clay or marl deposits.

*Remark.* Prof. Phillips includes the Wealden Formation in the Oolitic System. *Phillip's Geology*, p. 132.

~~mean of eight analyses.~~

**Descrip.** The lowest member of the oolitic group is called *Lias*, and consists essentially of argillaceous limestone.

**Remark.** The oolitic group is remarkable for the vast amount of calcareous matter which it contains, and for the great number and variety of its organic remains.

### 3. Saliferous System.

**Descrip.** This group is composed of rocks which have sometimes a slaty, and sometimes a conglomerated structure, with fine sandstones, interstratified with one another in endless variety. In composition, the rock is siliceous, argillaceous, or calcareous; and often highly charged with red oxide of iron. The varieties in the color and appearance of these rocks is exceedingly various: often however, they exhibit a variegated aspect.

**Descrip.** In Europe writers enumerate five varieties of this rock. 1. *Variegated Marl*, composed of indurated clays of various colors, among which red predominates: sometimes the clay is black, sometimes bluish gray; and gray sandstone and yellowish magnesian limestone are interstratified, the whole forming the highest member of the series. 2. *Muschelkalk*; a gray-compact limestone, occasionally dolomitic, lying beneath the marls and not yet detected except on the continent of Europe.

3. *Red or Variegated Sandstone*. Its varieties of color are red, blue, and green. Its composition is chiefly siliceous and argillaceous, with occasional beds of gypsum, and rock salt. (*New Red Sandstone*, English Writers. *Gres Bigarre*, French. *Bunter Sandstein* Ger.) 4. *Zechstein*. This consists of different varieties of limestone; among which is the fetid limestone, friable marl, and copper slate. 5 *New Red Conglomerate: Exeter Red Conglomerate*. A series of conglomerates and sandstones lying beneath zechstein, and above the coal measures: the fragments having been derived from the latter. (*Todthiegendes, Rothe Todte Liegende* Ger.)

**Remark.** Some of these varieties, as the Muschelkalk and Zechstein, are frequently wanting in this formation.

### 4. Carboniferous System.

**Descrip.** This group embraces three extensive deposits, resting upon one another in the following order; beginning with the uppermost. 1. *Coal Measures*. These consist of irregularly interstratified beds of sandstone, shale and coal. Frequently these are deposited in basin-shaped cavities; but

not always. These rocks abound in faults produced by igneous agency; whereby the continuity of the beds of coal is interrupted, and the difficulty of exploring for coal increased in some respects; but in other respects facilitated; so that upon the whole, faults are decidedly beneficial. 2. *Carboniferous Limestone*. A gray compact limestone, traversed by veins of calcareous spar, and frequently abounding in organic remains. Encrinites are sometimes so abundant that the rock is called *Encrinial Limestone*. It is also called *Mountain Limestone*, and *Metalliferous Limestone*, as in England it abounds in lead ore. 3. *Old Red Sandstone*. This rock is composed mostly of conglomerate, but sometimes it becomes fine enough to be schistose: Its prevailing color is red, and its thickness very variable.

Item. 1. Some writers consider the old red sandstone as properly belonging to the Graywacke Group. (*Bakewell's Geology* p. 87. *De la Beche's Manual*, p. 414.) Of late this formation is frequently denominated the *Devonian System*, because largely developed in Devonshire.

Item. 2. The Coal Measures exist in almost every country of much extent, and form one of the most important sources of national wealth and happiness. In England not less than 6,000,000 tons of coal are yearly raised from the mines of Northumberland and Durham: at which rate they will be exhausted in about 250 years. In South Wales, however, is a coal field of 1200 square miles, with 23 beds, whose total thickness is 95 feet; and this will supply coal for 2000 years more. (*Bakewell's Geology* p. 125.) In Great Britain about 15,000 steam engines are in operation by the use of coal with a power equal to that of about 2,000,000 of men. The machinery moved by this power has been supposed equivalent to that of between 300,000,000. and 400,000,000 men by direct labor. Well may Dr. Buckland say "we are almost astounded at the influence of coal and iron and steam upon the fate and fortunes of the Human race." *Bridgewater Treatise* vol. 1. p. 535.

Probably no part of the world contains such immense beds of coal as the central parts of the United States. In 1837, not less than than 900,000 tons of coal were carried to market from the mines in Pennsylvania alone: and the working of these mines has as yet only just commenced. The southern anthracite basin of that state is 60 miles long and two miles broad, with an aggregate thickness of 100 feet. Indeed, 30 out of the 54 counties of that state are in whole or in part based upon coal. But no one, who has not visited that state, can form any adequate idea of the quantity of the coal existing there. One bed alone, which probably extends through all the anthracite region, varies from 22 to 50 feet in thickness; while the thickest bed in England is only 30 feet. *Prof. H. D. Roger's Report on the Geological Exploration of the state of Pennsylvania for 1838.* p. 84. *Bakewell's Geology*, p. 106.

### 5. *Silurian System.*

*Descrip.* As has been stated in the first section, the Silurian System, proposed by Mr. Murchison, embraces the upper members of that extensive deposite, which has long been known

under the name of Graywacke, and Graywacke Slate, or Shale. Its composition is arenaceous, argillaceous, and calcareous; showing in all cases evidence of a sedimentary origin; yet having been subjected to a more powerful chemical action than the rocks above it: The materials are often exceedingly fine; and then we have delicate slates; yet usually of a dull aspect. Sometimes they are very coarse, so as to form conglomerates; and these two varieties are often interstratified. The limestones bear stronger marks of a chemical than a mechanical origin, and are frequently very crystalline. Sometimes they are argillaceous, and often slaty, and frequently concretionary. They abound in organic remains, as does, in fact, the whole formation. The slates are sometimes but not extensively divided by joints and cleavage planes; though the original lamination of the beds by deposition is quite obvious.

*Rem.* The subdivisions of the Silurian System, as proposed by Mr. Murchison, may be seen in the Tabular Synopsis of the different systems of classification given in the First Section. It might be supposed that these would possess only a local interest. But Mr. Conrad, Palaeontologist of the New York Geological Survey, is of opinion that he can not only identify the Silurian System generally with rocks in that state, but also the subdivisions; and he says that the system generally is more fully developed in this country than in England. *Report of the N. York Survey for 1839*, p. 200. For a full description of this vast formation in England, see the magnificent quarto of Mr. Murchison, already referred to.

#### 6. *Clay Slate and Graywacke System* (Philips), *Cambrian Group* (Sedgwick).

*Descrip.* This extensive deposite, at least 3000 or 4000 yards thick in Wales, embraces the lower part of the Graywacke Group, and the clay slate of other geologists.

The whole of it is eminently argillaceous: but it varies from the finest clay slate to conglomerates, with fragments of quartz, feldspar, mica, jasper, &c. half an inch in diameter. The cement, however, is still argillaceous. These conglomerates, especially in the upper part of the series, are interstratified with the slates which have been called graywacke slate and clay slate. In the north of England, where this system of strata is developed on an enormous scale, and forms the splendid scenery of that country, these slates are so divided by joints and cleavage, that the planes of deposition, or stratification and lamination, are very obscure. The lowest part of the system is composed chiefly of clay slate, which sometimes contains chiastolite and hornblende. In these lowest slates no organic remains have been found, and only about 30 species in the limestone interstratified with the higher

members of the series. These are perfectly developed zoophytes and molluscs; but no plants have been found. These are the lowest rocks containing organic remains. *Sedgwick in Geological Transactions, Vol. 8. Phillips' Treatise on Geology, Vol. 1. p. 124. Lyell's Elements, p. 464. Also Principles of Geology, Vol. 2. p. 452.*

*Rem. 1.* It is by no means certain that the Cambrian System of rocks ought to be separated from the Silurian: for although the organic remains are quite different in the former from those in the latter, yet the number is quite small.

*Rem. 2.* In the Tabular View of the Classification of rocks, I have placed the Skiddau or Clay Slate System of Prof. Phillips below the line separating the fossiliferous from the non-fossiliferous strata. For in general it is certain that organic remains have not been found in clay slate, and Prof. Phillips says that "they are not found in the lowest group of Skiddau." *Treatise on Geology, Vol. 1. p. 128.*

##### 5. PRIMARY ROCKS.

*Rem.* As the non-fossiliferous or primary rocks have no settled order of superposition, different writers will describe them in different orders. I shall give them in the order in which they most usually occur, especially in this country.

1. *Clay Slate or Argillaceous Slate.* This rock is composed of fine argillaceous matter which has a fossil structure, and in the most perfect varieties its surface is more or less shining from chloritic or plumbaginous matter. Its principal deposite has already been described, as a part of the Cambrian System. But it occurs frequently interstratified with mica slate and quartz rock; and must, therefore, be regarded as a non-fossiliferous primary rock. Yet on the other hand, it also occurs interstratified with fossiliferous Graywacke. There seems, therefore, a necessity for regarding clay slate as belonging both to the fossiliferous and non-fossiliferous strata. The farther we recede from the line separating these two classes of rocks towards the oldest, the more highly glazed does the clay slate become, until it passes at length insensibly into mica slate, talcose slate, or hornblende slate: But receding from that line in the other direction, its surface becomes more dull, and its texture looser, until it forms what is usually termed *shale*: and if we follow it still higher up in the series, it becomes gradually changed into unconsolidated clay.

*Rem.* A variety of clay slate used for whet-stones and hones is called *Whetstone Slate.* Some of the best hones, however, are compact feldspar. The common notion that they are petrified wood, is utterly groundless. *Graphic slate or drawing slate*, is a variety of clay slate that contains several per cent of carbon.

2. *Quartz Rock. Descrip.* This rock is essentially composed of quartz, either granular or arenaceous. The varieties result from the intermixture of mica, feldspar, talc, hornblende, or clay slate. In these compound varieties the stratification is remarkably regular: but in pure granular quartz, it is often difficult to discover the planes of stratification. It is interstratified with every one of the primary rocks, and also with graywacke; in which last case it often assumes a decidedly mechanical structure: and even when a member of the primary series, this structure is sometimes visible. *Macculloch's Principles of Geology, Vol. 2. p. 174. Also Geological Classification, p. 317.*

*Remark.* The arenaceous varieties of this rock form good *firestones*; that is, stones capable of sustaining powerful heat. Some varieties of mica slate are still better. Gneiss of an arenaceous composition is also employed; as are several varieties of sandstone of different ages. The firestone of the English green sand, is a fine siliceous sand cemented by limestone. *Fitton on the Strata below the Chalk, p. 137.*

3. *Hornblende Slate.* Hornblende predominates in this rock: but its varieties contain feldspar, quartz, and mica. When it is pure hornblende, its stratification is often indistinct, and it passes, by taking feldspar into its composition, into a rock resembling greenstone. It occurs in every part of the primary series; but its more common associations are argillaceous slate, mica slate and gneiss; into which it passes by insensible gradations.

*Variety.* Dr. Macculloch describes *actynolite schist*, as distinct from hornblende slate: but as mineralogists now regard the two minerals as only one species, it is unnecessary to separate the rocks.

4. *Talcose Slate.* The talc in this rock, which is the essential ingredient, and is sometimes in a pure state, is usually mixed with quartz and mica, and sometimes with limestone, feldspar, and hornblende. It is associated sometimes with argillaceous slate, and even graywacke: but usually, at least in the United States, with mica slate, and rarely with gneiss.

*Varieties.* *Chlorite Slate* is only a variety of talcose slate, in which the talc is almost pulverulent and compact, of a green color, and in much larger quantity than the quartz. *Stealite* is often nothing but schistose talc, which is adherent enough to be wrought, and at other times it is somewhat granular, and slightly indurated. This is the valuable stone so extensively used for furnaces, fire places, aqueducts, &c. under the name of *soapstone* or *freestone*.

*Obs.* Most of the beds of steatite in New England, lie at the junction of talcose and hornblende and mica slate.

5. *Serpentine.* This is usually regarded as a simple mineral, which contains about 40 per cent. of magnesia; and it is in fact a hydrated silicate of magnesia. Most European writers describe it among the unstratified rocks; and no doubt it does

frequently occur without any parallel division into strata, and in the form of veins. But the vast beds of it in the primitive regions of N. England are often distinctly stratified; and I therefore follow Dr. Macculloch, who places this rock both among the stratified and the unstratified; because this arrangement corresponds best with its characters in Scotland. The truth is, serpentine appears usually to be a *metamorphic* rock: that is, a rock which has been subject to so high a degree of heat as to change its characters; and yet not so high as in all cases to destroy the marks of stratification which it originally possessed. Many of its largest masses in N. England are associated with talcose slate near its junction with some other rock, especially hornblende slate. It is not a rock of much comparative extent.

6. *Primary Limestone.* Limestone that alternates with primary strata is called *primary*. Dr. Macculloch considers such alternation the only decided proof that a limestone is primary. (*Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 209.) Others, as De la Beche, make its primary character to depend more upon its crystalline character; and hence assert that it occurs interstratified with fossiliferous rocks. (*Manual of Geology* p. 435.) It is generally white and crystalline, resembling loaf sugar so much as to be called *saccharine*. But in some situations it is dark colored, by being penetrated with other rocks, and also nearly compact.

*Rem.* When this rock occurs in the unstratified class, and also in some of the older stratified ones, it is often nearly or quite destitute of stratification. (Ex.gr. the limestone beds in sienite in Newbury and Stoneham, and in gneiss at Bolton Massachusetts: also in hornblende slate in Smithfield, R. I.: and in granite in St. Lawrence and Essex County, N. Y.) Hence it has been proposed to put primary limestone into the unstratified class. (*Prof. Emmons' Report on the Geology of the Second District of N. York*, 1838, p. 196.) In many cases, however, it is most distinctly stratified: as for instance, in the bed lying between strata of gneiss on Cole's Brook, in the west part of Middlefield, in Massachusetts. The interesting examples given by Prof. Emmons in St. Lawrence County, in his Report above referred to, do indeed prove that this rock may exist sometimes in the form of veins in granite. But looking at all the facts on the subject, they seem more satisfactorily explained by supposing primary limestone a metamorphic rock, like serpentine, which may therefore be found both stratified and unstratified, than by regarding it as always unstratified and of igneous origin.

7. *Mica Slate.* This is a slaty mixture of mica and quartz, in which the former predominates. Garnet and Staurotide are often so abundant in it, over extensive tracks, as properly to be regarded as constituents: hence the varieties, *Garnetiferous* and *Staurotidiferous* mica slate. This is one of the most common and best characterized of the primary rocks.

8. *Gneiss.* The essential ingredients in this rock are quartz, feldspar, and mica. Hornblende is occasionally present: These ingredients are arranged more or less in laminae, and the rock is stratified. Where it passes into granite, however, (which is composed of the same ingredients) the stratification, as well as the laminar arrangement, become exceedingly obscure; and it is impossible to draw a definite line between the two rocks. Gneiss, as well as mica slate, are remarkable in some places for tortuosity and irregularities exhibited by their strata and laminae: while in other places these same rocks are equally distinguished for the regularity and evenness of the stratification, by which they are rendered excellent materials for economical purposes.

*Varieties.* Gneiss sometimes contains crystals of feldspar, which give it a spotted appearance; and this is called *porphyritic gneiss*. When talc takes the place of mica, the rock is called *Protogine*.

*Remark.* Gneiss is a rock of great extent in the United States: especially in New England.

*Eurite or compact Feldspar.* Dr. Macculloch describes a stratified rock associated with gneiss in Scotland, composed chiefly of compact feldspar. De la Beche regards this as Eurite, although most writers consider Eurite as a member of the unstratified class.

*Prin.* If all the stratified rocks have been deposited from water, as we have seen, the layers must have been originally nearly horizontal.

*Prof.* Deposits now taking place rarely have an inclination greater than  $10^{\circ}$  over any considerable extent of surface; though in some favorable circumstances, as when sand accumulates outward on a steep shore, the strata may be inclined as much as  $40^{\circ}$ . *Lyell's Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 310. But a little care will enable any one to distinguish such cases from the effects of subsequent elevation: and it still remains true, as a general fact, that deposits now forming have only a slight inclination.

*Inference.* Hence if we get the perpendicular thickness of a series of strata we ascertain the character of the crust of the globe to that depth.

*Explanation.* If we measure the breadth of a series of upturned strata, on a line at right angles to their strike, and ascertain their dip, we have given the hypotenuse and angles of a right angled triangle to find the perpendicular, which is the thickness of the strata. If the strata are perpendicular, a horizontal line across their edges gives their thickness.

*Facts.* By measurements and calculations of this sort, it has been ascertained that the total thickness of the fossiliferous strata in Europe, is not less than, 6 1-2 miles. (See *Tabular view in Section 1.*) In Pennsylvania the fossiliferous rocks beneath the top of the coal measures, are 40,000 feet, or more than 7 1-2 miles in thickness, (*Prof. Rogers' Report on the Geology of Pennsylvania for 1838*, p. 82.)

*Prop.* In the peninsula of Tauris, Pallas describes a contained series of primary strata, inclined  $45^{\circ}$ , over a distance of 86 miles; which would give a perpendicular thickness of more than 63 miles. *Lyell's Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 457. In N. England, as for instance, on the Rail Road between Westfield and Pittsfield, we have strata of primary rocks, for the most part nearly perpendicular, not less than 20 miles in thickness.

*Remark.* It ought to be recollect, that the primary strata have been subjected to far more numerous disturbances than the secondary and tertiary; and, therefore, all such measurements as the above, are liable to give results not a little erroneous; since the strata may be so shifted as to be measured twice. Such sections, however, as those mentioned above, indicate, after all allowances are made, a great perpendicular thickness.

*Fact.* Dr. Buckland estimates the total thickness of all the stratified rocks in Europe to be at least ten miles. *Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 37.

*Inference.* We see from these statements how groundless is the opinion, that geologists are able to ascertain the structure of the earth only to the depth that excavations have been made, which is less than a mile; especially when we recollect, that the unstratified rocks are uniformly found beneath the stratified; and since their igneous origin is now generally admitted, it can hardly be doubted that they come from very great depths: so that probably the essential composition of the globe is known almost to its centre.

---

## SECTION IV.

### LITHOLOGICAL CHARACTERS AND RELATIVE AGE OF THE UNSTRATIFIED ROCKS.

*Prin.* The differences among the unstratified rocks, result from two causes: 1. a difference in chemical composition: 2. the diversity of circumstances under which they were produced.

*Descrip.* All the varieties of those rocks pass into one another by insensible gradations, even in the same mountain-mass; giving rise to endless varieties, which cannot be described minutely in a treatise, like the present.

*Descrip.* The two predominant and characteristic minerals in the unstratified rocks, are feldspar and augite, or hornblende.

*Rem.* The recent researches of Rose and Mitscherlich, render it

probable that augite and hornblende are only varieties of the same mineral species, which acquire their different crystalline forms and other characteristic differences, in consequence of a difference in the rate of cooling from a state of fusion:—the former crystallising rapidly, and the latter slowly. Rose fused hornblende, and found that on cooling it took the form of augite. *Lyell's Elements of Geology* p. 148. *Phillips Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 2 p. 54.

*Descrip.* The following arrangements of the unstratified rocks, founded upon the relative quantity of feldspar and augite or hornblende, which they contain, has been suggested by Prof. Phillips: (*Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 57,) and is liable only to the objection, that we have not a knowledge of the composition of the older rocks sufficiently perfect, to make it certain that they are all put into the right place in the classification.

### *Division 1. Feldspathic.*

Feldspar alone, or but slightly mixed with augite, hornblende, hypersthene, diallage, &c.

<i>Ancient.</i>	<i>Modern.</i>
Granite and most Porphyries.	Trachyte.

### *Division 2.*

Feldspar in nearly equal proportions with augite, hornblende, hypersthene, &c.

<i>Ancient.</i>	<i>Modern.</i>
Sienite and Greenstone.	Graystones of Scrope.

### *Division 3.*

Augite, hornblende, hypersthene, or diallage, predominates over feldspar (or olivine).

<i>Ancient.</i>	<i>Modern.</i>
-----------------	----------------

Basaltic Series of most authors. Basaltic Series of Scrope.

*Descrip.* On the same principles, that is, mineralogical constitution, Mr. Scrope has divided the products of extinct and active volcanoes into three kinds: 1 *Trachyte*, which is feldspathic: 2 *Graystone*, or a mixture of feldspar and iron: 3 *Basalt*, which is augitic. Girardin (*Considerations general Sur les Volcans*, p.13,) divides these products into the *Trachytic Formation*, (terrain,) *The Basaltic Formation, and the Lava Formation.*

*Def.* The melted matter that is ejected from a volcano, or remains within it, is called *lava*. Hence it is not improper to

apply the term to any rock that is proved to have been in a melted state. But it is usual to confine it to the more modern unstratified rocks, such as have been ejected from a crater.

*Rem.* The igneous origin of all the unstratified rocks is now so generally admitted, that we may take it for granted; and make it the basis of classification—The proof, however, will be presented in a subsequent Section.

*Descrip.* Lava cooled rapidly, and not under pressure, forms glass, or scoria: but cooled slowly, and under pressure, it becomes crystalline. Now the older unstratified rocks, such as granite, sienite, porphyry, and greenstone, are more or less crystalline: whereas basalt, trachyte, and other products of existing volcanoes, are compact or cellular. Nor have we any but presumptive proof, that the former class are now produced by igneous action. Hence it is inferred, that they were cooled under a vast pressure of the ocean and its subjacent beds: and hence they are called *Plutonic Rocks*: whereas the latter are denominated *Volcanic Rocks*. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology Vol. 2. p. 52.* *Lyell's Elements of Geology, p. 14.*

*Obs.* The most important of the unstratified rocks will now be described in an order as nearly chronological (beginning with the oldest) as the present state of our knowledge will admit.

### 1. *Granite.*

*Descrip.* The essential ingredients of this rock are quartz, feldspar, and mica. Its prevailing colors are white and flesh-colored. In some cases the materials are very coarse, the crystalline fragments being a foot or more in diameter: In other cases, they are so fine as to be scarcely visible to the naked eye: and between these extremes, there exists an almost infinite variety. The fine grained varieties are best for economical uses; but the coarser varieties abound most in interesting simple minerals.

*Varieties.* *Graphic Granite* is composed of quartz and feldspar, in which the former has an arrangement which makes the surface of the rock exhibit the appearance of letters as in Fig. 33. When granite contains distinct crystals of feldspar, it is called *porphyritic*. When the ingredients are blended into a finely granular mass, with imbedded crystals of quartz and mica, it has been called by the French writers, *Eurite*. *Pegmatite* is a granular mixture of quartz and feldspar.

Fig. 33.



Fac Simile of Graphic Granite: Goshen, Mass.

## 2. Sienite.

*Def.* Sienite is composed essentially of feldspar, quartz, and hornblende, the first predominating. When mica is also present, the compound is frequently denominated *Sienitic granite*. *Traité Élémentaire de Géologie, Par M. Rozet, Tome 1.* p. 482.

*Obs.* 1. A great deal of confusion and diversity of opinion has existed in respect to the nature and position of sienite. Macculloch makes it to consist of feldspar (compact or common) hornblende and quartz, and he limits it to the overlying or trap family, and considers the analogous compounds associated with granite, as merely varieties of the latter. In N. England, such a distinction would be very difficult, since the same continuous formation of sienite, is sometimes connected, on the one hand, with granite, and on the other with porphyry and greenstone. *Macculloch's Classification of Rocks*, p. 512.

*Obs.* 2. When it was ascertained that the famous rock from Sienna in Upper Egypt (so much employed in ancient monuments,) from which the name of sienite was derived, was nothing but granite with black mica, and also that Mount Sinai in Arabia was composed of genuine sienite, a French Geologist proposed to substitute *Sinaitic* for sienite:— but the suggestion, which was certainly a good one, has not been adopted.

*Obs.* 3. Most of the sienite so famous in N. England for architectural purposes, as that from Quincy and Cape Ann, is composed of feldspar. quartz and hornblende, the latter frequently disappearing.

### 3. *Porphyry.*

*Def.* Rocks with a homogeneous, compact, or earthy base, through which are disseminated crystalline masses of some other mineral of contemporaneous origin with the base, are denominated *porphyry*. True classical porphyry, such as was most commonly employed by the ancients has a base of compact feldspar, with imbedded crystals of feldspar. When the base is greenstone, pitchstone, trachyte, or basalt, the porphyry is said to be greenstone porphyry, pitchstone porphyry, trachytic porphyry, and basalt porphyry. The base is sometimes clinkstone, or clay stone, and the imbedded crystals may be feldspar, augite, olivine, &c.

*Inf.* Hence the term porphyry designates only a certain form of rock: but does not refer to any particular kind of rock. When porphyry is spoken of in general terms however, feldspar porphyry is usually meant.

*Obs.* The name porphyry signifies *purple*; ( $\piορφυρα$ ) such having been the most usual color of the ancient porphyries: but this rock exhibits almost every variety of color. It is the hardest of all the rocks; and when polished, is probably the most enduring.

*Descrip.* *Claystone* is an earthy compact stone of a purplish color, appearing like indurated clay. *Compact Feldspar*, sometimes called *Petrosilex*, is a hard compact stone of various colors; fusible before the common blow pipe, and often translucent on the edges, like hornstone. Its predominant ingredient appears to be feldspar—*Clinkstone*, or *Phonolite*; or fissile *Petrosilex*: A greenish or greyish rock, dividing into slabs or

columns: ringing under the hammer: apparently a variety of compact feldspar. *Hornstone*, a compact mineral, often translucent like a horn: of various colors: in hardness and fracture approaching flint: insusible before the blow pipe; and hence composed chiefly of silica. *Cornean*, between hornstone and compact feldspar, compact and homogeneous; supposed to consist of feldspar, quartz, and hornblende. All these substances form the basis of porphyry; and hence we have Clinkstone Porphyry, Hornstone Porphyry, Clay stone Porphyry, &c. When black augite forms the base of Porphyry, it is called *Melaphyre*.

#### 4. *Greenstone*.

*Des.* Several unstratified rocks, whose principal ingredients are feldspar and hornblende or augite, are called *Trap Rocks*: from the Swedish word *Trappa*, a stair: because they are often arranged in the form of stairs or steps. Although the term trap is loosely applied, most writers limit it to the varieties of rock called greenstone, sienitic greenstone, basalt, compact feldspar, clinkstone, pitchstone, wacke, amygdaloid, augite rock, hypersthene rock, trap-porphyry, pitchstone porphyry, and tufa. Macculloch includes claystone and sienite. *System of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 80.

*Descrip.* Greenstone is ordinarily composed of hornblende and feldspar, both compact and common, the former in the greatest quantity.

*Descrip.* The term *Dolerite* has been used by the geologists of continental Europe, as equivalent to Greenstone. But according to Rose, dolerite consists of black augite and Labrador feldspar: to which Leonhard adds iron. *Diorite* is another name for a variety of greenstone, which Rose says is composed of albite and hornblende in grains.—But albite and hornblende are sometimes called *Andesite*—Dr. Macculloch calls those varieties of greenstone which have a green color, *Augite Rock*; because augite is the predominant ingredient, but the Augite Rock of Leonhard is almost wholly augite. When Hypersthene takes the place of hornblende, he calls the compound *Hypersthene Rock*. *System of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 108. 110. When Greenstone is composed almost entirely of hornblende, the rock is denominated *Hornblende Rock*. When the grains of feldspar and hornblende are quite coarse, it is called *Sienitic Greenstone*, which often takes quartz into its composition, and passes into granite—All the above rocks are frequently porphyritic; and hence we have augitic or pyroxenic porphyry, dioritic porphyry, &c.

#### 5. *Trachyte*.

*Descrip.* Trachyte is of a whitish or grayish color, usually porphyritic by feldspar crystals, and essentially composed of

glassy feldspar, with some hornblende, mica, titaniferous iron, and sometimes augite. *Beudant's Traité de Mineralogie, Tome 1. p. 566.* *Lyell's Elements of Geology, p. 154.* Its name is derived from the Greek, *τραχύς*, rough, from its harshness to the touch. It was an abundant product of volcanic action during the tertiary period, and usually appears to be older than basalt, although trachytic lavas have continued to be ejected down to the present day. Trachyte occurs in Auvergne and Hungary, and in vast quantities in South America; but not in the United States. It constitutes the loftiest summits of the Cordilleras. *Humboldt's Geognostical Essay on the Superposition of Rocks, p. 423.*

*Descrip.* Trachyte in an earthy condition, as it occurs in the Pays de Dome, in Auvergne, is called *Domite*. Trachyte is usually porphyritic, and hence we have *Trachytic Poryphyry*.

#### 6. Basalt.

*Descrip.* This rock appears to be composed of augite, feldspar, and titaniferous iron; and sometimes olivine in distinct grains. Its color is black, bluish, or grayish; and its texture compact and uniform—more so than greenstone. Augite is the predominant ingredient. Probably in some cases, hornblende takes the place of augite: but from the nature of these two minerals, this can be regarded as of little importance. Basalt passes insensibly into all other varieties of trap rocks. *De la Beche's Manual of Geology, p. 452.* *Lyell's Elements, p. 153.*

*Rem.* It is often asked whether basalt occurs in the United States. The lithological characters of some of our trap rocks can hardly be distinguished from those of basalt: yet it is not probable that any of our trap rocks are as recent as the basalt of Europe; and hence our geologists usually refer them to greenstone.

#### 7. Amygdaloid.

*Descrip.* This term, like porphyry, is not confined to any one sort of rock; but indicates a certain form, which extends through all the trap family. Amygdaloid abounds in rounded cavities, like the scoriae and pumice of modern Lavas, and these are often filled with calcareous spar, quartz, chalcedony, zeolites, and other minerals, which have taken the shape of the cavity: so that the rock appears as if filled with almonds, and hence the name, from the Latin *amygdala*, an almond. These cavities, however, have sometimes been lengthened by the flowing of the matter while melted so that

cylinders are found several inches long. When they are not filled, the rock is said to be vesicular.

*Descrip.* A soft variety of trap rock resembling indurated clay, is called *wacke*, which may or may not be vesicular. From its resemblance to the toad, probably, it is called in Derbyshire, *Toadstone*.

*Rem.* The slaty graywacke in the vicinity of Boston, as at Brighton and Hingham, is converted into decided amygdaloid, without losing wholly its laminated structure. The same is the case with the red sandstone lying beneath the greenstone near Connecticut river. In the latter case however the cavities are rarely filled.

### *Prismatic or Columnar Structure.*

*Descrip.* One of the most remarkable characteristics of the trap rocks, is their columnar structure. This consists in the occasional division of their substance into regular prisms, with sides varying in number from three to eight, usually five or six, whose length is sometimes not less than 200 feet. They are sometimes jointed; that is, divided crosswise into blocks, from one to several feet in length: whose extremities are more or less convex or concave, the one fitting into the other. Usually these columns stand nearly perpendicular, and when worn away on the side, they present naked walls which appear like the work of art. They stand so closely compacted together, that though perfectly separable, there is no perceptible space between them. The thickness of the columns varies from one to five feet.

*Remark 1.* The concave extremity is usually uppermost. But at Titans Pier, at the foot of Mount Holyoke, in Hadley, some of the columns are convex at the top. The following sketch, Fig. 34, shows their appearance at the Giants Causeway in Ireland.

Fig. 34.



*Remark 2.* The columnar and trappose forms of basalt and green-stone have produced some of the most remarkable scenery on the globe. Fingal's Cave in the island of Staffa, (one of the Western Islands of Scotland,) and the Giant's Causeway in the north of Ireland, are almost too well known to need description. Staffa is composed entirely of basalt with a thin soil, and its shores are for the most part a steep cliff, 70 feet high, formed of columns. The cave is a chasm 42 feet wide and 227 feet long in these columns, formed by the action of the waves. The following sketch, Fig. 35, will convey an idea of the situation of the cave and of the general structure of the island.

Fig. 35.



Fingal's Cave: Staffa.

Fig. 36. gives some idea of the appearance of an overhanging group of greenstone columns at a place on Mount Holyoke in Massachusetts, which I have denominated *Titan's Piazza*. The lower end of the columns, several rows of which project over the observer's head, are exfoliated in such a manner as to present a convex surface downwards.

Fig. 36.



Titon's Piazza: Mt. Holyoke.

*Des.* The Giant's Causeway consists of an irregular group of pentagonal columns, from one to five feet thick, and from 20 to 200 feet high, jointed as usual. Where the sea has had access to them, their upper portions are worn away, while the lower part remains extending an unknown distance beneath the waves, and seeming the ruin of some ancient work of art, too mighty for man, and therefore referred to the giants. Here also is a cave of considerable extent. *Geological Transactions. Vol. 4. New Series.*

*Rem.* 3. When a trap vein, or dyke, is columnar, the columns often lie horizontal, or rather perpendicular to the sides of the vein: and thus is produced a wall of stones, regularly fitted to one another and laid up, apparently by man: while often a decomposition of the surfaces of the blocks, produces a powder resembling disintegrated mortar. A wall of this sort was formerly discovered in Rowan County, North Carolina, which projected above the rock which it traversed, in consequence of the decay of the rock, and it was for a long time confidently believed

to be a work of human skill, proving the former existence there of a powerful and civilized people. Dykes of this description are very common in the state of Maine.

*Remark.* 4. Greenstone columns standing upright, or leaning only a few degrees, are quite common in North America; and form some of our most interesting scenery. The most extensive formation of this sort appears to be in the country west of the Rocky Mountains, where the Columbia river passes through mountains of trap, (not improbably of basalt,) from 400 to 1000 feet high; and where several successive rows of columns are superimposed upon one another, separated by a few feet of amygdaloid, conglomerate, or breccia. *Parker's Journal of an Exploring Tour beyond the Rocky Mountains.* p. 208. *Ithaca, 1834.*

The Palissadoes on the banks of Hudson river are another example of greenstone columns. They exist also, on Penobscot river; and very perfect examples occur on Mount Holyoke and Tom, on Connecticut river, an example of which has been given in Fig. 36.

*Prin.* The columnar structure of the trap rocks, has resulted from a sort of crystallization while they were cooling under pressure from a melted state.

*Proof.* 1. Precisely similar columns are found in recent lavas. (*Wonders of Geology* Vol. 1. p. 248, 250, and Vol. 2. p. 640.) 2. Mr. Gregory Watt melted 700 pounds of basalt and caused it to cool slowly; when globular masses were formed, which enlarged and pressed against one another until regular columns were the result. *Bakewell's Geology*, p. 146.

### 8. Serpentine.

*Descrip.* This rock has been already described in the section on the stratified rocks, and the reasons stated for placing it among the stratified as well as unstratified rocks.

*Descrip.* *Diallage Rock*, which is the *Euphotide* of the French, the *Gabbro* of the Italians, and some *Ophiolites* of Brongniart, is essentially composed of feldspar and diallage: but it sometimes contains serpentine, mica, and quartz. *Diallage* and *Serpentine* are very nearly allied. *Ophite* is a green porphyritic rock, with a base of hornblende and feldspar, (the former greatly predominating,) and containing crystals of hornblende. It passes into *Serpentine* by a mixture with talc. *Ophicalce* (French) is composed of limestone and serpentine, with talc and chlorite. Under this rock is arranged the beautiful *verd antique marble* such as occurs in Newbury and Middlefield in Massachusetts, and at New Haven and Milford in Connecticut. *Brongniart's Tableau des Terrains &c.* p. 325. *Cipolin* is a saccharine limestone which contains mica, or talc, as a constituent. This forms several interesting varieties, of marble. *Rozet's Traits Elementaires de Géologie*, p. 181. *Tome 1.*

**9. Lava.**

**Descrip.** Lava, as remarked in another place, embraces all the melted matter ejected from volcanos: and the two minerals feldspar and augite, constitute almost the entire mass of these products. When the former predominates, light colored lavas are the result: when the latter, the dark varieties. The former are called *feldspathic* or *trachytic*, and the latter, *augitic* or *basaltic* lavas.

**Remark.** 1. Other simple minerals occur in lava. Thus in the products of Vesuvius alone, not less than 100 species have been detected; but they form so inconsiderable a part of the whole mass, as not to deserve consideration in a general view, like the present.

**Descrip.** *Trachytic Lava* corresponds in most of its characters to the trachyte of the older igneous rocks. When cooled under pressure, solid rock results; but when cooled in the air, it is porous fibrous and light enough to swim on water, as is the case with pumice, large masses of which are found sometimes in the midst of the ocean. Sometimes it is porphyritic, like the older trachytes.

**Descrip.** In like manner the basaltic or augitic lavas exceedingly resemble the more ancient basalt; and are in fact the same thing, produced under circumstances a little different. When cooled under pressure, compact basalt is the result; but cooled in the open air, are scoriaceous or vesicular, and they are usually called *Scoriæ*.

**Descrip.** *Greystone Lava*, is a lead grey or greenish rock, intermediate in composition between basaltic and trachytic lavas: but the feldspar predominates, being more than 75 per cent. When albite takes the place of common feldspar, the lava is denominated *Andesitic*.

**Descrip.** *Vitreous Lava*, has a fracture like glass. *Obridiæ* seems to be merely melted glass. *Pitchstone* is less glassy, with an aspect more like pitch. It is usually composed of feldspar and augite and often passes into basalt. Its composition however varies.

**Descrip.** The small angular fragments and dust of pumice, (which is vesicular trachytic Lava,) and of scoriæ, (which is vesicular basaltic lava) which are produced by an eruption, falling into the sea, or on dry land, and mixing with sand, gravel, shells, &c. and hardened by the infiltration of carbonate of lime or other cement, constitute the substance denominated *Tuff*. When this rock occurs with trap, it is called *Trap Tuff*; and when with modern lava, *Volcanic Tuff*. If it contain large and angular fragments, it is called *Volcanic Breccia*. When the

fragments are much rolled, the rock is a *Tufaceous Conglomerate*. The basaltic tuffs are denominated by the Italian geologists, *Peperino*: A kind of mud is poured out of some volcanic craters, which forms what is called *Trass*.

*Descrip.* Sometimes, especially at the great volcano of *Kairauca*, on the Sandwich Islands, when lava is thrown into the air, the wind spins it out into threads, resembling flax, and drives it against the sides of the crater. This is called *Volcanic Glass*: and by the natives of the Sandwich Islands, *Pele's hair*: Pele having formerly been regarded as the presiding divinity of the volcano of Kairauca.

*Descrip.* Other substances ejected from volcanoes are fragments of granite and other rocks, scarcely altered; cinders and ashes of various degrees of fineness, which are often converted into mud by the water that accompanies them; also sulphur in a pure state; various salts and acids; and several gases; among which are the hydrochloric, sulphurous, and sulphuric acids; alum, gypsum, sulphate of iron and magnesia, chloride of sodium and potassium, of iron, copper, and cobalt, chlorine, nitrogen, sulphuretted hydrogen, &c. &c.

*Descrip.* The unstratified rocks as a general fact, are more fusible than the stratified; and of the unstratified the fusibility increases in passing from granite along the scale to modern lava. This is owing to the fact that the quantity of lime, and sometimes of alkali, is greater in the more recent rocks; for these substances act as a flux.

#### *Relative Age of the Rocks.*

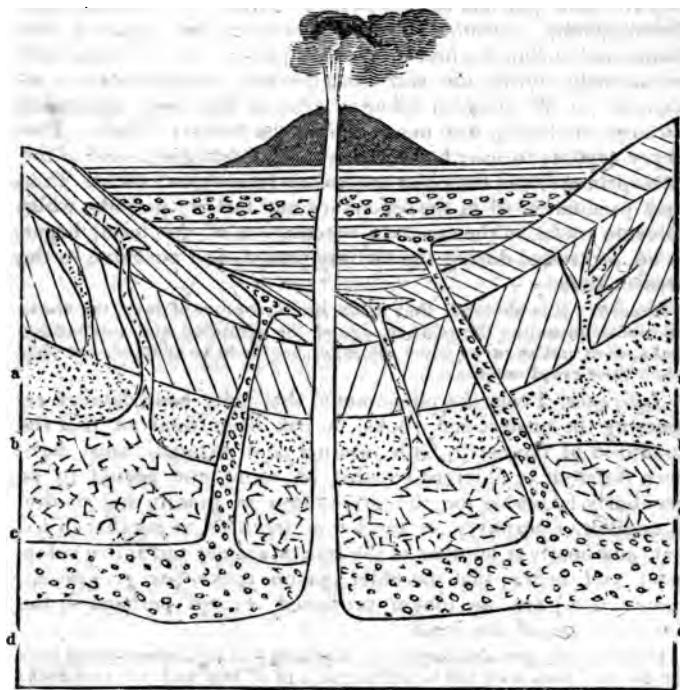
*Prin.* In the stratified rocks the relative age of the different groups is determined by their superposition; the lowest being the oldest: but in the unstratified rocks, there is reason to believe a reverse order exists: that is, the oldest member of the series lies immediately beneath the stratified rocks; the next oldest beneath this; and so on, till we reach the lava of existing volcanos; which probably comes from a greater depth in the earth than any other unstratified rocks.

*Illustration.* Fig. 37. will more clearly illustrate this proposition.

*Prin.* The ages of the unstratified compared with those of the stratified rocks, are determined by ascertaining how far the former have intruded upward among the latter.

*Illustration.* If for instance, we never find the veins of a particular

Fig. 37.



Section of the Relative Age of the Unstratified Rocks.

igneous rock shooting upward higher than the primary rocks, we may infer that it is older than the secondary strata, but newer than the primary: because the latter must have existed prior to the intrusion of the unstratified rock. And so, if an igneous rock is intruded only into the primary and secondary strata, we may infer that it is older than the tertiary strata, and newer than the secondary: and so on with the groups still higher. Hence the igneous rocks a, a, Fig. 37. formed during the deposition of the primary strata, whose veins extend no higher than those strata, may be called, (to adopt the phraseology of Mr. Lyell) the *Primary Plutonic*: those during the deposition of the secondary strata, b, b, whose veins do not enter the tertiary series, the *Secondary Plutonic*: those during the deposition of the tertiary strata, c, c, the *Tertiary Plutonic*: and lava from active volcanoes d, d, the *Recent Plutonic*.

*Des.* In reality, however, we do not find varieties of unstratified rocks whose veins are thus distinctly confined to each of the

great classes of rocks, though there is evidence that volcanic agency was active during all the periods of their deposition. But the same igneous rock appears to have been ejected at different epochs. Granite, however, seems to have greatly predominated during the first or primary period; and is found only occasionally during the secondary period; though in a few instances (at Weinböhla) sienitic granite has been protruded through the chalk, but never among the tertiary strata. Porphyry appears to have been mostly confined to the period of the latest primary, and the older secondary (transition) rocks. Trap rock predominated in the secondary and tertiary periods, while volcanic rocks, in the common acceptation of the term, began to be protruded during the tertiary period, and continue to the present time.

*Remark.* It is obvious, that with the exception of lava, the above rule for determining the relative age of the stratified and unstratified rocks, does not show us when the latter began to be erupted, but only when their eruptions ceased.

*Inference.* From the phenomena that have been detailed respecting the unstratified rocks, it has been inferred that the condition of the earth, both internal and external, must have been different at different epochs; so as at one period to be peculiarly favorable for the production of granite and sienite, at another of porphyry, at another of trachyte, at another of basalt, and finally at another of the lava of extinct and active volcanos; and hence, that the older igneous rocks, (ex. gr. granite, sienite, &c.) are no longer produced, except perhaps in the deep recesses of the earth.

*Proof.* 1. The greater abundance of granite and sienite associated with the primary than with the newer strata, and of trap and volcanic rocks with the higher formations. 2. The almost entire identity between the chemical constitution of granite and the primary stratified deposits indicates some general and common cause for the origin of both: while the difference of ultimate constitution between granite and the newer stratified rocks, particularly in the greater quantity of lime in the latter, indicates a difference of origin. 3. The gradual and insensible passage, on an extensive scale, of granite into gneiss, hornblende, slate and mica slate, indicates some general cause for their production, and that the diversity existing between them, has resulted from slightly modifying circumstances: while no such transition of any consequence between granite and the newer stratified rocks has ever been discovered. 4. Granite and the trap rocks differ so much in chemical constitution, as to show that they must have originated from different masses of matter. Thus, granite contains about 20 per cent. more of silica than greenstone; about 3 per cent. less of alumina; 8 per cent. less of magnesia; 7 per cent. less of lime; and two per cent less of oxide of iron. 5. The correspondence between the chemical composition of the fossiliferous stratified and the trappian and volcanic rocks: that is, we

find in both classes a diminution of silica and an increase of alumina, magnesia, and lime. 6. In consequence of containing much more of silicate of lime, the trap rocks are more fusible than the granitic: so if we admit that the internal temperature of the earth has diminished, we might expect that the former would remain in a melted state after the latter had all been consolidated. *De la Beche's Theoretical Geology*. p. 305.

*Opposite Hypothesis.* "Granitic and trap rocks pass into each other, and are merely different forms which the same elements have assumed according to the different circumstances under which they have consolidated from a state of fusion."—

"The great pressure of a superincumbent mass, and exclusion from contact with the atmosphere, and perhaps with the ocean, are some of the conditions which may be necessary to produce the granitic texture." "They (Plutonic rocks) may have been produced in nearly *equal* quantities, during *equal periods* of time, from the earliest to the most modern epochs, instead of diminishing in quantity at each successive epoch, as some geologists pretend." *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, vol. 2. p. 481—482—483.

#### *Geological Maps and Sections.*

*Descrip.* Common or physical maps form the basis of geological ones: and when the former are inaccurate the latter must be so too. The chief difference between them is that on a geological map the different rocks found in the region delineated are shown either by dots, crosses, circles, &c. or more usually by colors. The only exception is, that when the nature of the subjacent rock can be determined, diluvium is usually omitted.

*Descrip.* Some geological maps designate only the classes of rocks: but these are very imperfect, and the best maps show the extent of each rock.

*Descrip.* The dip of the strata (which of course determines the strike,) is sometimes shown upon a geological map. This is usually done by an arrow, which points in the direction of the inclination. If the strata are perpendicular, it may be represented by the lines crossing at right angles; one of which is shorter than the other. If the two lines are equal, so as to form a cross they indicate horizontal strata. An anticlinal axis is shown by a straight line crossed by an arrow with two heads. Where the strata undulate a good deal, the body of the arrow may be crooked. *De la Beche's Manual of Geology*, p. 602.

*Rem.* The best geological maps hitherto published in Europe, are Greenough's Map of England and Wales; Elie de Beaumont's and Dufrenoy's France; Hoffman's North Western Germany; and Oeynhausen, La Roche, and Von Dechen's Rhine. In this country MacLure's Geological Map of the United States, although it exhibits only the great classes of rocks, yet considering the early period at which it was executed, must be regarded as very valuable and a work of im-

mense labor. The geological surveys now going on in most of the States, have already produced maps of Massachusetts, Rhode Island, New Jersey, and Tennessee; and others are in a state of great forwardness.

*Descrip.* A Geological Section represents a vertical cut in the earth's crust, so as to exhibit to the eye the rocks in their natural and relative situation. The most valuable sections of this sort are those copied from cliffs, on the sea coast, or the banks of rivers. But usually it is necessary to construct them from what we can learn of the rocks and their dip at the surface; presuming that they continue the same to the depth of the section. Such sections, therefore, are somewhat ideal: but if carefully constructed, we may be sure that we are not far from the truth.

*Descrip.* It is usually necessary to employ two scales in constructing sections: one for heights, and the other for horizontal distances: otherwise the sections must be of great extent, or the heights would be scarcely perceptible. On the other hand, two scales produce distortion: So that great caution is necessary, not only in the construction of Sections, but in drawing inferences from them.

## SECTION V.

### PALEONTOLOGY, OR THE SCIENCE OF ORGANIC REMAINS.

*Def.* In all the stratified rocks above the primary, more or less of the relics or traces of animals and plants occur, sometimes called petrifications, but more commonly, *Organic Remains*.

*Def.* That branch of Geology which gives the history of these remains, was formerly denominated *Oryctology*: but is now called *Palaeontology*.

#### 1. General Characters of Organic Remains.

*Descrip.* In a few instances, animals have been preserved entire in the more recent rocks.

*Example.* About the beginning of the present century the entire carcass of an elephant was found encased in frozen mud and sand in Siberia. It was covered with hair and fur, as some elephants now are in the Himalayah mountains. The diluvium along the shores of the Northern Ocean, abounds with bones of the same kind of animals: but

the flesh is rarely preserved. *Cuvier's Essay on the Theory of the Earth*, p. 253, *New York*, 1818. *De la Beche's Manual of Geology*, p. 200. In 1771 the entire carcass of a rhinoceros was dug out of the frozen gravel of the same country. *Bakewell's Geology*, p. 331.

**Descrip.** Frequently the harder parts of the animal are preserved in the soil or solid rock scarcely altered.

**Remark.** Many well authenticated instances are on record, in which toads, snakes, and lizards, have been found alive in the solid parts of living trees, and in solid rocks, as well as in gravel, deep beneath the surface. But in these instances the animals undoubtedly crept into such places while young, and after being grown, could not, get out. Being very tenacious of life, and probably obtaining some nourishment occasionally by seizing upon insects that might crawl into their *nidus*, they might sometimes continue alive even many years. But such examples cannot come under the denomination of organic remains. See an interesting paper on this subject by Dr. Buckland, in the *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 23. p. 272.

**Descrip.** Sometimes the harder parts of the animal are partially impregnated with mineral matter; yet the animal matter is still obvious to inspection.

**Descrip.** More frequently, especially in the older secondary rocks, the animal or vegetable matter appears to be almost entirely replaced by mineral matter, so as to form a genuine *petrifaction*.

**Remark.** Probably in every case, however, a chemical process would show the presence of considerable organic matter. *Parkinson's Organic Remains of a Former World*, Vol. 2. p. 284.

**Descrip.** Sometimes after the rock had become hardened, the animal or plant decayed and escaped through the pores of the stone, so as to leave nothing but a perfect *mould*.

**Descrip.** After this mould had been formed, foreign matter has been infiltrated into it through the pores of the rock, so as to form a *cast* of the animal or plant when the rock is broken open. Or the cast might have been formed before the decay of the animal or plant.

**Descrip.** Frequently the animal or plant, especially the latter, is so flattened down that a mere film of mineral matter alone remains to mark out its form.

**Descrip.** All that remains of an animal sometimes is its track impressed upon the rock.

**Descrip.** The mineralizer is most frequently carbonate of lime: frequently silica, or clay, or oxide, or sulphuret of iron, and sometimes the ores of copper, lead, &c.

## 2. *Nature and Process of Petrification.*

**Def.** Petrification consists in the substitution, more or less

complete, by chemical means, of mineral for animal or vegetable matter. *De la Beche's Theoretical Geology, Chapter 13.*

*Descrip.* The process of petrifaction goes on at the present day to some extent, whenever an animal or vegetable substance is buried for a long time in a deposit containing a soluble mineral substance that may become a mineralizer.

*Example.* 1. Clay containing sulphate of iron, will, in a few years, or even months, produce a very perceptible change towards petrifaction in a bone buried in it. *Bakewell's Geology, p. 19.* Some springs also, hold iron in solution; and vegetable matters are in the process of time thoroughly changed into oxide of iron. This is seen often where bog iron ore is yearly depositing.

*Ex.* 2. M. Goppert placed fern leaves carefully in clay, and exposed the clay for some time to a red heat, when the leaves were made to resemble petrified plants found in the rocks. *Wonders of Geology, Vol. 2. p. 561.*

*Hypothetical Example.* 3. M. Patrin and Brongniart suggest that the petrifying process may sometimes be effected "suddenly by the combination of gaseous fluids with the principles of Organic Structures." *Wonders of Geology, Vol. 2. p. 559.* Some facts render this probable. For stems of a soft and succulent nature are preserved in flint; and the young leaves of a palm tree in a state just about to shoot forth, have been found completely silicified. *Lyell's Elements of Geology, p. 89.*

### 3. Means of determining the Nature of Organic Remains.

*Prin.* The first requisite for determining the character of organic remains, is an accurate and extensive knowledge of zoology and botany. This will enable the observer to ascertain whether the species found in the rocks are identical with those now living on the globe.

*Prin.* The second important requisite is a knowledge of Comparative Anatomy: a science which compares the anatomy of different animals and the parts of the same animals.

*Remark.* 1. This recent science reveals to us the astonishing fact, that no mathematically exact is the proportion between the different parts of an animal, "that from the character of a single limb, and even of a single tooth, or bone, the form and proportion of the other bones, and the condition of the entire animal may be inferred"—"Hence, not only the frame work of the fossil skeleton of an extinct animal, but also the character of the muscles, by which each bone was moved, the external form and figure of the body, the food, and habits and haunts, and mode of life of creatures that ceased to exist before the creation of the human race, can with a high degree of probability be ascertained." *Hockland's Bridgewater Treatise, Vol. 1. p. 109.* See also *Cuvier's Osseous Fossiles, Tome 1. p. 47. Troisième Edition.*

*Remark.* 2. It is clear from the preceding statement, that no individual can hope to possess in himself all the requisites for successfully determining organic remains. For the field is too large for any one to hope to become familiar with all its parts. Hence, at this day, it is customary for the geologist to resort for aid to the botanist, the zoologist, the comparative anatomist.

4. *Classification of Organic Remains.*

*Prin.* Organic remains may be divided, according to their origin, into three classes: 1. Marine. 2. Freshwater. 3. Terrestrial.

*Remark.* 1. The last class appear in most instances where they occur to have been swept down by streams from their original situation into estuaries; where they were mixed with organic relics. Sometimes, perhaps, they were quietly submerged by the subsidence of the land.

*Remark.* 2. The following table will show the origin of the remains in the different groups of fossiliferous rocks.

Cambrian and Silurian Systems (Graywacke)	Marine. Rarely Terrestrial.
Old Red Sandstone.	Marine. Do.
Carboniferous Limestone.	Terrestrial.
Coal Measures.	Estuary Deposites and submerged land. Rarely perhaps fresh water deposits.
New Red Sandstone Group.	Marine.
Oolitic Group. but in a few instances	Mostly Marine. Terrestrial.
Wealden Rocks.	Estuary Deposites.
Cretaceous Group.	Marine.
Tertiary Strata.	Marine and Fresh Water.
Diluvium.	Terrestrial.

*Inference.* It appears from the preceding statements that by far the greatest part of organic remains are of Marine origin. Nearly all the terrestrial relics, indeed, and many of fresh water origin, have been deposited beneath the waters of the ocean.

5. *Amount of Organic Remains in the Earth's Crust.*

*Descrip.* The thickness of the fossiliferous strata in Great Britain, as has always already been given in former Sections, so far as ascertained, is as follows.

Tertiary Strata	1350 feet.
Chalk	600 Do.
Green Sand.	480 Do.
Wealden Group	900 Do.
Oolite—mean thickness	1230 Do.
Lias	1050 Do.
New Red Sandstone	900 Do.
Magnesian Limestone	300 Do.
Coal Measures	3000 Do.
Millstone Grit.	900 Do.
Carboniferous Limestone	1800 Do.
Old Red Sandstone	5100 Do.

Milurian Rocks	7470 Do.
Cambrian Rocks at least	9000 Do.
Total	34080 feet or

about 6 1/2 miles. *J Phillips' Geology* p. 34 and 80.

*Remark.* We have already seen that Prof. Rogers makes the fossiliferous rocks in this country below the coal measures inclusive, 40,000 feet.

*Descrip.* Organic remains occur more or less in all the fossiliferous strata whose thickness has been given. As a matter of fact, they have been dug out several thousands of feet below the surface.

*Descrip.* In the Alps, rocks abound in organic remains from (0000) to (0000) feet above the level of the sea: In the Pyrenees, nearly as high; and in the Andes, at the height of 14000 feet.

*Descrip.* Frequently beds or layers of rock, many feet in thickness, appear to be made up almost entirely of the remains of animals or plants: Indeed, whole mountains, hundreds and even thousands of feet high, are essentially composed of organic matter.

*Descrip.* Prodigious accumulations of the relics of microscopical animals are frequently found in the rocks.

*Example.* 1. From less than 1 1/2 ounces of stone, in Tuscany, Solanum whinred 10,454 chambered shells, like the *Nautilus* :—400 or 500 of these weighed only a single grain; and of one species it took 1000 to make that weight. These were marine shells. *Buckland's Bridgewater* Vol. I. p. 117.

As, &c., in fresh water accumulations a microscopic crustaceous animal called the *Cypris*, often occurs in immense quantities; as in the Hastings Sand and Purbeck Limestone in England, where strata 1000 feet thick are filled with them: and in Auvergne; where a deposit 700 feet thick, over an area 20 miles wide and 80 in length, is divided into layers as thin as paper by the exuviae of the *Cypris*. *Same Work* p. 118.

As, &c. But perhaps the most remarkable example is that derived from the recent discoveries of the Prussian naturalist Ehrenberg, respecting the fossil remains of animalculæ. In one place in Germany is a bed 14 feet thick, made up of the shields of animalculæ so small that it requires 41,000,000,000 of them to form a cubic inch: and in another place, a similar bed is 28 feet thick. In Andover Massachusetts, is a bed composed of the siliceous shields of infusoria (of a somewhat larger size than those mentioned above,) 15 feet in thickness; and similar beds occur all over New England and New York. But more of this farther on.

*Descrip.* It is a moderate estimate to say, that two thirds of the surface of our existing continents are composed of fossiliferous rocks; and these as already stated, often several thousand feet thick.

*Remark.* 1. This estimate might, without exaggeration, be confined to strata that contain marine exuviae:—that is, such as were deposited beneath the ocean.

*Rem.* 2. After all, the preceding statements convey but a very imperfect idea of the amount of organic relics in the rocks. To obtain a just conception of their vast amount, a person must visit at least a few localities.

### 6. Distribution of Organic Remains.

*Descrip.* Existing animals and plants are arranged into distinct groups, each group occupying a certain district of land or water; and few of the species ever wander into other districts. These districts are called Zoological and Botanical Provinces: and very few of the species of animals and plants which they contain, can long survive a removal out of the province where they were originally placed; because their natures cannot long endure the difference of climate, food, and other changes to which they must be subject.

*Rem.* 1. Although naturalists are agreed in maintaining the existence of such provinces, yet they have not yet settled their exact number; because yet ignorant of the plants and animals in many parts of the earth. Dr. Prichard proposes seven for the animals. *Physical History of Mankind Vol. 1. pp. 68—97, third edition.* Mr. Swainson estimates them at five. Dr. John Pye Smith's *Congregational Lecture on Scripture and Geology*, p. 73. Bory St. Vincent makes five for the mammalia alone *Dictionnaire Classique D' Historie Naturelle, Tome Septieme* p. 300. Some have reckoned as many as eleven: but what makes it very difficult to determine the point, is, that the boundaries of these provinces for different classes of animals does not always coincide. Messieur de Decandolle, father and son, reckon the Botanical Provinces at twenty seven. But Prof. Henslow estimates them approximately at forty five. Dr. Smith's *Scripture Geology* p. 73. On this difficult subject, see the *French Dictionary of Natural History above referred to*, Article *Geographie*: Also *Fleming's Philosophy of Zoology Vol. 2.* Also *Lyell's Principles of Geology Vol. 2.* Also *Prichard's Physical History of man Vol. 1. &c. &c.*

*Descrip.* Sometimes mountains and sometimes oceans separate these districts on the land. In the ocean they are sometimes divided by currents or shoals: But both on land and in the water, difference of climate forms the most effectual barrier to the migration of species: since it is but a few species that have the power of enduring any great change in this respect.

*Descrip.* In some instances, organic remains are broken and ground by attrition into small fragments, like those which are now accumulating upon some beaches by the action of the waves: But often the most delicate of the harder parts of the animal or plant are preserved; and they are found to be grouped together in the strata very much as living species now are on the earth.

*Illustration.* In a fossiliferous formation of any considerable thickness, we usually find somewhat such an arrangement as the following. The whole is divided into many distinct beds of different thickness. At the bottom, perhaps, we shall find a layer of argillaceous or siliceous rock, with few or no remains: then will succeed a layer, perhaps ~~calcareous~~

reous, full of them in a perfect state: next a layer of sand, or clay, or limestone, containing none: next a layer made up of the fragments of rocks, animals, and plants, more or less comminuted: next a layer of fine clay: then a layer abounding in remains: And thus shall we find a succession of changes to the top of the series.

*Inference.* From these facts it is inferred, that for the most part, the imbedded animals and plants lived and died on or near the spot where they are found; while it was only now and then, that there was current enough to drift them any considerable distance, or break them into fragments. As they died, they sunk to the bottom of the waters and became enveloped in mud, and then the processes of consolidation and petrification went slowly on, until completed.

*Remark 1.* So very quietly did the deposition of the fossiliferous rocks proceed in some instances, that the skeletons and indusiae of microscopic animals, as we have seen, which the very slightest disturbance must have crushed, are preserved uninjured; and frequently all the shells found in a layer of rock, lie in the same position which similar shells now assume upon the bottom of ponds, lakes and the ocean: that is with a particular part of the shell uppermost.

*Remark 2.* Were the bottom of our existing oceans and lakes, where mud sand and gravel have been accumulating for ages, and enveloping the animals and plants that have died there, or been drifted thither, were this to be now elevated above the waters, we should find exactly such an arrangement of organic remains, as we find in a particular formation of the solid rocks. While there would be a resemblance between the relics in different seas and lakes, there would be great specific diversity; just as we find in different groups of rocks in different countries: and hence the conclusion seems fair, that these rocks with their contents had an origin similar to the deposits now forming at the bottom of existing bodies of water.

*Remark. 3.* In the existing waters we find that different animals select for their habitat different kinds of bottom: thus, oysters prefer a muddy bank; cockles a sandy shore; and lobsters prefer rocks: So it is among the fossil remains: an additional evidence of the manner in which they have been brought into a petrified state. *Philips' Geology*, p. 53.

*Prin.* There is reason to believe that the temperature of the globe in early times was much higher than at present; and of course more uniform over its surface: and hence the range of particular species of animals and plants might then have been more extensive than at present; and the number of botanical and zoological provinces less numerous; and this inference is sustained by the facts of fossil geology.

*Descrip.* In a particular district we find but little change in the character of organic remains, as we ascend or descend in the series of rocks, until there occurs a change in the nature or mode of deposition of the rock. Then we find new species introduced, and more or less of the old ones disappear.

ing. Sometimes the change of species is gradual and sometimes sudden, corresponding to the change in the rock.

*Prin.* In comparing organic remains from different formations, it should be recollected that they may belong to the same class or order, or genus, and yet be widely different from one another: and that it is only when they are of the same *species*, that they are identical.

*Descrip.* If we compare together the remains of the Cretaceous formation, the red sand stone formation, the carboniferous system, and the Silurian formation, in different parts of England, we shall find that those most remote from one another in locality, differ most widely: but almost without an exception, those in each formation are specifically distinct from all those in the other formations. *Phillips' Geology*, p. 51.

*Descrip.* If we compare the fossils of the Tertiary and Secondary Classes of rocks, we shall find that they have no species common, so far as has yet been ascertained, either of animal or plant. *Lyell's Geology*, Vol. 3. p. 327. *First Ed.*

*Descrip.* If we examine a formation through its whole extent, we shall rarely find that any species of organic remains is universally diffused, unless the extent of the formation be quite limited. If we compare the same formation in different countries, the specific resemblance between the organic contents will diminish nearly in the inverse ratio of the distance between them. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology from Ency. Brittan.* p. 52.

*Examples.* In Egypt the cretaceous rocks contain different fossils from the chalk of England: and the same is true of the chalky rocks on the southern faces of the Alps. More than a hundred species of organic relics have been described in the rocks of the United States, which are supposed to correspond with the chalk formation in Europe: yet only two or three species are identical. *Morton's Synopsis of the Organic Remains of the Cretaceous Group of the United States*, p. 83. Philadelphia. 1834. *Phillips' Geology*, p. 156.

*Remark 2.* In a few instances particular species have a very wide diffusion in contemporaneous rocks. The *Belemnites mucronatus* is found in nearly every chalk deposit in Europe. The trilobite, *Calyptene Blumenbachii*, and the coral, *Catenipora*, are found at most localities of Silurian limestone in Europe and North America.

*Prin.* Families and genera that were contemporaries, appear to have had a very wide geographical diffusion, as they have among existing animals and plants: but for the most part, species occupied but a narrow geographical area. *Philip's Treatise on Geology*, p. 53.

*Example.* Specifically unlike as are the organic contents of the cretaceous formations in Europe, and North America, yet the same genera (ex. gr. *Exogyra*, *Gryphaea*, *Baculites*, *Belemnites*, *Scaphites*, and *Ammonites*,) abound, and even between the species there is a close analogy.

*Prin.* Judging from the distribution of living animals and plants, contemporaneous formations in widely separated portions of the globe may contain organic remains very much alike, or very much unlike.

*Illustration.* Comparing the marine animals on the coast of the United States with those on the shores of Europe, we find at least 24 species of shells common to both, and no reason can be assigned why as close a resemblance might not have existed at earlier periods. *Morton's Synopsis*, p. 83. On the other hand, how unlike are the animals and plants of New Holland and its coasts, to those of Europe or the United States.

*Prin.* Rocks agreeing in their fossil contents, may not have been contemporaneous in their deposition.

*Proof.* The causes that have produced changes of organic life may have operated sooner upon some parts of the globe than upon others. so that particular animals and plants may have continued to be deposited in some spots longer than in others.

*Remark.* Probably, however, such a diversity in different parts of the globe could not have continued very long, so that rocks with the same organic remains may be regarded as not differing greatly in age: and besides, as already stated, there is reason to suppose that in earlier times there was greater uniformity of climate and condition on the globe than at present.

*Inf.* From all that has been advanced, it appears that an identity of organic remains is not alone sufficient to prove a complete chronological identity of rocks widely separated from each other: but it will show an approximate identity as to the period of their deposition; and in regard to rocks in a limited district, it will show complete identity.

*Proof.* Identity of organic remains proves only the existence of similar conditions as to climate, food, &c., but in remote regions of the globe these conditions may have existed at different periods, though not probably separated by long intervals; and therefore, the identity is approximate: that is, deposits containing the same organic remains were produced at eras not widely remote from each other. But in respect to limited regions of a continent, much difference of climate could not have existed at the same time; and therefore, an identity of organic remains proves the synchronism of the deposits containing them.

*Prin.* If the mineral character of two rocks agree, as well as their organic contents, their synchronism will be shown to be more probable. But on the other hand, a want of agreement in the mineral characters, ought not to be regarded as proof that they were not contemporaneous.

*Proof.* The mineral composition of rocks, forming in regions very remote, must have been subject to as great diversity as their organic contents. But if their mineral composition is the same, it increases the probability of their synchronal deposition.

*Prin.* Still stronger evidence of synchronism is obtained when rocks agree in their superposition, as well as in the

characters above named. This character, indeed, when it can be applied is very conclusive: but in remote regions it is applied with great difficulty.

*Rem.* The identification of strata in widely separated regions is one of the most difficult problems in geology; and one where there is great room for the play of fancy. Probably American geologists have exhibited too much anxiety to identify the strata of this country with those of Europe. *De la Beche's Theoretical Geology. Chapters 11. 12. 13. Lyell's Elements of Geology Chapter 13.*

#### *Tabular View of Organic Remains.*

*Table.* The following Tabular view of the Organic Remains in the different formations, will show how the different families of animals and plants are distributed in the rocks. It is derived from the latest authorities, within my reach. But it will be seen by the references beneath the Table, that these authorities differ widely in their dates; so that some of the numbers are far more in accordance with the present state of the science than others. Nevertheless, some important inferences may be deduced from such a table: and therefore I give it though confessedly imperfect. I have added the numbers of living species that have been described, so far as I have been able to obtain any estimates that approximated near enough to the truth to form a basis of reasoning. Of course, all the numbers of this Table must be regarded as falling far below the actual numbers, both of living and extinct species.

Radiata or Zoophyta.										Living Species.	
Insects.										Diluvium, Caverns and Bone Breccia.	
50,000	10,000	1000	6000		e 8000	c 8000			120,000	2500	
						Sev- eral.					
b 145	b 21	a 99	a 20		h 18	o 4000	d 16	o 25	o 9	244	d 50
b 38	b 49					a 500	d 30	d 7	d 1		d 235
a 37	a 43					a 771	d 59	a 22	i 2	25	a 273
b 10	b 13					a 118	d 2	d 1			d 16
b 16	d 310.					d 214	d 1	d 2	i 1	3	d 48
d 2	d 226					a 349	d 5	60			d 132
						325					
Flowering Plants.										Silurian and Cambrian Rocks	

a. Professor John Phillip's Treatise on Geology, 1837.

b. Adolphe Brongniart in 1829.

c. Lyell's Elements and Principles of Geology, 1838.

d. De la Beche's Manual of Geology, Third Edition, 1833.

e. Agassiz.

h. A. Brongniart. Tableau des Terrains, 1820.

i. Bucklands' Bridgewater Treatise, 1836.

m. Mantell's Wonders of Geology, 1838.

n. Mining Review, Dec. 1838.

o. Prof. Bronn's Lethaea Geognostica, Stuttgart, 1838.

*Inference 1.* From the preceding table we learn that all the important classes of animals and plants are represented in the different formations.

*Inf. 2.* Hence we learn that the hypothesis of Lamark is without foundation, which supposes there has been a transmutation of species from less to more perfect, since the beginning of organic life on the globe: that man, for instance, began his race as a *monad*, (a particle of matter endowed with vitality,) and was converted into several animals successively; the ourang outang being his last condition—before he became man. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 481. where this subject is treated ably and fully. "The Sauroid fishes," says Dr. Buckland, (*Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 294): "occupy a higher place in the scale of organization than the ordinary forms of bony fishes; yet we find examples of Sauroids of the greatest magnitude and in abundant numbers, in the carboniferous and secondary formations, whilst they almost disappear and are replaced by less perfect forms in the Tertiary Strata, and present only two genera among existing fishes.—In this, as in many other cases, a kind of *retrograde* development, from complex to simple forms may be said to have taken place."

*Inference 3.* We learn, however, that in the earlier periods of the world, the less complex and perfect tribes of animals and plants greatly predominated, and that the more perfect species became more and more numerous up to the creation of the present races.

*Inf. 4.* Vegetable life must have commenced on the globe nearly as early as animal life.

*Proof.* Vegetable remains have not indeed been found among the 20 or 30 species of organic relics discovered in the Cambrian Group of rocks: But they occur in the Silurian Group: and it would be premature to infer their non-existence in the Cambrian group, until further researches are made among fossiliferous clay slates: especially since the presumption is strong, that marine vegetables must have existed contemporaneously with marine animals, in order to furnish the latter with food. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 451. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology*, Vol. I. p. 128.

*Inf. 5.* Dry land, capable of sustaining vegetation, must have existed soon after the deposition of the fossiliferous rocks commenced.

*Proof 1.* Terrestrial Vegetable remains occur in rocks of the gray-wacke period. 2. The detrital character of the rocks of that group makes the existence of dry land during its deposition almost certain; since rocks entirely beneath the waters are but slightly worn away by oceanic currents.

*Descrip.* The family of Coniferous Plants is found in the earliest rocks, and at each successive change in the physical

condition of the globe, the numbers of its genera and species increased, until it forms among existing plants about one three hundredth part of the whole flora, or nearly 200 species. Palms also occur, though sparingly, in all the formations.

*Descrip.* The 300 species of fossil plants found in and beneath the carboniferous strata, are two thirds tree ferns and gigantic Equisetaceæ. Ten Coniferæ, and plants intermediate between these and Lycopodiaceæ, viz. Lepidodendriæ, Sigillariæ, and Stigmariaæ, together with 10 Monocotyledonous plants, form the remainder. *Mantell's Wonders of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 568.

*Descrip.* Of the 100 species found between the carboniferous strata and the tertiary groups, one third are ferns; and most of the remainder are Cycadeæ, Coniferæ, and Liliaceæ. More of the first named family have already been found fossil, than exist at present on the globe. They form more than one third of the entire fossil flora of the secondary formations; but less than the 2000th part of the existing flora.

*Descrip.* The plants of the tertiary strata approximate closely to the existing flora.

*Descrip.* Below the New Red Sandstone vascular cryptogamæ or flowerless plants, greatly predominate, while dicotyledonous plants are rare. In the secondary strata above the coal, there is an approach to equality between these two classes: In the tertiary strata the latter predominate; and in the existing flora, two thirds are of this class. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 520.

7. *Periods in which different plants and animals began to appear on the Globe, and in which some of them became extinct.*

*Prin.* In general plants and animals began to exist first on the globe during the period when the lowest rock in which their remains are found was deposited.

*Proof.* 1. Those animals and plants are excepted that are too frail to be preserved in the rocks: But in respect to all others, no reason can be assigned why their remains should not be found along with those of other organic beings existing at the same period. Particular species, from being less numerous, or being less likely to get enveloped in deposits formed by water, (as birds for instance,) may be rarely found in the rocks: and therefore, we should not be hasty to infer that a species did not exist, because we have not discovered its remains. But if a formation has been pretty extensively examined, the presumption is strong that few new species will be found in it.

2. Comparative anatomy here comes in to our aid. For it is found that certain types of organic existence characterize particular geological periods: and having ascertained the type for any particular period, we may infer with great certainty that an animal or plant of a very different type will not be found among the organic remains of that formation. Thus, we find in general the fossils of the Carboniferous Group to have been adapted to a climate of a tropical character: and to expect to find in that group animals or plants adapted to a temperate climate, would be unreasonable; because the two tribes could not have existed in the same climate.

*Descrip.* The following is the order in which some of the most important animals and plants have first appeared on the globe: in other words, the epoch of their creation. It may indeed, be hereafter found, when the rocks have been more extensively examined, that some appeared earlier.

Silurian and Cambrian or Gray-wacke Period.

Zoophytes.  
Marine Shells.  
Crustacea (Trilobites.)  
Placoidians and Ganoidians.  
Fishes—(Sauroids and Sharks) with heterocercal tails.  
Flowerless Plants. { Marine.  
Flowering Plants. { Terrestrial.

Carboniferous Period.

Fish: (Cephalaspis &c.)  
Archnidans: Scorpions.  
Coleopterous Insects.  
Fresh Water Shells.  
Dicotyledonous Plants—Coniferæ; (Pines, &c.) Cycadeæ.  
Monocotyledonous Plants, Palmeæ, Scitamineæ.

Red Sandstone Period.

Tracks of Birds, Tortoises, and Chirotheria allied to Marsupialia.  
Reptiles: Monitor, Phytosaurus, Ichthysaurus, Pleiosaurus, Mastodonsaurus, Thecodontosaurus, Palaeosaurus.  
Crustacea: Palinurus.  
Fishes: Palæoniscus, &c.  
Dicotyledonous Plants, (Voltzia.)

Oolitic Period.	<i>Mammalia</i> : Thylacotherium.
	<i>Cetacea</i> : Phascolotherium, (Didelphys of Buckland.)
	<i>Reptiles</i> : Saurocephalus, Saurodon, Teleosaurus, Streptospondylus, Megalosaurus, Lacerta neptunia, Elodon, Rhacheosaurus, Pleurosaurus, Geosaurus, Macrospordylus, Pterodactylus, Crocodile, Gavial, Tortoise.
	<i>Fishes</i> : Pycnodontes and Lepidoides. (Dapedium, &c.) with homocercous tails.
	<i>Arachnidans</i> : Spiders.
Wealden Period.	<i>Insects</i> : Libellulæ, Coleoptera.
	<i>Crustacea</i> : Pagurus, Eryon, Syclarus, Palæmon, Astacus.
	<i>Plants</i> : Cycadæ, (Pterophyllum, Zamia,) Conifers (Thuyæ, Taxites) Lilia, (Bucklandia.)
	<i>Birds</i> : Grallæ, (Tilgate Forest.)
	<i>Reptiles</i> : Iguanodon, Leptorynchus, Trionyx, Emys, Chelonia.
Cretaceous Period	<i>Fishes</i> : Lepidotus, Pycnodus, &c. Fresh water and Estuary shells.
	<i>Reptiles</i> : Mososaurus, &c.
	<i>Fishes</i> : Ctenoidians and Cycloidians.
	<i>Crustacea</i> : Arcania, Etyæa, Coryster.
	<i>Plants</i> : Confervæ, Naiades.
Tertiary Period.	<i>Mammalia</i> , 1. <i>Eocene Period</i> , 50 species :—Palæotherium, Anoplotherium, Lophiodon, Anthracotherium, Cheroptamus (allied to the hog) Adapis (resembling the hedgehog) <i>Carnivora</i> : Bat, Canis (Wolf and Fox) Coatis, Racoons, Genette, Dormouse, Squirrel. <i>Reptiles</i> : Serpents.
	<i>Birds</i> : Buzzard, Owl, Quail, Woodcock, Sea Lark, Curlew, Pelican. <i>Reptiles</i> : Fresh water Tortoises. <i>Fishes</i> : seven extinct species of extinct genera.
	2. <i>Miocene Period</i> : Ape, Dinothereum, Tapir, Chalicotherium, Rhinoceros, Tetracaulodon, Hippotherium, Sus, Felis, Machairodus, Gulo, Agnotherium, Mastodon, Hippopotamus, Horse.
	3. <i>Pliocene Period</i> : Elephant, Ox, Deer, Dolphin, Seal, Walrus, Lamantin, Megalonyx, Megatherium, Hyæna, Ursus, Weasel, Hare, Rabbit, Water Rat, Mouse, Dasyurus, Halmaturus, Kangaroo and Kangaroo Rat.
	<i>Birds</i> : Pigeon, Raven, Lark, Duck, &c.
	<i>Fishes</i> : (in the formation generally) more than 100 species now extinct which belong to more than 40 extinct and as many living genera.
	<i>Insects</i> : 162 genera of Diptera, Hemiptera, Coleoptera, Aptera, Hymenoptera, Neuroptera, and Orthoptera.*

\* *Brown's British Geognostica*, p. 811.

Tertiary Period.	<i>Shells</i> : In the Newer Pliocene Period, 90 to 95 per cent of living species ; 35 to 50 per cent in the older Pliocene : 17 per cent in the Miocene ; and 3 1-2 in the Eocene ; amounting in all to 4000 species.
	<i>Plants</i> : Poplars, Willows, Elms, Chesnuts, Sycamores, and nearly 200 other species : seven-eighths of which are monocotyledonous or dicotyledonous.
Alluvial Period.	Man and most of the other species of existing animals and plants.

### *Human Remains.*

**Prin.** Geology alone has as yet been unable to fix the precise time when man first appeared on the globe ; but it was certainly very recent, and one of the last displays of creative energy witnessed on the earth.

**Proof.** In the earlier periods of geology, the fossil bones of other animals were often mistaken for those of man. Thus the *Homo Diluvii testis* of Scheuchzer, was ascertained by Cuvier to be nothing but a great Salamander. At the present day no practised geologist maintains that human remains have been found below diluvium ; although some writers on geology still defend that opinion (See *Penn's Comparative Estimate of the Mosaical and Mineral Geologies*, Vol. 2. p. 124. *Fairholme's Geology of Scripture*, p. 219. *Comstock's Geology*, p. 263.) But some geologists on the continent of Europe are of opinion that the bones of man are found so mixed with those of extinct quadrupeds, as in certain caverns in France, and the province of Liege, that all must have been deposited at the same time ; that is, during the deposition of the most recent tertiary strata. Others suppose that these human remains must have been introduced subsequently. (*Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 103.) Upon the whole, no evidence has yet been afforded by geology, that man existed on the earth earlier than during the deposition of the latest members of the tertiary strata : and most geologists are of opinion that his remains occur only in alluvium.

**Objection.** Some writers contend that when Asiatic countries have been examined more thoroughly, the remains of man may be found in all the fossiliferous rocks : and that they do not thus occur in Europe and America, because he had not spread into these parts of the world till a long time after his creation. But on this subject it may be observed, 1. that so far as the countries of Asia have been geologically examined, their organic relics correspond, as to distribution and general charac-

ter, with those of Europe and America; and hence the presumption is, that in all that quarter of the globe, the mammiferous animals will not be found much below the tertiary strata. 2. Comparative anatomy strengthens this presumption, by showing conclusively, that most of such animals as now inhabit the globe, could not have lived when the same physical conditions existed that were necessary for the creatures found in the lower rocks. 3. Since however the scriptures represent man to have originated from central Asia, we may hope that an examination of that region will enable geologists to fix the precise geological epoch when he first appeared upon the earth.

*Inference.* Until the exact period can be fixed when the remains of man first appear in the strata, geological time cannot be connected with historical time very definitely.

*Proof.* The scriptures fix the chronology of man's creation; so that if we can determine during what geological period this took place, we can ascertain what changes have occurred since; and what events preceded his appearance. To fix the date of any other existing animal's creation, will not in like manner connect geological and historical dates, because some of the existing species are mixed with extinct races, and may have been recreated during the six demiurgic days of the scripture.

*Remark.* The remarkable specimens of human skeletons found imbedded in solid limestone rock on the shores of Guadalupe, deserve attention in this connection. At first view they may seem genuine examples of man in a fossil state. But they belong to the alluvial formation, and probably were buried there only a few hundred years ago. For the same rock contains shells of existing species, as well as arrows and hatchets of stone, and pottery. It is said that a battle took place on this spot about the year 1710, between the Caribs and Gallibis.—One of these specimens is in the British Museum in London, and the other in the Garden of Plants in Paris. *Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 104. *Cuvier's Theory of the Earth* by Jameson and Mitchell, p. 235, N. York, 1818. *Cuvier's Discourse on the Revolutions of the Surface of the Globe*: Philadelphia, 1831. p. 82.

#### 8. *Vertical Range of Animals and Plants in the Strata.*

*Descrip.* Not only did different species, genera, and families of animals commence their existence at very different epochs in the earth's history, but some of them soon became extinct; others continued longer, and some even to the present time.

*Descrip.* Species rarely extend from one formation into another; but genera frequently continue through several formations; and a few, even through the whole series of strata: and are still found among living animals and plants. Orders

are still more extensive in their vertical range; and all the great classes, as has been shown, extend through the whole series. Very many genera, however, and some orders, are limited to a single formation. Others, after disappearing through one or more formations, again reappear.

*Illustration.* The following Tables will give an idea of the vertical distribution of several orders and genera. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 76 *et seq.*

The following Table exhibits the distribution of several orders of Zoophyta; their presence being indicated by stars, and their absence by blanks.

Systems.	Spongiae.	Lamelliforme.	Crinoidea	Echinida.	Stellerida.
Tertiary.	*	*	*	*	*
Cretaceous.	*	*	*	*	*
Oolitic.	*	*	*	*	*
Saliferous.			*		*
Carboniferous.		*	*	*	
Silurian.	*	*	*		*
Lower Systems.		*			*

*Remark.* I have placed Stelleridans in the Saliferous System on the authority of Dr. Buckland, (*Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 416), and in the Silurian System on the authority of Prof. Troost, in his *Fifth Report on the Geology of Tennessee*, p. 12, 1840.

The following genera of shells, very abundant at present on the globe, have a very limited range downwards.

	Cypraea.	Conus.	Voluta.	Strombus.	Murex.	Fusus.	Cerithium.	Mitra.	Pleurotoma.
Living Species.	135	181	66	45	75	67	87	112	71
In Tertiary System.	19	49	32	9	89	111	230	66	156
In Cretaceous do.			2	1	2				
In Oolite do.					1				
In Siliferous do.									
In Carboniferous do.									
In Graywacke do.									

The following genera are very unequal in their vertical range. One of them, the *terebratula*, extends through the whole series of formations and still lives.

	Products.	Spirifer.	Terebratula.	Trigonia.	Pholidonya.	Flagelloa.	Inoceramus.	Gryphaea.
Living Species.			15	1	1			1
In Tertiary Strata.			18		1			3
In Cretaceous System.			57	12	1	13	19	7
In Oolitic do.		6	49	14	16	17	1	17
In Siliferous do.	7	5	14	7		8		1
In Carboniferous do.	36	48	21		1		1	
In Graywacke do.	21	37	30	3	1			

Out of the multitude of Cephalopods, or chambered shells, that swarmed in the ancient seas, only two species have continued to the present time; as may be seen by the following Table of their vertical range.

	Bellerophon.	Orthoceres.	Belemnites.	Natilius.	Ammonites.	Hamites.	Scapites.	Bacillites.	Nummulites.
Living Species.				2					
In Tertiary Strata.				4					
In Cretaceous System.			8	9	57	28	4	5	3
In Oolite do.		75		13	164	2	1		
In Saliferous do.				2	3				
In Carboniferous do.	13	28		26	33				
In Graywacke do.	11	29		3	17				

### *Palæontological Chart.*

In order to bring under the eye a sketch of the vertical range of the different tribes of animals and plants, that have appeared on the globe from the earliest times, the Chart which faces the title page, has been constructed. The whole surface is divided into seven strips, to represent Geological Periods: viz the lowest, the Graywacke Period: the next, the carboniferous Period: the next, the Saliferous Period: the next, the Oolitic Period: the next, the Cretaceous Period: the next, the Tertiary Period; and the highest, the Historic Period, or that now passing. The Animals and Plants are represented by two trees, having a basis or roots of primary rocks, and rising and expanding through the different periods, and showing the commencement, developement, ramification, and in some cases the extinction, of the most important tribes. The comparative abundance or paucity of the different families, is shown by the greater or less space occupied by them upon the chart; although there can of course be no great exactness in such representations. The numerous short branches, exhibited along the sides of the

different families, are meant to designate the species, which almost universally become all extinct at the conclusion of each period. Hence the branches are contracted in passing from one period into another, and then again expand, to show that the type of the genera and orders alone survive. Where a tribe, after having been developed during one period, disappears entirely during the next or several succeeding periods, but at length reappears; a mere line is drawn across the space where it is wanting.

While this Chart shows that all the great classes of animals and plants existed from the earliest times, it will also show the gradual expansion and increase of the more perfect groups. The vertebral animals, for instance, commence with a few fishes; whose number increases: but no traces of other animals of this class appear, till we rise to the Saliferous Group, when we meet with the tracks of cheirotheria, tortoises, and birds. But not till we reach the oolite period, do we meet with the bones of the mammalia: and then only two species of marsupialia. No more of this class appear till we reach the tertiary strata, where they are developed in great numbers, approaching nearer and nearer to the present races on the globe as we ascend, until, in the Historic Period, the existing races, ten times more numerous, complete the series with MAN at their head, as the CROWN of the whole; or as the poet expresses it, "the diapason closes full in man."

In like manner, if we look at that part of the Chart which shows the developement of the vegetable world, we shall see that in the lowest rocks, the flowering plants are very few, and consist mostly of *Coniferæ* and *Cycadæ*: links as it were, between the flowering and the flowerless plants. It is not till we ascend to the Tertiary Period, that the willows, elms, sycamores, and other species that form the forests of the temperate zone, appear. But low down in the series, a few monocotyledonous plants are seen, such as lilies and palms; which, however, do not seem to have been greatly multiplied till we reach the Tertiary Period. Still more fully developed do we find them in the Historic Period; where 1000 species of *PALMS*—the CROWN of the vegetable world, have been found.

To refer to another example of a somewhat different character: take the Saurian animals, which began to appear during the Saliferous Period. In the next period above, or the Oolitic, their developement is very great; so that they seem to have been the rulers of the animal creation. But above this Period, they gradually decrease, until among existing animals all their representatives, except the crocodile and the alligator, are on a most diminutive scale.

A similar example among plants exists in the *Lycopodiaceæ*; which during the Carboniferous Period, formed trees from 40 to 60 feet high. But above that period, they rarely appear; and their only remaining representatives on earth at the present time, are obscure plants a few inches in height.

Much more information of this sort may be obtained by a few moments inspection of this chart; which will present the necessity of details. As this however is the first effort that has been made to give such a representation of the leading facts in Paleontology, I shall expect that defects and imperfections will be discovered in it.\*

\* Since the above was in type, I have received the *Lehrbuch Geognosie* of Professor Broan, published at Stuttgart in 1837 and 1838, where I find a Chart constructed on essentially the same principles. The wonder with me is, not that I have been anticipated, but that so simple a plan to exhibit the leading facts of paleontology, has not been employed by writers in the English language.

9. *Comparison of Fossil and Living Species.*

**Prin.** It is a moderate estimate to reckon the species of organic remains hitherto described in the rocks below the tertiary strata, at 5000. Yet scarcely none of this number have thus far been identified with any now living on the globe. In many cases they differ even generically.

**Rem.** The above estimate would make the whole number of fossil species 9000. This is considerably below the estimates of Kofe Stein, a German writer, in 1834. He gives the following numbers, in his *Die Naturgeschichte des Erdkopers in ihren ersten grundzügen dengestellt. 2 Bde 8 vo. Vol. 2.* See *Quarterly Review for April 1836.* p. 90.

Mammalia.	270.
Birds.	20.
Reptiles.	104.
Fishes.	386.
Insects.	247.
Spiders Crustacea, Xyphosura, Entomostracea, Isopoda, Myriopoda.	211.
Mollusca.	6056.
Annelides.	214.
Radiata.	411.
Polypina.	907.
Vegetables.	803.
Total.	9629.

**Prin.** The deeper we descend into the earth, that is, the older the rock, the more unlike in general are its organic remains to existing species. As we ascend, we find a nearer and nearer approximation to existing species in each successive formation.

**Descrip.** In 1833 the number of shells in the tertiary strata that had been discovered and described by M. Deshayes in Europe, amounted to 3036: Of these, 568 were identical with species found in our present seas. They were distributed however very unequally through the different groups of these strata as follows.

In the Eocene or oldest

Group.	1238 species : Living analogues,	42.
In the Miocene.	1021. do. do.	176.
In the Pliocene.	777. do. do.	350.

*Ledell's Geology* Vol. 3. p. 47, 49, 51. *Appendix. First Edition*. London, 1833.

*Prin.* The organic remains in the northern parts of the globe, correspond more nearly to existing tropical plants and animals, than to those now living in the same latitudes.

*Proof.* It is well known that the Fauna and Flora of tropical regions are so different from those in higher latitudes as to strike every observer. Now any one who is acquainted with these peculiar features of tropical organic life, even as they are exhibited in books, will be struck with their resemblance to the organic remains in the fossiliferous strata. The following examples may serve for illustration : beginning with the highest of the strata, viz. diluvium. 1. Along the shores of the Arctic Ocean in the banks of the great rivers, such as the Oby, the Yenesi, and the Lena, are found immense quantities of the bones of the extinct species of elephant called the mammoth. The region in which these remains occur, is almost as large as the whole of Europe. Now although the fact that these animals were covered with hair, proves that the climate where they lived was colder than that where naked elephants now live, yet it must have been much warmer than the present temperature of Siberia, in order to produce vegetables for their sustenance. The rhinoceros found fossil in the same country confirms this conclusion. 2. The bones of extinct species of elephant, rhinoceros, hippopotamus, lion, tiger, hyaena, &c.—genera confined almost exclusively within the tropics at this day, are found scattered through the diluvium of almost every part of Europe. 3. When shells are found in the tertiary strata in northern countries, identical with those in existing seas, their analogues are almost universally found in tropical seas : and when the same species occurs in the Mediteranean, for instance, as is found fossil upon its shores, the latter is much larger than the former : and it is a well known fact that the same species in tropical regions attains a greater size than in colder climates. 4. The great size, both of the animals and plants found in the secondary strata, compared with that of living organic beings of a similar kind, shows a state of climate during their growth very favorable to their developement : such a climate, in fact, as exists in tropical countries. 5. The great number of chambered shells, such as ammonite, orthoceras, &c. found in the secondary rocks, confirms this proposition,

since the few representatives of these shells still found alive, occur in warm latitudes. 6. But perhaps the most striking evidence of a warm climate, during the deposition of the secondary rocks, exists in the fossil flora of the coal formation. This is filled with gigantic plants of genera mostly found within the tropics; such as *equiseta*, *lycopodiaceæ*, tree ferns, palms, &c: and a person who is familiar with these remains, is struck, on going to a tropical country, with their resemblance to the vegetation around him; as he is with their want of resemblance to the flora of high latitudes. These tropical plants have been found in the rocks around Baffin's Bay, and even as far north as Melville Island, in 75° north latitude. 7. Numerous organic remains in the secondary rocks, even in the oldest fossiliferous strata, appear to have once constituted coral reefs, such as are now found only in tropical seas. Such relics as these, also, have been found in the rocks of Melville Island. *Lyells' Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 98.

*Rem.* Some efforts have lately been made by several geologists to show that the climate in northern latitudes in some parts of Europe, was even colder during the diluvial epoch, than at present. But should this prove true, it could affect the preceding arguments only so far as diluvium is concerned.

*Remark.* Fossil botanists say that the land plants found in the older strata, correspond more nearly with those now growing upon the low islands of the Pacific Ocean, between the tropics: and hence they infer that when they flourished, the land was but little elevated above the waters; and that the climate was constantly very warm and moist. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 34. p. 324.

*Prin.* It is probable that during the deposition of the older fossiliferous rocks, the climate was ultra-tropical; that is, warmer than at present exists on the globe.

*Proof.* Tropical species of *equiseta*, *lycopodiaceæ*, tree ferns, &c. are much larger than those found growing without the tropics. But those found fossil are much larger than any now living. *Equiseta*, for instance, in the ancient world, were sometimes 10 feet high; tree ferns, from 40 to 50 feet, and aborescent *lycopodiaceæ*, 60 or 70 feet high. Recent *equiseta* are rarely more than half an inch in diameter; whereas the fossil calamites, a very similar plant, is sometimes 7 and even 14 inches in diameter; and no living *lycopodiaceæ* are more than 3 feet high. This extraordinary development, which is found also in other species of plants and animals, can be explained only by a higher temperature: though Aldolphe Brongniart suggests that in those early times, when perhaps no land animals existed, the atmosphere might have been more highly charged with carbonic acid than at present. *Histoire des vegetaux fossiles*,

par M. Adolphe Brongniart : 2d Livraison. p. 113. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 450. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology*, p. 118.

*Prin.* The temperature of the climate seems to have gradually sunk during the successive deposition of the different groups of fossiliferous rocks.

*Proof.* While the whole number of species of ferns, now growing upon the globe, is 1500; only 144 are found in the northern temperate and frigid zones; and 140 in the Southern Frigid and Temperate zones; while the remaining 1200 are found within the tropics. Now the number of fossil ferns diminishes in nearly the same ratio, in ascending from the oldest secondary rocks, as it does in going north or south from the equator. Hence it is inferred that a similar decrease of temperature is in both cases the cause. 2. This is the most rational mode of explaining the gradual approach of organic remains to existing species, as we come nearer the surface; so that during the tertiary periods the climate could not have been much different from that around the Mediterranean. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise* Vol. 1. p. 471. 3. If the former high temperature of the globe be admitted, we should expect this gradual reduction of temperature, by radiation. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology* p. 96.

#### 10. Description of individual and peculiar Species of Organic Remains.

##### PLANTS.

*Descrip.* The number of fossil plants yet described amounts to about 800. (*Phillips' Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 70.) Of these more than 300 are contained in the strata below the top of the carboniferous Group: more than 100 in the rocks between that group and the tertiary strata; and nearly 200 in the tertiary.

##### *Algæ or Sea Weeds.*

*Descrip.* Existing submarine vegetation, amounting to more than 500 species, may be arranged in three divisions; dependent for their characters upon climate: the first group occupying the frigid, the second the temperate, and the third the torrid zone. A similar distribution of the fossil marine plants, will bring all those below the top of the new red sandstone into the class of tropical plants: while those higher in the series, approximate more and more to those now existing on the globe. *Adolphe Brongniart's Histoire des Vegetaux Fossiles* Livraison 1. p. 41.

*Descrip.* In the lowest rocks most of the plants are marine. Fig. 38, represents a species of *fucoides*.

Fig. 38.

*Fucoides.*

#### *Musci and Filices : or Mosses and Ferns.*

*Descrip.* on account of their delicate structure, mosses are rarely preserved in the rocks. But ferns are very abundant ; especially in the more ancient strata, where they are found of a size at least equal to those now growing in the torrid zone, which are often from 40 to 50 feet high. Fig. 39, is a sketch of some of these tree ferns, now growing in tropical climates.

Fig. 39.



Tree Ferns.

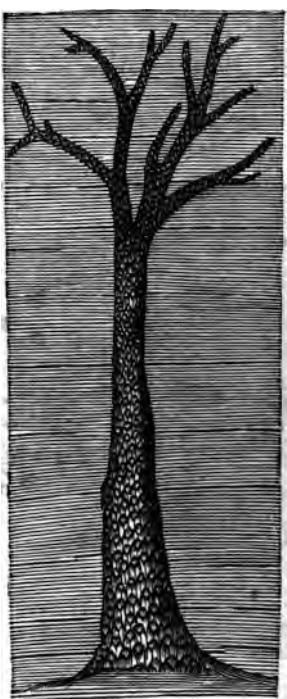
*Descrip.* Europe at the present time does not contain more than 30 or 40 species of ferns, and these of diminutive size; whereas more than 200 species have been found in the coal formation of the same quarter of the globe. *Adolphe Brongniart in American Journal of Science, Vol. 34. p. 319.*

#### *Lycopodiaceæ, or Club Mosses.*

*Descrip.* The Lycopodiaceæ are a tribe of plants intermediate between ferns and coniferae on the one hand, and ferns and mosses on the other. *Lindley's Natural System of Botany, p. 313.*

*Lepidodendron.* This fossil plant approximates in its character to the Lycopodiaceæ: or rather, it seems to be intermediate between the club moss tribe, and the coniferae or pine tribe. It is abundant in the coal formation, where it is sometimes found from 20 to 45 feet long; and M. Ad. Brongniart has described 34 species. The genus is wholly extinct. Fig. 40 will convey some idea of these plants.

Fig. 40.



Lepidodendron.

*Remark.* The Lepidodendra fill up a chasm in the existing series of plants, between flowering or flowerless plants, better than any living genus. Similar blanks in the existing organization are filled by other extinct genera of organic remains. *Lindley and Hutton's Fossil Flora*, Vol. 2, p. 58.

#### *Equisetaceæ.*

*Descrip.* Living plants of this tribe are called *horsetails*, *cat-tails*, *scouring rushes*, &c: and although of frequent occurrence in all climates (the most frequent in the temperate zones) they are of diminutive size, even in the torrid zone, compared to those found fossil. The latter are divided into two genera, *Equisetum* and *Calamites*: the former corresponding very nearly to living equisetæ, but the latter differing a good deal in structure and size; being much larger than the equisetæ. Fig. 41 is a *Calamites* destitute of leaves.

Fig. 41.



Calamites.

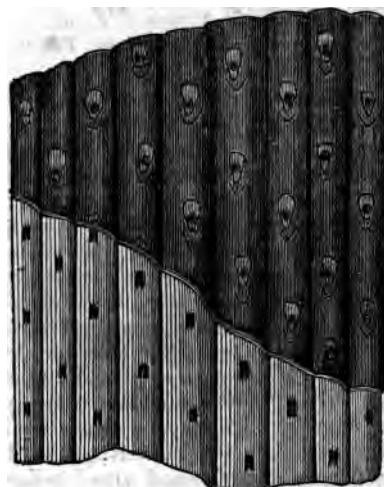
*Plants in the Older Strata not yet referred to any living Classes with certainty.*

#### *Sigillaria.*

*Descrip.* The *Sigillaria* are large trunks, from half a foot to three feet in diameter, and from 50 to 60 feet long, covered

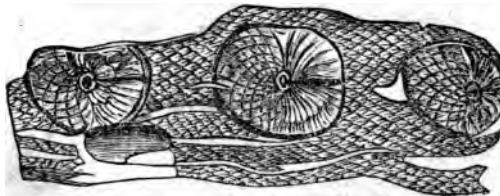
usually with flutings and scars. Brongniart enumerates 42 species; and regards them as closely allied to arborescent ferns: But Lindley and Hutton offer good reasons for supposing them dicotyledonous plants, different from any now on the globe, yet approaching the Euphorbiæ and Cacteæ. Fig. 42, represents the flutings and scars of one of these plants.

Fig. 42.

*Sigillaria.*

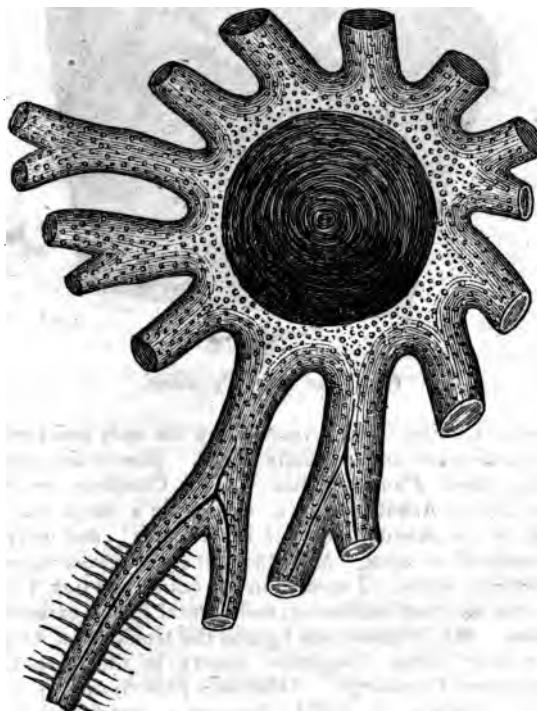
*Descrip.* Several other extinct genera, with scars similar to those on the *Sigillaria*; that is, arranged in vertical rows, occur in the same rocks, and are probably Coniferæ. Fig. 43, shows a portion of one called *Ulodendron*.

Fig. 43.

*Ulodendron.*

**Descrip.** Another very extraordinary fossil plant of the coal formation, is called *Stigmaria*. It consists (Fig. 44,) of a dome shaped centre, three or four feet in diameter, from which proceeded branches 20 or 30 feet long, covered with tubercles, to which were attached cylindrical succulent leaves. It was probably an aquatic plant, which floated in the water, or trailed in swamps. It is thought to have been dicotyledonous.

Fig. 44.

*Stigmaria.*

**Descrip.** Another remarkable and beautiful tribe of plants, not unfrequent in the coal formation, has whorled like the flower of the Aster: hence one genus is called *Asterophylites*. Fig. 45, shows one of these from the coal mine in Mansfield, Massachusetts.

Fig: 45.



Annularia.

## Coniferæ and Cycadeæ.

**Descrip.** Coniferæ and Cycadeæ are the only two families of plants whose seeds are originally naked. Hence they are called *Gymnospermous Phanerogamia*. The Coniferæ, under the name of Pines, Araucarias, &c. constitute a large and important part of the existing trees of all climates: and they occur in the rocks of all ages. More than 20 species have been found in the tertiary strata, 13 species in the oolite and lias, 4 (of voltaia) in the new red sandstone, and several in the carboniferous formation. Mr. Witham has figured the trunk of an Araucaria, 47 feet long, from Cragleath quarry in the carboniferous limestone near Edinburgh. *Witham's Description of a Fossil Tree, &c. Edinburgh, 1833.* Araucarias are found fossil in Great Britain alone; but genuine pines occur in the coal formation in Nova Scotia and New Holland. The four living species of Araucaria that have been described, occur in tropical climates south of the equator.

**Descrip.** Sometimes the trunks of these gigantic trees, as well as of some of the other plants that have been described, are found standing erect, rarely in the very place where they

grew: but generally they appear to have been transported, and to have assumed an upright position by the greater specific gravity of the roots. Fig. 46, shows the stumps of an ancient forest of *Coniferæ*, with the roots imbedded in the black vegetable mould in which they grew; the whole being now converted into stone. The section was taken in the Isle of Portland, Eng.

Fig. 46.



Subterranean Forest: Isle of Portland.

**Descrip.** The Cycadæ are a remarkable family of plants, occupying an intermediate place between Palms, Ferns, and *Coniferæ*; filling up an important link between dicotyledonous, monocotyledonous, and acotyledonous vegetation. Only two genera and 22 species are known as now living upon the globe. But during the deposition of the rocks above the coal, they formed a large part of the vegetation. For out of 70 species of land plants found fossil, during this period, 29 species are cycadæ, referable to 4 genera. They have lately been found also in the coal formation. The living species mostly grow in tropical climates Fig. 47, represents a living species of these plants.

**Prin.** It is probable that dicotyledonous plants, as well as the frailest kinds of flowerless ones, such as fungi, and mosses, may have been more abundant in the earlier periods of geological history, than the specimens of these plants found fossil would lead us to infer.

Fig. 47.

*Cycas Revoluta.*

*Proof.* Most organic remains must have been preserved in water, or at least in wet sand, or mud. Now Prof. Lindley, having immersed in a tank of fresh water 177 species of living plants for more than two years, arrives at the following conclusions.

“1. That the leaves and bark of most dicotyledonous plants are wholly decomposed in two years, and that of those which do resist it, the greater part are Coniferæ and Cycadeæ.”

“2. That Monocotyledons are more capable of resisting the action of water, particularly Palms and Scitamineous plants; but that grasses and sedges perish.”

“3. That Fungi, Mosses, and all the lowest forms of vegetation disappear.”

“4. That ferns have a great power of resisting water if in a

a green state, not one of those submitted to the experiment having disappeared ; but that their fructification perished." *Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 480.

*Rem.* 1. It is interesting to observe that by this experiment those plants were most enduring in water, which we find most abundant in a fossil state. Yet some circumstances prevent us from inferring with certainty that all the more frail and the dicotyledonous species perished in the process of petrifaction. If a corresponding experiment had been made with these plants in wet mud, or sand, and another in salt water, or salt mud, these results might have been somewhat modified, and probably in nearly every case where plants are carried to the bottom of water, they are covered by mud in a shorter time than two years ; and most of those preserved in the rocks, were fossilized beneath salt water. Other substances, as iron, or lime, in solution in the water, might essentially modify the experiment. After all, however, the experiment does show us that we must not place too much dependence on the relative numbers of different classes of fossil plants, as hitherto discovered.

*Rem.* 2. Other peculiar and interesting plants occur in a fossil state ; as the Pandanes, Palms, &c. but the limits of this treatise do not permit their introduction.

*Rem.* 3. The great size of many fossil plants and the vast accumulations of carbonaceous matter in the coal formation, render it probable that the vegetation of the early periods of the globe was far more abundant than at the present day. Yet as the trees were mostly without flowers, and unenlivened by the presence and voices of any vertebral animals, the landscape must have presented a very uniform and sombre though imposing aspect : better adapted to a state of preparation for the higher orders of animals, than for their actual existence : better adapted to prepare fuel for man, than for his happy dwelling.

*Rem.* 4. A recent discovery has enabled geologists to ascertain with greater certainty and ease than before, the nature of fossil plants. The different families of living plants are distinguished not merely by external characters, which mostly disappear when petrified, but by a corresponding anatomical structure ; chiefly by the form of the minute vessels, of which they are composed. Now it is found that these vessels retain their form when petrified. Hence by cutting a fragment of fossil wood very thin, and polishing it, a microscope will show these vessels, and thus enable the enquirer to determine the nature of the plant. For this discovery we are indebted to Mr. Witham, who has given directions for preparing fossil wood for such an examination. *Witham's Observations on Fossil Vegetables, &c. Edinburgh, 1831, Quarto.*

#### ANIMALS.

##### 1. RADIATED ANIMALS.

*Descrip.* This extensive Class of animals are the most simple of any in their organization, and the most removed from common observation in general. They are distinguished by

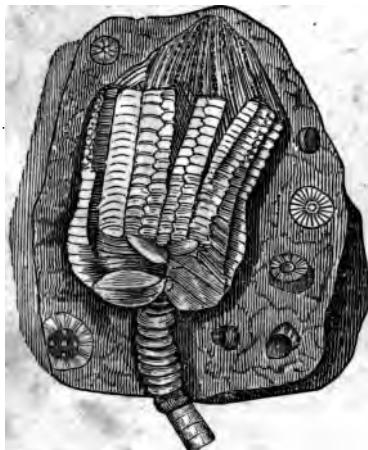
their radiated structure: though in some of the first Order, the Echinodermata, it has been lately shown that they possess somewhat of a "bilateral symmetry," like the higher orders of animals. The whole class are frequently denominated *Zoophytes*.

*Descrip.* The number of zoophytes in a fossil state is very large; and in almost every case, they differ specifically, and frequently generically, from existing species. I shall notice those chiefly that are most unlike such as now live on the globe.

*Crinoideans, or Encrinites.*

*Descrip.* These animals have long attracted attention from their peculiar structure and the immense quantity of their remains in some limestones called *Entrochal* or *Encrinial* *Marble*. They belong to the first order of Radiata or the Echinodermata. They are exceedingly rare among living animals, but two species the *Pentacrinus Caput Medusae*, and the *Comatula fimbriata*, that have been discovered in the ocean, have thrown much light upon those that are fossil. Mr. Miller, who has written an excellent work, entitled the *Natural History of the Crinoidea*, has divided them into nine genera. The two genera that have attracted most attention are the *Encrinites moniliformis*, or *Lily Encrinite*, or *Stone Lily*. It consists of a vast number of little joints, or bones, forming a column, (which may be called the vertebral column, although these animals are invertebral,) for the support of a cup like body, containing the viscera, and from whose margin proceed five articulated arms, dividing into tentaculated fingers, more or less numerous, surrounding the mouth.—The animal was fixed at the bottom of the ocean, or to a piece of wood, and merely moved as far as it could reach by bending its very flexible column, which was admirably fitted for this purpose. The number of little bones, or joints, composing the head alone of this species, is estimated at 26,000. These bones are perforated and are used sometimes for rosaries. This animal relic is shown in Fig. 48.

Fig. 48.



Lily Encrinite.

**Descrip.** The stem of the Encrinite was circular, but that of *Pentacrinite* pentagonal. The latter also had usually a greater number of side arms and of joints. One of the most remarkable of them was the *Briarean Pentacrinite*, (*Pentacrinus Briareus*) so called on account of the great number of its hands or tentacula. The bones in its fingers and tentacula, amount at least to 100,000: and those of the side arms, to at least 50,000 more. And since each bone must have had two sets of muscular fibres for contraction and expansion, these bundles of fibres in the whole animal must have been as many as 300,000. This vastly exceeds the muscular apparatus in any other animal. What a contrast to man, whose bones are only 241, with 232 pairs of muscles!

Fig. 49, shows another genus of this family, the *Apocrinites* or *Pear Encrinite*. It is represented as restored, and situated as if in the water.



Fig. 49

Pear Encrinite.

*Remark.* More than 30 species of Crinoideans have been found in the rocks from the coal formation downwards: but none of these, with one exception, had a pentagonal column. Those of this form began to appear at the epoch of the Lias, and have continued to the present day.

*Descrip.* *Polypi*, *Polypifers*, or *Polyparia*, are those minute radiated animals that have the power of secreting carbon-

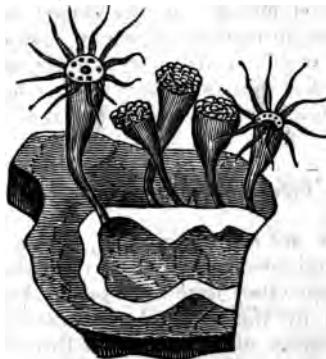
Fig. 50.



Polyparia.

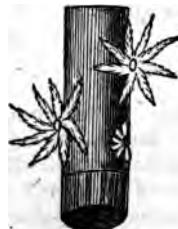
ate of lime, and thus of building up large stony structures from the bottom to the surface of the ocean. They swarm in immense numbers in the seas of tropical climates, and form coral reefs which sometimes extend hundreds of miles. They seem to have existed in all ages, and to have formed similar deposits, which are now ranked among the limestones. Figs. 50, 51, and 52, show several living species of these animals as they are attached to their stony habitations.

Fig. 51.



Polyparia.

Fig. 52.



*Descrip.* The tentacula of these animals are provided with cilia on their margins, which are capable of being rapidly moved, so as to keep currents of water in motion, that food may be conveyed to their mouths. Immense numbers of the polyparia unite in building up a single habitation, and they do this as if influenced by one instinct: so that the structure rises with the most symmetrical proportions. Hence it is still a question, whether all the animals upon each structure are not to be regarded rather as one compound animal. In the *Flustra carbacea* each polype has usually 22 tentacula; and on these, 2200 cilia. An ordinary specimen of this species will contain 18000 polypi; and of consequence, 396,000 tentacula, and 39,600,000 cilia. On the *Flustra foliacea* Dr. Grant estimates 400,000,000, cilia. *Roget's Bridgewater Treatise.* Vol. I. p. 122.

*Descrip.* These polyparia mostly multiply by buds, called gemmules, which grow like the buds of plants from the parent, and after a time fall off and become distinct animals. A single polype in this mode may produce a million of young in a month. They may also be multiplied by division, when each separate part becomes in a short time a whole animal. Different parts may also be made to grow together, and monsters of every form be produced. The *Hydra* is one of the genera of polypi; and by taking the heads of several individuals, and grafting them to one body, a *Hydra* with seven, or any other number of heads, may be produced.

*Descrip.* Small as these animals are, they have nevertheless effected important geological changes on the globe: for some of the most extensive rock formations appear to have resulted from their labours. But the next tribe of animals, which is to be described, furnishes still more striking evidence how powerful an agency the minutest of all beings are able to exert upon our globe.

### *Infusoria.*

*Descrip.* These animals are not discernable, with a few exceptions, but by powerful microscopes: and as they usually occur in some sort of infusion, they have been called *Infusoria*; though they generally go by the name of *Animalculæ*. The recent astonishing discoveries of Ehrenberg, a Prussian naturalist, have given a new aspect to this department of animated nature, even in a geological point of view. He has described 722 living species, which swarm almost everywhere, even in the fluids of living and healthy animals, in countless numbers.

*Descrip.* Formerly they were thought to be the most simple of all animals in their organization: to be in fact little more than mere particles of matter endowed with vitality; but he has discovered in them mouths, teeth, stomachs, muscles, nerves, glands, eyes, and organs of reproduction. Some of the smallest animalculæ are not more than the 24,000th of an inch in diameter; and the thickness of the skin of their stomachs, not more than the 50,000,000th part of an inch. In their mode of reproduction they are viviparous, oviparous, and gemmiparous. An individual of the *Hydatina senta* produced in ten days 1,000,000 young: on the eleventh day, 4,000,000; and on the twelfth day, 16,000,000. In another case he says that one individual is capable of becoming in 4 days, 170 billions! *Am. Journal of Science* Vol. 35. p. 372.

*Descrip.* Leuwenhoeck calculated that 1000,000,000 animalculæ, such as occur in common water, would not altogether make a mass so large as a grain of sand; Ehrenberg estimates that 500,000,000 of them do actually sometimes exist in a single drop of water!

*Descrip.* Surprising as these facts are, it will perhaps seem still more incredible, that the skeletons of these animals should be found in a fossil state, and actually constitute nearly the whole mass of soils and rocks several feet in thickness, and extending over areas of many acres. Yet this too has been ascertained by the same acute Prussian naturalist. The following formations, he says, are of this description.

## 1. Bog Iron Ochre.

*Kieselguhr*, a siliceous incrustation, from } Alluvial.  
hot springs.

3. *Polierschiefer*, Polishing Slate, a variety }  
of Tripoli, or rotten stone.

## 4. The Semi-opal of the Polierscheifer.

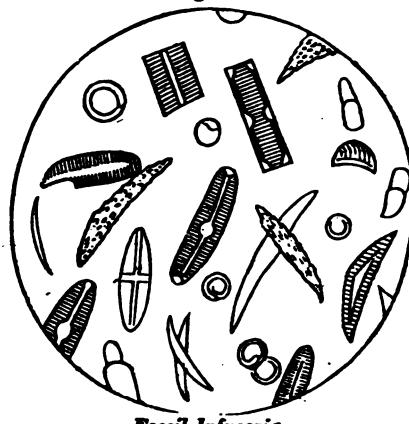
Probably }  
of the }  
same na- }  
ture. } 5. Semi-opal of the Dolerite; }  
6. Precious Opal of the Porphyry, }  
7. Flint of the Chalk. } Secondary  
and Primary.

*Descrip.* Some of the above substances occur in large quantity. The polishing slate for example, at Bilin in Germany, forms a bed 14 feet thick, and the eatable infusorial earth near Lunebourg, a bed above 20 feet thick. Yet it would take 41,000 millions of these skeletons to make a cubic inch; their weight being only 220 grains! A single shield or skeleton weighs about the 187 millionth part of a grain!

*Descrip.* The animalculæ differ from all other animals, in having their softer parts protected by a shield, or skeleton, which may consist either of silica, lime, or oxide of iron. These shields, of course, will not be altered by the strongest heat; and although some of the rocks above named, have been subject to heat, the skeletons often remain very entire, and their organic structure is very obvious through a powerful glass.

*Descrip.* In New England and N. York, the siliceous marl already described as occurring beneath peat in swamps, has been recently shown by Prof. J. W. Bailey of West Point to be almost entirely made up of the fossil skeletons of Infusoria, belonging to the family of Baccillariae: some of which appear to be identical with those found by Ehrenberg in Germany. Fig. 53 shows a group of these fossil skeletons, sketched by Prof. Bailey, as they appear when diffused in water, under the microscope. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 35. p. 118. Deposites of this siliceous marl are very common in Massachusetts; and all hitherto examined, contain vast numbers of these relics: indeed, they constitute nearly the whole of the deposite. I have examined specimens from Spencer, Pelham, Barre, Fitchburg, Wrentham, North Bridgewater, and Andover. In the latter place the deposite is said to be 15 feet thick.

Fig. 53



Fossil Infusoria.

*Descrip.* Of 80 species of fossil Infusoria discovered by Ehrenberg, nearly one half belong to extinct species: Those in the recent strata, are all fresh water animals; but those in the chalk, are marine. *London and Edinburgh Philosophical Magazine for May 1839*, p. 377.

*Descrip.* "The fossil animalcula from iron ochre is only the one twenty first part of the thickness of a human hair; and one cubic inch of this ochre must contain one billion of the skeletons of living beings." *Wonders of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 689.

*Descrip.* The ferruginous scum that appears upon the water of some springs, as well as the red deposite at their bottom, is said to be composed chiefly of the remains of animalculæ.

## 2. ARTICULATED ANIMALS.

*Descrip.* The animals of this class are distinguished by having envelopes connected by annulated plates or rings.

*Examples.* The earth worm, blood sucker, lobster, crab, horse shoe, spiders, scorpions, insects.

*Remark.* Excepting the insects, of which more than 100,000 living species are already known, the animals of this class are not numerous; and but few if any of its tribes are found in the rocks.

### *Insects.*

*Descrip.* Until recently, no insects had been discovered lower in the rocks than the Oolite: but two species of Coleoptera,

and one of *Corydalis*, have of late been disinterred in the coal formation. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 409. Not less than 25 species occur in the Oolite, and 244 species in a fresh water formation of the Tertiary group. *Bronn's Lethaea Geognostica*, p. 811.

*Remark.* If there is any probability that insects were numerous in early times, and no sufficient reason can be given to show that they were not, it may seem strange that their remains so rarely occur. But in the first place, a large part of these animals are too frail to be preserved in a fossil state. Secondly, only one or two species of insects are found in salt water, which is the principal medium by which organic remains have been preserved: and thirdly, they are so light as to sink with difficulty in the waters, while a great number of insectivorous animals are watching to devour them, as they float along on the surface.

### *Arachnidans, or Spiders and Scorpions.*

*Descrip.* The scorpion has recently been found in the coal formation in Bohemia, by Count Sternberg; and is the first example of this animal in a fossil state. Spiders have not been found lower than the Oolitic series, where only two species are recognized; but in the fresh water.tertiary several species occur.

### *Crustaceans.*

*Descrip.* Crustaceous animals are not common in the rocks: yet the King Crab (*Limulus*,) so abundant on the coast of New England, has been found in the coal formation, and also in the Oolite, where other animals of this family occur. But the most remarkable animal of this class is extinct, viz.

### *The Trilobite.*

*Descrip.* This singular animal, which is found in the older fossiliferous rocks, in all the northern parts of Europe, in North and South America, and at the Cape of Good Hope, was long confounded with insects. But it was at length ascertained that it corresponded most nearly to the living genera of Crustaceans, the *Serolis*, *Limulus*, and *Branchipus*. Figs. 54, 55, represent two genera of trilobites, out of the ten genera and 52 species that are known. It will be seen that this animal is composed of a shield covering the anterior part of the body, while the abdomen has numerous segments which fold over one another like those on a lobster's tail. By this arrangement some of the species had the power to roll themselves up like the wood louse, or the armadillo, and thus of defending themselves against ene-

mies. These animals were sometimes 5 or 6 inches long, and are divided by longitudinal furrows into three lobes; and hence their name. They seem to have been destitute of antennæ, and their legs, which were soft, and which answered the purpose of legs and wings, have disappeared.

Fig. 54.

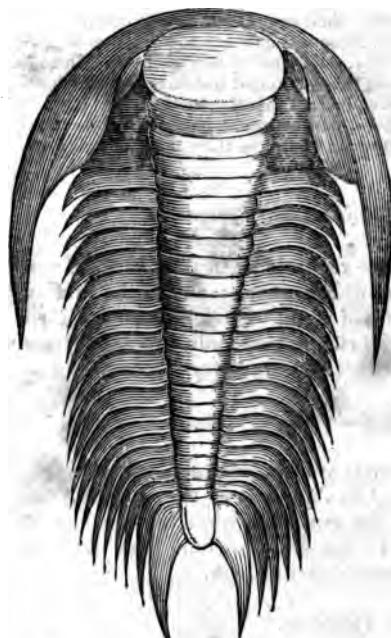
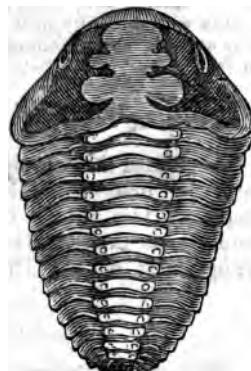


Fig. 55



*Descrip.* Trilobites abounded among the earlier inhabitants of the globe, being most common in the graywacke. A few species occur in the carboniferous strata; above which, not a trace of them has been discovered. In the carboniferous strata they are accompanied by the Limulus. This latter also occurs in the oolitic group, with other Crustaceans of a higher order.

*Descrip.* Perhaps the most curious fact respecting the trilobite is the discovery of their eyes, which are sometimes perfectly preserved. It is well known that the eyes of crustaceous animals, like those of insects, are made up of a vast number of facets, or lenses, placed at the end of tubes, which are arranged side by side, so as to produce a radiating mass of eyes, which being generally of a hemispherical or conical form, and sometimes elevated from the head on a stem, enable the ani-

mal to see in every direction; although their eyes have no motion. In some insects the number of these lenses in both eyes, as in the house fly, is 14,000: in other cases (the dragon fly,) 25,000: in others, (the butterfly,) 35,000: in others (the *Mordella*,) 50,000. But in the trilobite they amount only to about 800. The whole mass is of a conical shape as is shown in Fig. 56.

Fig. 56.



Eyes of the Trilobite.

### 3. MOLLUSCA.

**Descrip.** The Molluscous animals compose the third great class of those that are intertebral, reckoning from the least to the most complex. This class embraces those animals that are destitute of a spinal marrow, or articulated skeleton; but whose muscles are attached to a calcareous covering, called a shell; or to a soft skin externally, and to a hard body within, analogous to shells. They are most abundantly diffused among living animals: and the great number of their remains in the rocks, proves, either that they were more numerous than other animals in earlier times, or that they were more readily preserved. Perhaps we must call in both circumstances to explain the fact.

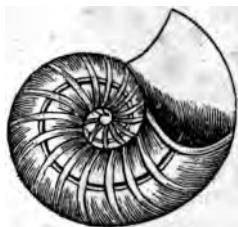
**Rem.** The science that describes molluscous animals is called *Conchology*: and from this science geology derives the greatest aid. Even its fundamental principles cannot be described in this treatise: nor, indeed, but a few of the vast number of shells that are found in a fossil state. Some of the most remarkable will be selected.

#### Chambered Shells.

**Descrip.** These are univalve shells, which are divided into numerous compartments, or chambers, by cross partitions; as is shown in Fig. 57, which is a section of the common *Nautilus pompilius*. These partitions are all perforated by what is called the *siphuncle*, which consists mostly of a membrane, having the form of a tube, and being so firmly fastened to the partitions that no air can pass by it into the chambers. The ani-

mal resides in the outer chamber, and is connected with the others only by the siphuncle. Around the heart of the animal is a sac, which may contain fluid enough to fill the siphuncle. Now the object of this structure is to enable the animal to rise or sink at pleasure in the water. When the sac around the heart is filled with fluid, the siphuncle is empty, and the air in the posterior chambers expands, so as to cause the shell to rise and float in the water; but when the animal withdraws its arms into the shell, the fluid in the sac is compressed, and forced into the siphuncle, which condenses the air in the chambers, and thus the animal is made heavier than the water, and sinks. In short, he rises and sinks in exactly the same manner as a *water balloon*.

Fig. 57.



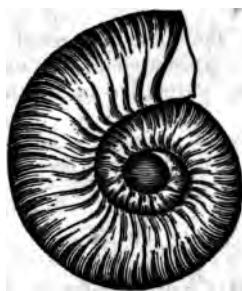
Nautilus.

Ammonites.

*Rem.* Although the Nautilus has attracted great attention from the earliest times, it is only within two or three years that Dr. Buckland first discovered the true explanation of the manner in which it could rise and sink at pleasure in water. *Bridgewater Treatise* Vol. 1. p. 325. Some, however, still doubt the correctness of his explanation.

*Descrip.* With the exception of one or two species of Nautilus, all the larger species of multilocular or chambered shells have disappeared from the earth, although in early times they were very numerous and widely diffused, and often of enormous size. They resembled the Nautilus in general form and structure, although generically different; and they are sometimes found more than four feet in diameter. Figs. 58, 59, represent two species of Ammonites.

Fig. 58.



Ammonites.

*Deloils.* Brochant enumerates 270 species of ammonites: Phillips mentions 274, which he distributes as follows: In Graywacke 17: In the Carboniferous system 33: In the Saliferous system 3: In the Oolitic system 164: In the Cretaceous system 57: In the Tertiary Strata, of *Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 83.

*Descrip.* It is well ascertained that in some chambered testacea, the shell is contained within the animal; as in the *Spirula Peronii*, Fig. 60.

Fig. 60.



Spirula Peronii.

Orthoceratite.

*Descrip.* As its name implies, this was a strait shell divided by transverse septa into chambers, of which nearly 70 have sometimes been counted. It has been found a yard in length, and half a foot in diameter; forming a *float*, which would have

Fig. 61.



Orthocera.

been sufficient for an animal far larger than any existing cephalopod. Fig. 61, shows the shell of an orthocera with one of the septa.

*Inference.* The great size of these shells, as well as of the ammonites, confirms the views already presented of the existence of a very warm climate when they were alive in northern seas.

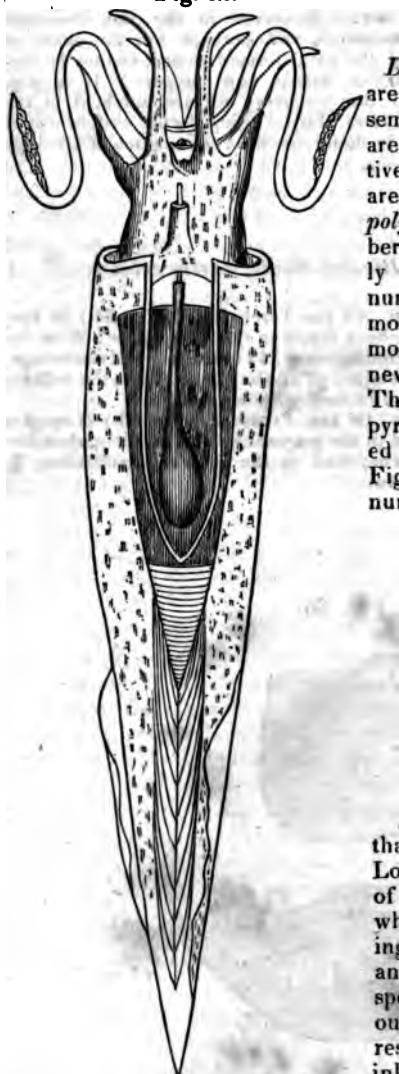
*Rem.* Not less than 29 species of orthoceratite are found in the gray-wacke, and 28 in the carboniferous group. They have not been found in any later rock.

#### *Belemnite.*

*Descrip.* This internal shell resembled a conical arrow, with a cavity of similar shape, in which was a thin horny sheath, and within this a thin conical chambered shell, or *alveolus*. It was provided, also, with an ink bag, like the living Sepia, or Cuttle Fish, as a defence against enemies, or rather, as a means of making good their retreat. These shells are found only in the oolite and the chalk, and 83 species have been described.

Fig. 62. Shows an imaginary restoration of the Belemnosepia, as made by Dr. Buckland. (*Bridgewater Treatise Vol. 2. plate 44. fig. 1.*) exhibiting the animal with the internal shell and ink bag.

Fig. 62.



have recently been discovered in a fossil state, in England. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 303.

Nummulites.

*Descrip.* These extinct shells are so called from their resemblance to money. They are generally of very diminutive size, and belong to what are called the *foraminated polythalamous*, or many chambered shells. They are chiefly remarkable for their vast numbers, constituting often almost the entire mass of whole mountains, in the tertiary and newer secondary limestones. The Sphinx and some of the pyramids of Egypt are composed of nummulitic limestone. Fig. 63. exhibits a species of nummulite.

Fig. 63.



Nummulite.

Loligo or Cuttle Fish.

*Descrip.* It is well known that the Cuttle fish (Sepia or Loligo), is provided with a bag of ink within its body, from which the Sepia used in painting is obtained; and also with an internal bone, or in some species, a mere thin cartilaginous substance like horn, that resembles a quill. Both the ink and the pen of the Loligo

Rem. It is a very curious fact, that a substance so easily destroyed as ink, should have been so perfectly preserved in the lias limestone of Lyme Regis, that after thousands and perhaps ten thousands of ages, it can be extracted, and the paint formed from it cannot be distinguished from the best which artists now prepare! It is also interesting to learn, that for this discovery we are indebted to the industry and skill of a lady (Miss Mary Anning,) who, with others of her sex that might be named, is doing much for the science of Geology in England.

*Bivalve Shells, mostly extinct.*

Fig. 64



*Terebratula.*

*Descrip.* Of the *Terebratula*, (Fig. 64.) 30 species have been found in the graywacke; 21 in the carboniferous system; 14 in the new red sandstone; 49 in the oolite; 57 in the chalk; 18 in the tertiary strata, and 12 among living molluscs.

*Descrip.* Of the *Products*, (Fig. 65.) 21 species are found in the graywacke; 36 in the carboniferous system; and in the new red sandstone, 7: none above.

Fig. 65.

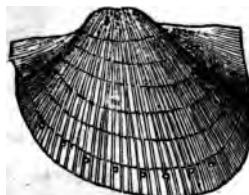
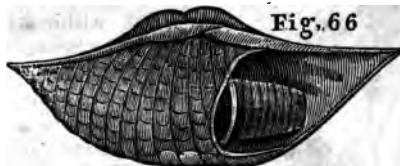


Fig. 66



Of the *Spirifer*, Fig. 66. which shows the spiral appendages within the shell as well as the external appearance, 37 species are found in the graywacke, 48 in the carboniferous system, and 7 in the red sandstone: none above.

## VERTEBRAL ANIMALS.

**Descrip.** This extensive division of the animal kingdom embraces those animals whose organization is the most perfect with man at their head. A cranium, and vertebral column, which encloses the principal part of the nervous system, and a regular skeleton, covered by muscles, constitute the principal anatomical distinction between this class and the three that have already been considered. It is divided into four well marked tribes : 1. Mammalia, 2. Birds, 3. Reptiles, 4. Fishes.

*Fishes.*

**Remark.** Ichthyology, or the history of fishes, has received much great improvements from the labors of Professor Agassiz, as developed in his great work now in the course of publication, entitled *Recherches sur les Poissons Fossiles, par L'Agassiz &c.* that it may almost be regarded as a new science. Especially is this the case in respect to fossil Ichthyology.

**Descrip.** The number of living species of fishes now known, amounts to about 8000 : and the number of fossil species to more than 850. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise* Vol. I. p. 267.

**Descrip.** Fishes are found in all the great rock formations from the graywacke upwards :—a fact which is not true of any other class of vertebral animals ; and therefore, the history of fossil fishes becomes of great importance.

**Descrip.** Agassiz divides fishes into four Orders ; deriving their characters from the scales : 1. The *Placoidians* or those whose skin is covered irregularly with plates of enamel (from  $\pi\lambda\alpha$ ; a broad plate). 2. The *Ganoidians* ; (from  $\gamma\alpha\nu\sigma$  splendour,) or those having angular scales of horny or bony plates, covered with a thick plate of enamel. 3. The *Ctenoidians*, ( $\kappa\tau\iota\iota\sigma$  a comb,) or those having jagged or pectinated scales. 4. The *Cycloidians* ( $\kappa\gamma\pi\lambda\sigma$  a circle,) or those having scales smooth and simple at their margin.

**Descrip.** Three fourths of the existing species of fish belong to the two last orders, whose existence has not been ascertained below the chalk : the remaining fourth belongs to the two first orders : which are not at all numerous now, but existed alone in all the periods during which the fossiliferous rocks below the chalk were deposited. *Agassiz in the American Journal of Science*, Vol. 30. p. 39.

**Prin.** Not one species of fish has yet been found that is

common to any two of the great geological formations; or is now living in the ocean.

*Prin.* Fossil fishes do not change insensibly as we pass vertically from one formation to another; but abruptly; and these changes occur simultaneously with those in other classes of organic remains.

*Inference.* Hence the conclusions that have been made from the history of other organic remains, are confirmed by this new branch of palæontology.

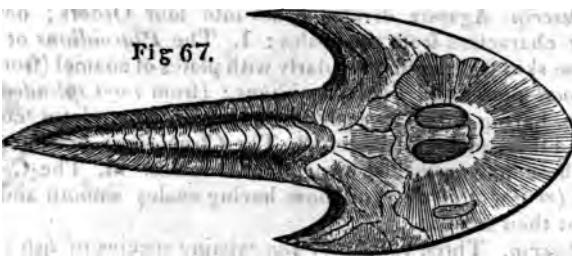
*Descrip.* Below the chalk not even any genus is found that embraces any living species: those of the carboniferous strata disappear with the deposition of the new red sandstone: those in the oolite, introduced after the epoch of the new red sandstone, suddenly vanish with the appearance of the chalk. Two thirds of those in the chalk and one third of those in the lower tertiary strata, belong to genera no longer existing. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 30. p. 40, 41.

*Remark.* This constancy in the character of fossil fishes has enabled M. Agassiz to determine the true situation of several groups of rocks in the geological scale, that geologists had been unable to fix; or had put them in the wrong place.

*Prin.* In some of the groups of animals preserved in the rocks, certain types of organization predominate; and such was the correlation between different species, that they often conform more or less to the prevailing type.

*Examples.* 1. In the older fossiliferous rocks, trilobites occur in great quantities; and in the old red sandstone is found a genus of fishes approaching in form to the trilobites. Fig. 67. exhibits a species of this kind.

Fig 67.



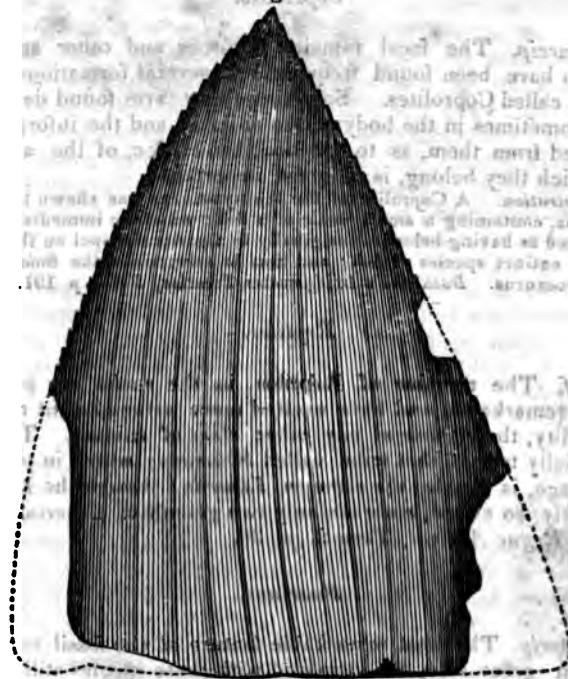
*Cephalaspis Lyelli.*

*Ex.* 2. In the secondary strata, during the deposition of the oolite, especially, saurian reptiles prevailed exceedingly. Agassiz has described 17 genera of sauroid fishes, found in all the formations from the carboniferous upward, except the tertiary: but only two genera remain among living fishes: viz. the *Lepidosteus osseus* or Boa-fish of North America; of which there exist five species and the *Calypterus* of two species. Some of these sauroid fishes in the rocks were of enormous size; their teeth being larger than those of the living crocodile.

*Sharks.*

**Descrip.** These fishes occur in a living state all over the globe; and there seems to have been no period in geological history in which they did not prevail. More than 150 species have been found fossilized. Fig. 68, shows a shark's tooth of enormous size, found on Martha's Vineyard, now in the Marine Museum in Salem. It is a good deal broken.

Fig. 68.

Shark's Tooth : *Martha's Vineyard.*

**Descrip.** Another singular variety of fish is found in all the strata below the lias, distinguished by their heterocercal or unsymmetrical tails; that is, by tails whose upper lobe extends much the farthest, by the prolongation of the vertebral column. Fig. 69. represents one of these fishes of the genus *Palaeoniscus*. Most living fishes have homocercous or equally bilobate tails.

Fig. 69.

*Palaeoniscus.**Coprolites.*

*Descrip.* The fecal remains of fishes and other animals, which have been found frequently in several formations, have been called Coprolites. Sometimes they are found detached and sometimes in the body of the animal; and the information derived from them, as to the food, habits, &c. of the animals to which they belong, is of great importance.

*Illustration.* A Coprolite of the Ichthyosaurus was shown to Prof. Agassiz, containing a small scale of a fish; which he immediately recognized as having belonged originally to a particular spot on the body of an extinct species of fish; and thus he ascertained the food of the Ichthyosaurus. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 191.

*Reptiles.*

*Def.* The remains of Reptiles in the rocks are perhaps more remarkable, and have excited more astonishment and incredulity, than those of any other class of animals. This is especially true of that tribe called *Saurians*; which in popular language, is nearly the same as *Lizards*: though the Lizards properly so called, embrace only two genera of *Lacerta*. *Cuvier's Règne Animal*, Tome 2. p. 30.

*Saurians.*

*Descrip.* The most remarkable feature of the fossil saurians is their great size, as compared with those species still found upon the earth. The crocodile is the only exception to this remark: the living species being probably as large as those that are extinct. But the true crocodiles did not begin to appear till the tertiary epoch.

*Descrip.* No fossil saurian has been found below the magnesian limestone of the new red sandstone system. It was not, however, till the oolite and wealden period that their number was large, and their development complete. That may be

truly called the *Age of Reptiles*; or the *Saurian Reign*. At least 40 species of Saurians have been described already from the oolitic group, and 11 species from the Wealden Rocks. In all the formations there have been found about 80 species.

*Def.* Dr. Buckland divides the fossil Saurians into the Marine, the Terrestrial, the Amphibious, and the Flying. *Bridge-water Treatise, Vol. I. p. 165.*

*Ichthyosaurus.*

*Descrip.* This animal, sometimes more than 30 feet long, and of which 7 or 8 species are known, had the snout of a porpoise, the teeth of a crocodile, (sometimes amounting to 180,) the head of a lizard, the vertebrae of a fish, the Sternum of an Ornithorhynchus, and the paddles of a whale: uniting in itself a combination of mechanical contrivances which are now found among three distinct classes of the animal kingdom. One of its paddles was sometimes composed of more than 100 bones; which gave it great elasticity and power, and enabled the animal to urge its way through the water with a rapid motion. Its vertebrae were more than 100. Its eye was enormously large: in one species, the orbital cavity being 14 inches in its longest direction. This eye also, had a peculiar construction to make it operate both like a telescope and a microscope: thus enabling the animal to descry its prey in the night as well as day, and at great depths in the water. The length of the jaws was sometimes more than 6 feet. Its skin was naked, some of it having been found fossil: its habits were carnivorous, its food fishes and the young of its own species; some of which it must have swallowed several feet in length. This fish-like lizard was an inhabitant of the ocean. Fig. 70, exhibits a restored *Ichthyosaurus*, by Mr. Hawkins. *Memoirs of Ichthyosauri and Plesiosauri, extinct Monsters of the ancient earth. By Thomas Hawkins Esq. Folio with 28 plates.*

Fig. 70.



*Ichthyosaurus.*

*Plesiosaurus.*

*Descrip.* This animal, of which 6 or more species have been found, has the general structure of the *Ichthyosaurus*. *See*

most remarkable difference is the great length of the neck ; which has 33 vertebræ : a larger number than in any known animal : those of living reptiles varying from 3 to 6, and those of birds from 9 to 23.

The largest perfect specimen yet found is 11 feet long ; with about 90 vertebræ. Its paddles were proportionally larger than in the Ichthyosauri. It was carnivorous ; an inhabitant of the ocean, or rather of bays and estuaries : where it probably used its long neck for seizing fish beneath, and perhaps flying reptiles, above the waters. Fig. 71, exhibits a restoration of one of the most remarkable species, the *P. Dolichodeirus*, by Mr. Hawkins.

Fig. 71.



Plesiosaurus.

*Remark.* According to Dr. Harlan's Medical and Physical Researches, Ichthyosauri and Plesiosauri have been found in the secondary rocks of the United States. He has also described another gigantic reptile from this country under the name of *Batrachiosaurus Missouriensis*. *Mining Review for January, 1839, p. 10.*

#### *Mosasaurus.*

*Descrip.* Up to the time of the deposition of the chalk, the Ichthyosaurus and Plesiosaurus appear to have ruled in the ocean : But then they disappeared, and the Mosasaurus took their place, to keep the multiplication of the species of other animals within proper limits. It was most nearly related in its structure to the Monitor, a species of lizard now living. While the head of the largest monitor does not exceed five inches in length, that of the Mosasaurus is 4 feet long ; and the whole animal 25 feet in length : while the monitor is only 5 feet in length. It had paddles instead of legs ; and the number of its vertebræ was 133.

#### *Megalosaurus.*

*Descrip.* This name (meaning a great saurian,) has been given by Dr. Buckland to a gigantic terrestrial reptile, from 40 to 50 feet long, allied to the Crocodile and Monitor in struc-

ture, and found in the oolite. The animal was carnivorous; and in the structure of its teeth are combined the knife, the saw, and the sabre. Its principal food was probably crocodiles and tortoises.

*Iguanodon.*

*Remark.* For our knowledge of this most gigantic of all the reptiles of a former world, we are indebted to the industry and scientific acumen of Dr. Mantell, who found its bones along with those of the *Megalosaurus*, *Hylaeosaurus*, *Plesiosaurus*, *Crocodile*, &c. in the Wealden Rocks in England; a fresh water, or rather an estuary formation, extending over more than 1000 square miles. It must once have formed the delta of a large river, which has disappeared, as well as the country from which it originated. *Wonders of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 368.

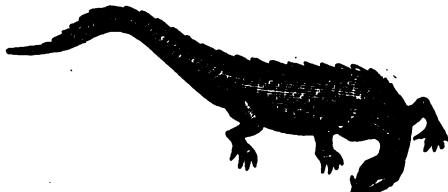
*Descrip.* This animal approaches nearest in its structure, especially that of the teeth, to the living Iguana: a reptile of the warmer parts of this continent; and hence its name; signifying an animal with teeth like the Iguana. Its average length could not have been less than 70 feet, and Dr. Mantell thinks some individuals must have exceeded 100 feet: Circumference of the body, 14 1-2 feet: length of the tail, 52 1-2 feet: do. of the hind foot, 6 1-2 feet: circumference of the thigh, more than 7 feet! The form of the teeth shows it to have been herbivorous, like the living Iguana. It had a horn 4 inches long upon the snout, like some species of Iguana. Fig. 72, which represents an Iguana, will probably give some idea of the Iguanodon. \*

\* In looking at Mr. Martin's thrilling picture, that forms the Frontispiece to Dr. Mantell's *Wonders of geology*, entitled *The Country of the Iguanodon Restored*, one cannot but be reminded of Milton's graphic description of Satan.

" With head uplift above the waves and eyes  
That sparkling blazed, his other parts besides  
Frone on the flood, extended long and large  
Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge  
As whom the fables name of monstrous size,  
Titanian, or earth born, that warred on Jove.  
Briareos or Typhon, whom the den  
By ancient Tarsus held, or that sea beast  
Leviathan, which God of all his works  
Created hugest that swim the ocean stream.

*Paradise Lost*, Book 1. line 192.

Fig. 72.



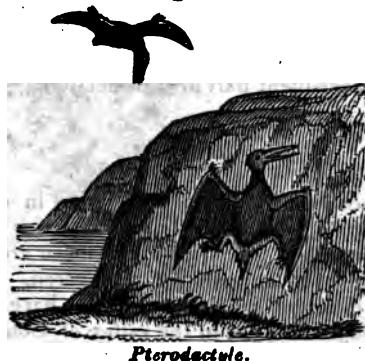
Iguana.

## Pterodactyle.

*Remark.* Of all the fossil animals probably this is the most heteroclitic, and at first view, monstrous. Hence anatomists were unable for a long time to refer it to its true place among animals; some pronouncing it a bird, some a reptile, and some a bat. But Cuvier at last developed its true characters, and proved it to be a beautiful example of the wisdom that adapts creatures to peculiar and varied modes of existence.

*Descrip.* This animal had the head and neck of a bird, the mouth of a reptile, the wings of a bat, and the body and tail of a mammifer. Its teeth, as well as other parts of its structure, show that it could not have been a bird; and its osteological characters separate it from the tribe of bats. But in many respects it had the characters of a reptile. The outer toe of its fore feet was enormously elongated, to furnish support, it is probable, for a membranous wing. By this means it was doubtless able to fly like the bat; while the fingers with claws projecting from their wings, enabled them to creep or climb. When their wings were folded, they could probably walk on two feet; and it is most likely also, they could swim. Their eyes were enormously large; so that they could seek their prey in the night. They probably fed on insects chiefly; though perhaps, also, they had the power of diving for fish. Eight species, from the size of a snipe to that of a cormorant, have been found in the oolite and lias in England, and on the continent of Europe, at Solenhofen. Fig. 73, shows several of these animals restored.

Fig. 73.



Pterodactyle.

*Remark.* "Thus," says Dr. Buckland, "like Milton's fiend, all qualified for all services, and all elements, the Pterodactyle was a fit companion for the kindred reptiles that swarmed in the seas, or crawled on the shores of a turbulent planet.

"The Fiend,  
O'er bog, or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,  
With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,  
And swims or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies."  
*Paradise Lost, Book 2. Line 947.*

"With flocks of suck-like creatures flying in the air, and shoals of no less monstrous Ichthyosauri and Plesiosauri swarming in the ocean, and gigantic Crocodiles and Tortoises crawling on the shores of the primeval lakes and rivers; air, sea, and land must have been strangely tenanted in these early periods of our infant world." *Bridgewater Treatise Vol. 1. p. 224.*

#### *Crocodiles and Tortoises.*

*Descrip.* Of twelve species of the crocodile family now living, three are Alligators, eight true crocodiles, with a short and broad snout, and one, the Gavial, with a long and narrow beak, adapted for feeding on fish. Of the six or more fossil species, all those in the secondary rocks approach in structure the Gavial; probably because few other animals then existed but fish on which they could feed. These Gavial saurians are called *Tekosauri* and *Steneosauri*. Of the former, one has been found 18 feet long, with 140 teeth. The fossil crocodiles with short snouts, differ so little from existing species, as to need no description.

*Descrip.* Tortoises, both marine, fresh water, and terrestrial.

have been found fossil in all the formations above the coal formation. One of these in the Muschelkalk, a sea turtle, was 8 feet long. Numerous tracks of tortoises have also been found on the new red sandstone in Scotland: but these will be described in a subsequent part of this section.

### *Birds.*

Twenty species of birds have been found in diluvium; ten in the tertiary strata, and recently, one species of Grallae, or Waders, in the wealden formation: and these are all the fossil relics of this order of animals yet discovered. The tracks of more than 20 different species of animals have, however, recently been brought to light in the valley of Connecticut river, in Massachusetts and Connecticut, on what is thought to be the equivalent of European new red sandstone; and a large part of these resemble the impressions of bird's feet more than those of any other known animals. But these will be more particularly noticed farther on.

### MAMMALIA.

*Descrip.* There is reason to believe that the Marsupial Mammalia appeared earlier on the globe than any other animals of this class. For Dr. Buckland has found two undoubted species of Marsupials in the oolite in England: and the tracks of another species of a similar animal in red sandstone, near Hildburghausen in Saxony, as well as in two places in England, have recently been described; as will be more fully detailed in another place.

*Descrip.* With the above exception, all the other fossil mammalia occur in the tertiary strata and diluvium. In the Eocene tertiary, as many as 50 species have come to light. Cuvier described 78 species in his great work, the *Ossemens Fossiles*; 49 of which are extinct: and since that time, the number has been increased to nearly 200.

*Descrip.* Among these fossil animals, are many of existing genera, and so nearly related to existing species, that a particular description will be unnecessary. Such are the fossil species of the Rhinoceros, Hippopotamus, hog, cat, glutton, horse, ox, deer, bear, hyæna, weazel, hare, rabbit, rat, mouse, &c. In general, however, the fossil species are of a larger size than those now living; indicating a warmer climate when they were upon the globe.

**Descrip.** The marine fossil mammalia, such as the whale, the dolphin, the seal, the walrus, and lamentin, occur as we should expect, in tertiary strata deposited in the ocean; and some of the terrestrial mammalia are found mixed with marine animals in salt water formations; having been drifted into the ocean by rivers. Other terrestrial mammalia are found in fresh water formations, deposited at the bottom of lakes and ponds during the tertiary epoch. Others occur in caverns and fissures, which existed in the dry land during the same period: and finally, similar remains are found dispersed through the diluvium, which is spread over formations of every age.

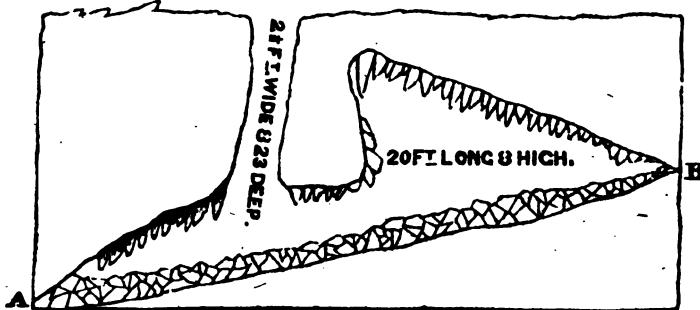
**Descrip.** The history of bone caverns and fissures, as described by Dr. Buckland in his splendid work entitled *Reliquiae Diluvianæ*, deserves a more extended notice than can here be given. From a careful examination of these osseous caverns, by Dr. Buckland, it appears that some of them, as that of Kirkdale, Kent's Hole, &c. in England, were the residence of hyænas for a long time previous to the Historic Period; and that these animals dragged in thither great quantities of bones of other animals on which they fed. This is proved by the broken and gnawed state of the bones, and by the great quantity of coprolites belonging to the hyæna found in the caverns. Other caverns appear to have been the abodes of bears for a long period: as those of the limestones of central Germany. In one of these, the cave of Kuhloh, more than 500 cubic feet of black animal dust, impressively denominated the *dust of death*, were found, resulting from the decomposition of bears; which must have required at least 2500 of these animals! The bones of the Ossaceous Breccia, found in fissures in Somersetshire in England, and on the northern shores of the Mediterranean; belong mostly to animals that fell into fissures that were afterwards filled with diluvial detritus *Reliquiae Diluvianæ* p. 137, and 148. *London* 1823. *De la Beche's Manual of Geology*, p. 181.

**Descrip.** Sometimes ossiferous caverns have been used by man as a place of habitation, or more frequently as a place of sepulture. And hence his bones, as well as fragments of pottery, and other relics of a rude people, sometimes are found so mixed with the remains of extinct animals, as to lead to the inference that they were deposited during the same period. Indeed, in some of these caverns in the south of France, it is still believed by some geologists, that the remains of men were of contemporaneous deposition with those of the extinct mammalia. The English geologists appear to be decidedly of the opposite opinion.

*Descrip.* Osseous breccias have been found in Australasia; containing bones of the kangaroo, wombat, dasyurus, koala, halmaturus, elephant, hypsiprimum, &c. most of which are animals living in that country.

*Descrip.* In the United States a few ossiferous caverns have been found, though none of them exactly corresponding with the European caverns. Some of them appear to have been filled with fragments of rocks and bones which were partially cemented by stalagmite, during the alluvial or historical period. An example of this kind has been communicated to me by Prof. L. F. Clarke of the college of East Tennessee, in a letter dated Aug. 23d, 1838. The cavern is situated in the town of Chittenden, Vt. from 2000 to 3000 feet above Otter Creek, and in limestone interstratified with mica slate, having an easterly dip of about  $65^{\circ}$ . The bottom of the cavern has a westerly slope, as shown in Fig. 74, which is an imperfect sketch from memory.

Fig. 74.



Bone Cavern: Chittenden Vermont.

The roof and sides of the cavern are covered with large stalactites and the bottom with loose fragments of rocks, in many places to the depth of at least 5 feet. The fragments at the surface are mostly cemented together by stalagmite, but rarely at much depth. The bones are scattered among the fragments, and are much broken, and many of them gnawed by the teeth of some small animal. These bones, so far as they have been anatomically examined, appear to belong to existing animals; among which those of the bat were very abundant: and it is supposed that some of them belonged to the wolf, racoon, &c. They appear very fresh, still retaining most of their animal matter, much more than the bones from the English caverns. From all the facts I infer, that this cavern was produced by running water which probably had an outlet at A, and that the fragments of stone were thus accumulated, while the stalagmite was forming and the bones were being collected, both by carnivorous animals, and by the death of others that might have made this cavern their habitation, during the alluvial or historical period. I ought to say, however, that Prof. Clark is inclined to regard the period in which this work was accomplished, as antediluvial: and he is not aware of any opening in the rock beyond A.

## Early Pachydermata.

**Descrip.** In the older tertiary strata around the city of Paris, Baron Cuvier has brought to light more than 40 extinct quadrupeds, many of them allied to the modern pachydermata, or thick skinned animals. Fig. 75, exhibits the form of the *Anoplotherium gracile*, which was of the size and form of the gazelle, living like the deer and the antelope. Fig. 76 is the *Anoplotherium commune*; an animal, about the size of the wild boar, with the means of swimming with facility. Fig. 77, is the *Palæotherium magnum*, of the size of the horse, but more thick and clumsy. Probably it had a trunk. Fig. 78, is the *Palæotherium minus*, of the size of the roebuck.

Fig. 75.

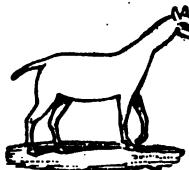


Fig. 77.

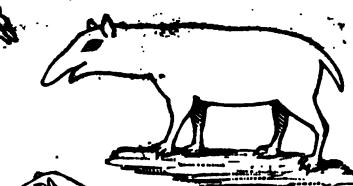
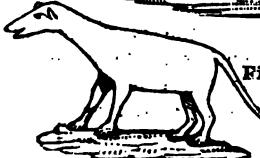


Fig. 78.



Fig. 76.



75 *Anoplotherium gracile* : 76 *Anoplotherium commune* : 77 *Palæotherium magnum* : 78 *P. minus*.

## Mammoth, or Fossil Elephant.

**Descrip.** Two species of living elephant are known; the Asiatic, or Indian, which extends only to the 31st degree of north latitude: and the African, which occurs so far south as the Cape of Good Hope. A third species is found in a fossil state; especially in the northern parts of Asia and Europe; as well as America. It is this extinct species, that goes by the name of *mammoth*—an Arabic word (*behemoth*), signifying elephant. Fig. 79, exhibits the skeleton of the remarkable specimen found encased in frozen mud on the shores of the arctic ocean, in Siberia, with its softer parts preserved, as has been already described. This skeleton is now deposited in the Museum of Natural History in St. Petersburg. Its length is 16 feet; and its height 9 feet. Its hair, of which 30 pounds were preserved,

consisted of black bristles, 15 inches long, mixed with wool of a reddish brown color.

Fig. 79.



Mammoth.

Mastodon.

*Descrip.* Although the mastodon is frequently called the mammoth in this country, where the remains of the largest species are abundant, yet it differs generically from the elephant in the form of its teeth; as may be seen in Figs. 80 and 81 below. Fig. 80 is a side view of the grinder of the Mastodon, and Fig. 81, represents the flat surface of the Mammoth's grinder.

Fig. 80.



Fig. 81.



**Descrip.** No less than seven species of mastodon have been discovered in a fossil state; viz. three in Europe, two in South America, one in the United States, and one in India. The largest species, *M. maximus*, has been found in almost every part of the United States; though most abundantly in the *salt licks* of Kentucky, Ohio, &c. The most easterly point where the bones of these animals have been found, is Berlin in Connecticut. An almost entire skeleton has been put up in the Museum of Mr. Peale in Philadelphia, which is 15 feet long, and 11 feet high. This was found in Orange County, New York. The most remarkable locality in this country is at the Big Boné Lick in Kentucky; where a vast number of bones of various extinct animals are imbedded in dark colored mud and gravel, which appears to have been formerly the bottom of a marsh. This spot has been examined by William Cooper, Esq. with his usual discrimination and accuracy; and he is of opinion that the deposite containing the bones is to be regarded as diluvial. He estimates that the bones of 100 mastodons, 20 elephants, 2 oxen, 2 deer, and one megalonyx, have already been carried from this spot.

*Rhinoceros, Hippopotamus, Hyæna, Horse, Ox, Deer,  
Sivatherium, Monkey, Camel, &c.*

**Descrip.** Most of these animals in their fossil state, differ so little from the existing species, that they need not be particularly described in this work. They are generally however, of larger size than the living species. The rhinoceros found undecayed in the fossil gravel of Siberia, has already been noticed; and several other species of this animal occur in Europe and in India, associated with the bones of the elephant, also with several species of hippopotamus, and one or two of oxen, aurochs, and deer. The horns of the fossil ox, are sometimes very large: in one example 31 inches long. So also the famous fossil elk of Ireland, (*Cervus giganteus*,) had horns that measured 10 feet 10 inches between their tips. *Jameson's Cuvier's Theory of the Earth*, p. 246. The most interesting remains of the hyæna are those found in caverns. (See *Reliquæ Diluvianæ*.) The *Sivatherium* is an extinct animal recently found in India, in concretionary diluvium, larger than the rhinoceros, furnished with four horns and a proboscis, and forming an intermediate link between the ruminantia and pachydermata. In the same deposite were found the remains of a gigantic species of monkey and of a camel. Another species of monkey has also been discovered in tertiary deposits in France: so that the important

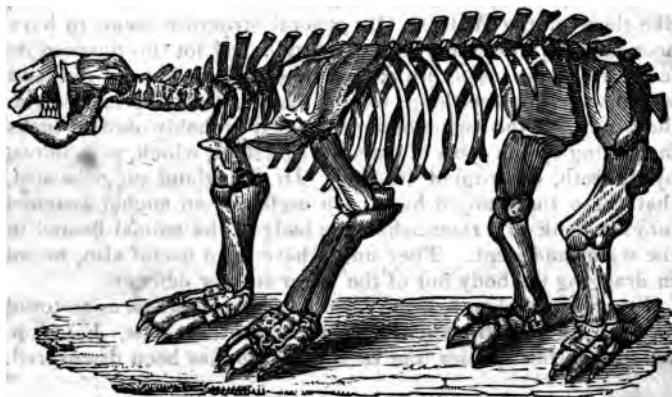
fact seems now well established, that the animals approaching nearest to man in their structure, have been found in a fossil state. *Wonders of Geology, Vol. I. p. 138 and 226.*

*Megatherium.*

*Descrip. Sloth and Armadillo.* Because the Sloth (*Bradypus tardigradus*) is not adapted for walking on the ground, some writers, and even some naturalists, (Buffon, &c.) have ridiculed its structure, as if it indicated want of wisdom in its structure. But it now appears that the animal was intended to live continually upon trees; and that its long fore legs, with long and very crooked claws, are admirably adapted for this purpose. The Armadillo, as is well known, is covered with a bony armour for defence against enemies, dust, &c. The few living species of this animal are small and confined chiefly to South America where they burrow like the woodchuck.

*Descrip.* The Megatherium is an enormous extinct animal, which was once abundant in the vast plains or pampas of the same continent. They have been lately found by Mr. Darwin over an extent of 600 miles, accompanied with bones and teeth of five other quadrupeds, some of them of a similar construction. Dr. Mitchell and Mr. Copper have also described bones of this animal from the island of Skiddaway, on the coast of Georgia. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise, Vol. II. p. 20. Annals of N. Y. Lyceum, May, 1824.* It was larger than the rhinoceros, and its proportions were perfectly colossal. With a head and neck like those of the sloth, its legs and feet exhibit the character of an armadillo, and the ant eater. Its body was 12 feet long, and 8 feet high. Its forefeet were a yard in length, and more than 12 inches wide; terminated by gigantic claws. Across its haunches it measured five feet; and its thigh bone was nearly three times as thick as that of the elephant. Its spinal marrow must have been a foot in diameter; and its tail, at the part nearest the body, twice as large, or six feet in circumference! Its teeth were admirably adapted for cutting vegetable substances; and its general structure and strength seem intended to fit it for digging in the ground for roots on which it principally fed. Fig. 82, exhibits the entire skeleton of this animal, which exists in the museum at Madrid, in Spain. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise, Vol. I. p. 139.*

Fig. 82.



Megatherium.

*Rew.* It has been generally supposed that the Megatherium was covered with a bony armour, like the Armadillo: But Mr. Owen, the distinguished comparative anatomist, is of opinion, after a careful examination, that such was not the case; and that this animal approached more nearly in character to the ant-eaters and sloths, than to the Armadillo. *Lond. and Edin. Philos. Mag.* July 1839.

#### *Megalonyx.*

*Descrip.* This animal was first described by Mr. Jefferson, who mistook its characters. It was found in the nitre caverns of Virginia and Kentucky, and has since been discovered in other places. It was of the size of the ox, and appears to have been nearly related to the sloths.

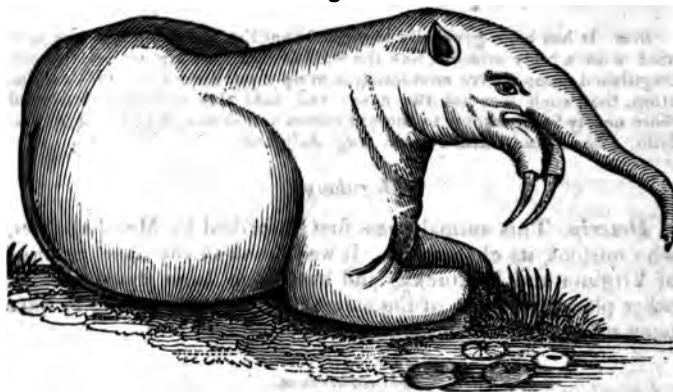
#### *Dinotherium.*

*Descrip.* Until recently the mammoth and the mastodon have been supposed the largest of all the terrestrial mammalia that have ever inhabited the earth: But they must give place to the *Dinotherium*, described by Cuvier as a gigantic tapir, but recently by Professor Kaup, a distinguished German naturalist, as a new genus between the tapir and the mastodon; and adapted to that lacustrine condition of the earth which seems to have been so common during the deposition of the tertiary strata. Its remains have been found in tertiary strata, in the south of France, in Austria, Bavaria, and especially in Hesse Darmstadt. Its length must have been as much as 18 feet. One of its most

remarkable peculiarities consisted in two enormous tusks, at the anterior extremity of the lower jaw, which curved downwards, like those of the Walrus. Its general structure seems to have been adapted to digging in the ground ; and for this purpose its feet as well as tusks, projecting a foot or two beyond the jaws which were four feet long, were intended. It lived principally in the water like the hippopotamus ; and it probably used its tusks for tearing up the roots of aquatic vegetables, which, as is shown by its teeth, constituted its food. Dr. Buckland suggests also, that these tusks might have been useful as an anchor fastened into the bank of a river, while the body of the animal floated in the water and slept. They might have been useful also, to aid in dragging the body out of the water and for defence.

Fig. 83, is a sketch of the *Dinotherium giganteum* as restored by Prof. Kaup. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 135. Another species, the *D. Bavanicum*, has been discovered.

Fig. 83.



Dinotherium.

#### *Ichnolithology: or the History of Fossil Footmarks.*

*Descrip.* This singular branch of palaeontology has but lately begun to attract the attention of geologists ; since it is only within a few years that genuine examples of the tracks of animals in stone have been found. It is, indeed, and long has been the common belief, that such impressions are frequent ; but the geologist usually finds that they are merely the effects of disintegration or aqueous action, by which the softer parts of the rock are more worn away than the harder parts. The following

are all the well authenticated examples of fossil footmarks that have been discovered up to the present time.

*Example 1.* In the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh for 1828, Dr. Duncan has given an account, with drawings, of the tracks of a quadruped on new red sandstone in the quarry of Corn Cockle Muir, in Dumfries-shire, Scotland. These tracks have been found there in great abundance, on many successive layers of the stone, to the depth of 45 feet; or as low as the quarry had been opened. They occur also in another quarry, 10 miles south of Corn Cockle Muir, where one series of tracks extended from 20 to 30 feet. Dr. Buckland seems to have satisfactorily shown that they were made by tortoises. *Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 259.

*Example 2.* In 1831, Mr. G. P. Scrope found numerous footmarks of small animals on the layers of Forest Marble, north of Bath in England. They occur along with ripple marks, and were probably made by Crustacea, crawling along the bottom of an estuary. The impression of the tail or the stomach is sometimes visible between the rows of tracks. *Journal of the Royal Institution of London*, 1831. p. 538.

*Example 3.* In 1834, an account was published in Europe of some remarkable fossil footmarks on the *gres bigarre* (new red sandstone,) at Hessberg, near Hildburghausen, in Saxony. Accounts of these impressions have been given by Drs. Hohnbaum and Sickler, Professor Kaup, M. Link, and Baron Humboldt. The largest track appears to have been made by a marsupial animal, whose hind foot was 8 inches long. This animal Prof. Kaup has named *Chirotherium*, from the resemblance of its track to a human hand. Some of the tracks appear to have been made by tortoises; and M. Link, who has made out four distinct species from these tracks, suggests that some of them may have been made by gigantic Batrachians. (Frogs, salamanders, &c.) *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 263 and Vol. II. p. 36. *Wonders of Geology*, Vol. II. p. 423. *Am. Journal Science*, Vol. XXX. p. 191. Fig. 84, shows a few tracks of the *Chirotherium* on a slab of sandstone from Hessberg. (See specimens in the Cabinet at Amherst College.)

Fig. 84.

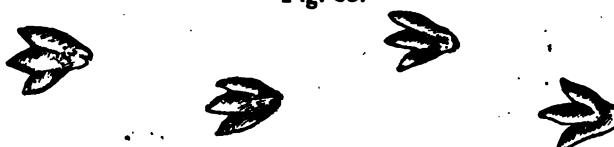


*Example 4.* In 1834, a few very distinct tracks resembling those of birds, were discovered in the red sandstone of the Connecticut Valley, at Montague in Massachusetts. Subsequent examination discovered similar impressions at several quarries in the same valley and State: and an account of seven species was given in the American Journal of Science for January, 1836, under the name of *Ornithichnites*, or *stony bird tracks*. Some of them are very small, the toes not being more than half an inch long; and the length of the step not more than 3 or 4 inches: while others are of enormous size: the foot being 17 inches long, including a claw of 2 inches; and the length of the step from 4 to 6 feet. In another species, if we include a singular impression behind the toes, that appears to have been made by a large heel, the whole length of the track is 2 feet, and of the step, 6 feet.

Since the time when the account above mentioned was published, I have made still farther discoveries on this subject. I am now acquainted with more than 20 species of these impressions, occurring at 16 quarries,

in a distance of 80 miles, along the banks of Connecticut river, between the north line of Massachusetts, and Middletown in Connecticut. So perfect is the impression in some cases, that one specimen shows the pitted, ridged, and furrowed skin, or the bottom of the foot. I have also examined a much larger number of the feet and tracks of different sorts of living animals, and the evidence seems still quite conclusive, that a large proportion of the fossil tracks must have been made by birds of the Grallæ family. Yet some species greatly resemble the tracks of Saurians, though I have almost no evidence that any of them were made by animals having more than two feet. Hence I have denominated such tracks *Sauroidichnites*; that is, tracks resembling those of Saurians: And perhaps it would have been more consonant to the cautious spirit of genuine science, to denominate the others *Ornithoidichnites*, rather than *Ornithichnites*; that is, *tracks resembling those of birds*, instead of asserting that they are actually such. I strongly suspect, indeed, that nearly all these tracks were made by birds; though some of these birds might have partaken largely of the *Sauroid type*, which seems to have been introduced about the same epoch, according to the principle stated on page 130. Yet so long as any doubt remains on the subject, it may be wiser to give names which do not imply absolute knowledge. A few bones lately discovered in the same sandstone formation, inspire the hope that certainty on this subject may reward persevering enquiry. Fig. 85, shows four tracks on a slab of gray sandstone in my possession from South Hadley, Massachusetts. (See numerous specimens in Amherst College.)

Fig. 85.



*Example 5.* In the summer of 1838, tracks of the Chirotherium, tortoises, and saurian reptiles were discovered in the new red sandstone, at the quarries of Storeton Hill, below the Meuse and the Dee, in England. The largest track of the Chirotherium is 9 inches long, and 6 inches broad: Length of the step, 21 to 22 inches. At least 6 species of tracks occur at this spot. A track of another species of Chirotherium, of still larger size, has been found, probably in the red sandstone, near Tarporly: and Sir Philip Egerton is of opinion that this is different from that at Storeton, and that both differ from the one found at Hessberg; so that evidence is now obtained of the existence of three species of Chirotherium, at the epoch of the new red sandstone. *The Mining Review*, for Dec. 1838, p. 180.

*Example 6.* At the meeting of the British Association for the advancement of Science in the summer of 1839, Dr. Ward gave an account of some fossil footmarks discovered on the new red sandstone near Shrewsbury, in England. These impressions are trifid, like those in the sandstone of the Connecticut valley. The three toes appear to have been armed with long nails; and in this respect, also, they correspond to those in our country. I have, however, seen only a brief account of Dr. Ward's communication. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 38, p. 127, January 1840.

*Example 7.* In Prof. Leonhard and Bronn's *Journal of Mineralogy, Geognosy, Geology, and Palaeontology*, for 1839, Dr. Cotta has given an account of some singular footmarks in new red sandstone in Saxony, some 20 or 30 miles from Leipsic. The form of these tracks is very peculiar. They are two toed; or rather resemble a horse shoe, except in being usually somewhat angular. Dr. Cotta could not find any regular arrangement of the tracks; yet he speaks of obtaining full evidence that the impressions were produced by the feet of animals; and he thinks it most probable of biped animals. He found only figures in relief on the underside of just such a layer as contains the tracks at Helsingburg. *American Journal of Science* Vol. 38, p. 255.

I have in my possession a few impressions in sandstone from Wethersfield in Connecticut, which nearly correspond to those described by Dr. Cotta: And although I have suspected that they must have resulted from an organic agency, yet I have not ventured to call them tracks: nor have the statements of Dr. Cotta which I have seen, removed all doubt from my mind in respect to those which he describes. I have regarded it as a *sine qua non* on this subject, that we should be able to point out the successive steps of the animal. Yet if these impressions be not tracks, I know not what they are; though I have been rather disposed to believe that they may be explained by a peculiar concretionary structure. I speak here, however, of those from Wethersfield; for this is one of those cases, where I do not believe any one competent to decide, who has not seen the specimens; and I have not seen those from Saxony.

*Rem. 1.* I have recently received specimens of the tracks of *Chirotherium*, from Hildburghausen in Saxony: and I find that they correspond in general appearance to those from New England: although the shape of the foot is quite different.

*Rem. 2.* It will be seen that I do not adduce as an example of fossil footmarks, the impressions of the human foot, which were found on limestone on the banks of the river Mississippi, in front of the city of St. Louis, in Missouri, and which have been described by Mr. Schoolcraft in the 5th volume of the *American Journal of Science*. I omit them because I do not think there is sufficient evidence that they are natural impressions. They occur in a blue limestone, containing abundance of encrinites and other analogous remains, and which is probably the carboniferous limestone of Europe. (*Featherstonehaugh's Report*. 1835 p. 28. &c.) It will surely require strong evidence to prove, in opposition to all that geology teaches in every other part of the globe, that man existed when the limestone of the Mississippi valley was being deposited at the bottom of the ocean. Yet I am prepared to believe that he did, when on splitting open layers of that limestone, continuous human steps shall be found impressed on the lower layer, and in relief on the upper. But only one pair of footmarks have yet been found, and those upon the exposed surface of the rock. They were probably formed by the ancient inhabitants of the country, or by the early white settlers, who had iron tools. If they are as perfect as the drawing in the *Journal of Science*, they could hardly have been formed by water: and yet water often produces very remarkable imitative forms in limestone.

*Remark 3.* It is a singular fact, that nearly all the examples of fossil footmarks hitherto discovered, occur upon some member of the new red sandstone system. There must have been something peculiarly favorable, either in the nature or mode of deposition of that rock, to the preservation of these impressions.

*Inference.* These impressions must probably in every instance have been made on the shores of an estuary, between high and low tide mark: for if made upon dry land, it is difficult to conceive how they should have been preserved from being obliterated by atmospheric agencies; or how matter should have been deposited above them to preserve their form: Yet the fact that the impressions of rain drops sometimes accompany the tracks, (as will be described shortly) shows that when impressed the mud must have been above the water. Probably the influx of the tide brought in silt enough to preserve the impressions.

*Impressions of Rain Drops.*

*Descrip.* In the same formation of red sandstone that contains the footmarks in England, are found most distinct impressions of what appear to have been the drops of rain. In the Storeton quarry, where are found the tracks of the *Chirotherium* "the under surface of two strata at the depth of 32 or 35 feet from the top of the quarry, presents a remarkably blistered or watery appearance, being densely covered by minute hemispheres of the same substance as the sandstone. These projections are casts in relief of indentations in the upper surface of a thin subjacent bed of clay, and due in Mr. Cunningham's opinion to drops of rain." *Lond. and Ed. Philos. Mag.* 1839. Sometimes these impressions are perfect hemispheres: in other cases they are irregular and are elongated in a particular direction, as if the drops struck the surface obliquely: appearing in fact as if a wind had accompanied the rain. Tracks of a small animal accompany these impressions. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 37 p. 371. Dr. Ward describes exactly the same appearance in the new red sandstone near Shrewsbury in connection with tracks and ripple marks. *Am. Jour. Sci.* Vol. 38. p. 127.

I have specimens of precisely the same character as the above from Wethersfield in Connecticut; where they occur with foot marks and ripple marks. Like the English specimens, (which however I have not seen,) these show distinctly the direction of the wind when the rain fell. Furthermore, I have formed a fine clay into paste, and on sprinkling water upon it, precisely the same indentations are produced as exist upon the sandstone.

*¶ Rem.* It is a most interesting thought, that while millions of men, who have striven hard to transmit some trace of their existence to future generations, have sunk into utter oblivion, the simple footsteps of animals, that existed thousands, nay, tens of thousands of years ago, should remain as fresh and distinct as if yesterday impressed; even though nearly every other vestige of their existence has vanished: Nay, still more strange is it, that even the patterning of a shower at that distant period, should have left marks equally distinct, and registered with infallible certainty, the direction of the wind!

*Synoptical View of the Fossil Footmarks.*

*Remark.* If it be desirable to classify the fossil footmarks that have been described, perhaps the following arrangement, which will give a synoptical view of the whole subject, may answer till a better one is proposed.

## CLASS. ICHNOLITES.

## Order 1. POLYPODICHNITES.

One species made by a crustacean on Forest Marble, near Bath, England.

## Order 2. TETRAPODICHNITES.

1. Three species made by Chirotheria: two in England and one in Germany.  
 2. By Saurians in England.  
 3. By Tortoises in Scotland and Germany. } Nine species in all.  
 4. By Batrachians in Germany.

## Order 3. DIPODICHNITES.

1. *In Massachusetts and Connecticut.*a. *Sauroidichnites.*

1. Barrattii.
2. Palmatus.
3. Minutans.
4. Longipes.
5. Polemarchius.
6. } Species to be named
7. } and described in my
8. } Final Report, on the
9. } Geology of Massa-
10. } chusetts.
11. }

b. *Ornithoidichnites.*1. *Pachydactylus.*

1. Giganteus.
2. Tuberous.
3. Divaricatus.
4. Cuneatus.
5. Parvulus.

2. *Leptodactylus.*

6. Ingens.
7. Diversus.

8. *Deanii.*
9. *Tenuis.*
10. *Minimus.*
11. *Minusculus.*
12. *Tetradactyles.*
13. *Gracilis.*
14. *Macroductyles.*
15. \_\_\_\_\_

*2. In Europe.*

1. One or more species near Shrewsbury in England.
2. Do. In Saxony.

*12. General Inferences.*

*Remark.* I have passed over several important inferences derived chiefly from paleontology, because they were not deducible from any one statement that has been made, and I thought it best to present them in the conclusion of this Section with a summary of the proof.

*Inference 1.* The present continents of the globe, (except perhaps some high mountains,) have for a long period constituted the bottom of the ocean, and have been subsequently elevated.

*Proof.* 1. Two thirds at least of these continents are covered with rocks, often several thousand feet thick, abounding in marine organic remains; which must have been quietly deposited, along with the sand, mud, and calcareous or ferruginous matter, in which they are enveloped, and which could have accumulated but slowly. 2. The primitive regions of the globe bear marks of powerful abrasion by water from some cause no longer acting upon them; and which can be explained only by supposing the waters of the ocean to have flowed over them for a long period. 3. The secondary and primary stratified rocks are almost universally fractured and raised up at various angles, just as they would have been if lifted from the bottom of the ocean by a force acting beneath them. 4. Anticlinal ridges are so frequently found with a nucleus of unstratified rocks, as to point us to a sufficient cause, viz. volcanic agency, for the elevations that appear to have taken place.

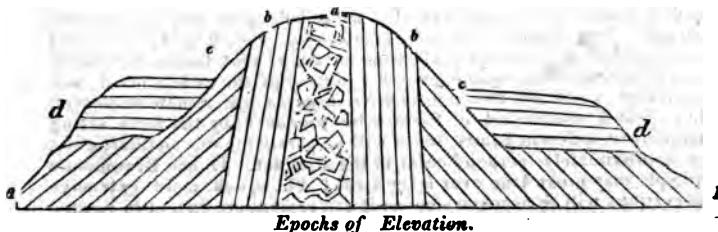
*Remark.* This inference is to be regarded as probably the most important principle in geology, and as established on an immovable foundation.

*Inference 2.* Different continents, and different parts of the same continent, appear to have been elevated at different epochs.

*Proof.* Let A. B. Fig. 86, represent a mountain ridge, with an axis (*a*) of unstratified rock. Upon *a* let the three systems of strata *bb*, *cc*, and *dd*, rest upon the axis, and upon one an-

other, unconformably, and dipping at different angles, except *dd*, which suppose horizontal. Now it is obvious that the formations *cc*, and *bb*, must have been elevated previous to the deposition of *dd*; otherwise the latter would have partaken of the upward movement. And if there be no regular member of the

Fig. 86.



series of rocks wanting, between *d*, and *c*, it is obvious that we thus ascertain the geological, though not the chronological epoch, when *cc* was elevated. *cc*, however, is unconformable to *bb*; and therefore *bb*, was partially elevated before the deposition of *cc*: In other words, *bb* has experienced at least two elevatory movements. Now this is a just representation of the actual state of things in the earth's crust; and hence by ascertaining the dip of the formations that are in juxtaposition, we ascertain the different epochs of elevation.

*Facts.* By the application of these principles, it is found that the mountains of Europe have been elevated at no less than twelve different epochs; the oldest of which dates as far back as the time when the slates of Westmoreland were tilted up: and the most recent, (the principal chain of the Alps,) is said to be subsequent to the deposition of the tertiary strata. So far as the subject has been examined in this country, it appears that five or six systems or epochs of elevation can be traced in our mountains: though since the deposition of our secondary rocks, scarcely any movement has taken place: and though Elie de Beaumont suggests that the elevation of the Andes was so recent that it may have produced the historical deluge, yet the eastern side of our continent is probably of an older date than most of Europe.

*Prin.* According to Elie de Beaumont, to whom we are indebted for the first extensive generalizations on this subject, although Von Buch and other geologists had previously made local applications of the same principles, chains of contemporaneous elevation are parallel to one another, and "to the semi-circumference of the earth's surface:" and hence he infers that mountain chains were elevated at the same epoch though on different continents, if they are parallel: that the chain of

the Alleghanies, for instance, belongs to a system of elevation which includes the Pyrenees, part of the Appenines, the mountains of the Morea, a part of the Hartz mountains, Mount Atlas, and other ridges in Africa, the Carpathian mountains, Mount Carmel, and Sinai, a part of the Caucasian chain, and the Ghauts. In the present state of our knowledge of these mountains, this conclusion is unwarranted ; for it is admitted by Beaumont, that systems elevated at different epochs may be parallel ; and until the geology of these mountains is better understood, it cannot be known but that these belong to different parallel systems.\* (See *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 470.) Yet it seems capable of mathematical demonstration, that fissures produced by an elevating force, acting beneath a portion of the earth's crust, will be parallel when no two consecutive fissures are remote from each other ; and if another set of fissures be produced, by the force acting unequally at different points, these will be parallel to one another, also ; and approximately perpendicular to the first set. Hence Beaumont's principle may prove true over large areas ; but much more extensive observations will be necessary before it can be applied, except in limited districts. *Phillip's Geology*, p. 239.

*Inf.* 3. The convulsive movements by which systems of strata were elevated, appear to have been in most instances short compared with the intervening periods of repose, during which successive formations were deposited.

*Proof.* 1. The deposits appear not to have been disturbed by any elevating force while in a state of formation, as this would have changed the character of the organic remains ; (*De la Beche's Theoretical Geology*, Chap. 12.) and the period of deposition must have been in most cases very protracted. 2. Had the elevating force been going on slowly during the deposition, the lower beds of the formation ought to have a greater dip than the upper beds ; which is rarely found to be the case. 3. Paroxysmal convulsions are sufficient to account for the appearances in most cases of the elevation of the strata. 4. In most cases there is no evidence of any long interval between the deposition of two rocks whose position is unconformable. 5. Some single local dislocations are of enormous size, amounting to 3000 or 4000 feet ; as in the Penine region of the north of England : and it is difficult to conceive how such faults could have resulted from a succession of minor forces acting

\* Mr. Lyell (*Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 471, Note) objects to Beaumont's regarding the Pyrenees and the Allegany mountains as belonging to the same system, because the former run W. N. W. and E. S. E. while the latter run N. E. and S. W. Now although I am not disposed to adopt this view of Beaumont, yet it is but justice to him to say, that if any one will cause a great circle on the artificial terrestrial globe to pass over both the Pyrenees and the Alleganies, he will see that these mountains must have the different directions mentioned above, in order to make them "parallel to the semi-circumference of the earth's surface," which is the position taken by Beaumont.

through long intervals. 6. The doctrines of internal heat if admitted, furnish a sufficient force to elevate the highest mountains by a single effort. *Phillip's Geology*, p. 260.

*Remark.* The interval between the deposition of consecutive strata may sometimes have been very great, if measured chronologically; especially where one member or more of the series of rocks, is wanting. In such cases the principles above explained do not enable us to determine during what part of this interval the elevation of the strata took place. It is chiefly on this ground that Mr. Lyell attempts to overthrow the whole of Beaumont's reasonings and conclusions on this subject. But it seems to me that he has shown only that it is difficult to fix upon that point in the interval between two consecutive rocks, when the convulsive movements took place; and that the fundamental principle of Beaumont's theory remains unaffected. And in respect to the exact geological time when the elevation occurred, it is, to say the least, very probable that it took place just at the termination of the period during which the elevated rock was in a course of formation; for such a convulsion furnishes, in many instances at least, the only known reason why its deposition was brought to a close. *Lyell's Principles of Geology* Vol. 2. p. 464. Other writers have adduced various objections to the views of Beaumont; as Dr. Boue, for instance, in the *Journal de Geologie*, tom. 3. p. 338.

*Inf.* 4. It is maintained by Beaumont, that the changes in the zoological and botanical characters of the formations, correspond in general to the epochs of elevation: that is, the period of elevation seems to have been the time for the destruction of one group of organic races and the introduction of new species. But though this may be generally, it is not usually true. No great change, for instance, appears to have taken place in the organic characters of rocks below the Zechstein inclusive. But this may in part be explained by the fact that all or nearly all the animals before that period were marine, and consequently might very probably survive the upburst of a continent; since violent agitation of the waters would be the principal effect.

*Inf.* 5. In many instances the rocks appear to have suffered one alternation or more of elevation and subsidence.

*Proof.* 1. The phenomena of what is called the *Dirt Bed*, of the oolite formation in the isle of Portland, in Great Britain, are perhaps the best example in proof of this proposition that occurs. In a bed of black mould, lying between the Portland stone beneath, and the Purbeck stone above, (both of them oolitic limestones,) there exist large prostrate trunks, and erect stumps of cycadeae, or tropical trees, which must have grown on the spot where the stumps now stand. The following conclusions seem to be fairly inferrible from the facts detailed. 1. That the limestone beneath this dirt bed was deposited at the bottom of the ocean. 2. That this bottom must have been elevated above the waters long enough for the accumulation of the soil and the growth of the trees. 3. That the surface was next submerged beneath the waters of a freshwater lake; next beneath an estuary; and next beneath a deep sea, long enough

for the deposition of strata 2000 feet thick. 4. That these strata have been subsequently elevated into their present terrestrial state in England. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 495.

2. The coal formation may be mentioned as another example in point. In these formations there is sometimes an alternation of marine and freshwater remains, and always an alternation of coal with shales and sandstones. Hence some geologists are of opinion that the land, where the vegetation grew that formed the coal, must have sunk and risen again, every time these alternations occur. Others, however, suppose that the coal plants grew on low islands of tropical archipelagos, and were transported into the bottom of the ocean, or of estuaries, when they were covered by deposits of sand, clay, and limestone, and again by other beds of vegetables, until a great thickness of these interstratified layers had accumulated. Freshwater and marine relics sometimes alternate in successive strata of the coal measures, because in an estuary the salt water would occasionally prevail over the fresh water from the river which emptied into it. See *De la Beche's Manual*, p. 444. Also his *Theoretical Geology*, p. 264. *Macculloch's System of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 312. *Philip's Geology*, p. 116.

3. A third example is the alternating strata of freshwater and marine deposits in the tertiary series. But in this case, also, it is very possible to conceive how these alternations might have been effected by the successive predominance of rivers and the sea in an estuary as explained above. *Philip's Geology*, p. 164.

*Remark.* Examples of more recent elevation and subsidence will be given in Section VIII: where will also be found the various theories proposed for the explanation of the phenomena of elevation and subsidence.

*Inference 6.* From the phenomena of organic remains, it appears that the species of animals and plants now existing on the globe, could not, with a few exceptions, have been contemporaries with those found in the rocks.

*Proof 1.* If they had been contemporaries, no reason can be given why the remains of the living species do not occur in the rocks; which, with the exception of a few hundred species in the more recent tertiary strata, is well known to be the case. 2. Comparative anatomists decide from the structure of the extinct animals and plants, that they were intended for a climate and other physical circumstances so different from those now existing, that the organic beings adapted to the one, could not have endured the other. The period of the tertiary strata is the only exception: and even then, the climate appears to have been in

high northern latitudes nearly as warm as at present between the tropics.

*Inference 7.* Hence too we learn the mistake of those, who are in the habit of pronouncing very confidently that certain organic remains are petrifications of existing animals and plants. For if they are obtained from the secondary rocks, the presumption amounts almost to certainty, that they cannot be the representatives of existing species.

*Examples.* Fossil trees are called oak, maple, hemlock, &c. fibrous tremolite and some varieties of mica and talcose slates, are called petrified wood: engrinites are called snakes: coal plants are called rattlesnakes: favosites and certain fossil shells are called butternuts and walnuts: some varieties of ancient polyparia are regarded as the horns of deer, others as petrified pork; and even petrified squaws, pappooses, and buffaloes have been announced as existing in the far west. It is often amusing to see with how much confidence a man, ignorant of zoology and botany, will pronounce upon these supposed cases of identi-calness.

*Inference 8.* It appears that there have been upon the globe several distinct periods of organized existence, in which particular groups of animals and plants, exactly adapted to the varying physical condition of the globe, have been created and have successively passed away.

*Proof.* If we take only those larger groups of animals and plants, whose almost entire distinctness from one another has been established beyond all doubt, we shall still find at least five nearly complete organic revolutions on the globe: viz. 1. The existing species. 2. Those in the tertiary strata 3. Those in the cretaceous and oolitic systems. 4. Those in the new red sandstone group. 5. Those below the new red sand-stone. Comparative Anatomy teaches us that the animals and plants in these different groups could not have lived in the same physical circumstances.

*Remark.* The animals in the cretaceous and oolitic systems are almost entirely dissimilar: But since Adolphe Brongniart considers the plants as all belonging to one group, and Prof. Agassiz declares the fishes of the chalk to bear a great resemblance to those in the lower tertiary strata, I have thought it safest to reckon the cretaceous and oolitic systems as forming only one organic period. The Synoptical Table at the end of Section 1, shows a classification which makes six distinct groups.

*Objection.* Perhaps the deposits containing these different organic groups, may have been going on at the same time in different countries, or in different parts of the same country.

*Answer.* Although all the rocks composing these different systems are not found piled upon one another in any one place, they are all found so connected at different points, as to prove that they were formed successively. Yet where any are went-

ing in the series, as the true oolite, for instance, in North America, the interval during which these were forming in particular localities, may have been occupied by a prolonged deposition of the next older, or by an earlier commencement of the next newer rock. Most probably however, the same formation was begun and completed in different places about the same period : otherwise the climate would have varied so much as to produce a marked change in the organic remains.

*Remark.* The *Palaeontological Chart* appended will aid in impressing upon the mind the origin, expansion, and termination of the organic beings that have lived on the globe. In order to make it more impressive it ought to be extensive enough to show the duration of species : whereas now, it shows only imperfectly the vertical range of genera.

*Inference 9.* It appears that amidst all the diversities of organic life that have existed on the globe, the same general system has always prevailed.

*Illustration 1.* All the leading forms of organization that now exist on the globe, have existed from the beginning : for instance, all the four great classes of animals, mammiferous, molluscous, articulated, and radiated, and the two great classes of plants, the *Vascularares* and the *Cellulares*. The relative number of species, however, in these different classes has varied very much at different periods. 2. Carnivorous races have always existed to keep down the excessive multiplication of the herbivorous races. Thus, when the Sauroid fishes of the earliest rocks disappeared, their place was supplied in the more recent secondary strata, by the voracious marine Saurians ; and when these became extinct, sharks and other predaceous fishes, more like those now existing, made their appearance. So among the mollusks. During the deposition of all the secondary rocks, carnivorous Cephalopods abounded ; such as the nautilus, ammonite, &c : But in the tertiary strata, and in our present seas, these are rare, and their place is taken by carnivorous Trachelipods, which were not common at an earlier date. *Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 298. 3. From the eyes of trilobites and the orbits of other animals found in the rocks, we learn that the same relations of animals to light always existed as at present.

*Inference 10.* It does not appear that any of the ancient forms of animal or vegetable life can be properly regarded as monstrous ; or when compared with the proper standard, even heteroclitic.

*Proof.* When compared with existing races, they sometimes seem monsters in size, and anomalies in character. But their great size resulted from a climate better adapted, than that now upon the globe, for the developement of organic life ; and their

peculiar construction adapted them most admirably for the peculiar situation which they occupied. So that what seems heteroclitic at this day, was exact and harmonious adaptation then.

*Inference 11.* The whole period occupied in the deposition of the fossiliferous rocks must have been immensely long.

*Proof 1.* There must have been time enough for water to make depositions more than six miles in thickness, by materials worn from previous rocks, and more or less comminuted. 2. Time enough, also, to allow of hundreds of changes in the materials deposited: such changes as now require a long period for the production of one of them. 3. Time enough to allow of the growth and dissolution of animals and plants, often of microscopic littleness, sufficient to constitute almost entire mountains by their remains. 4. Time enough to produce by an extremely slow change of climate, the destruction of several nearly entire groups of organic beings. For although sudden catastrophes may have sometimes been the immediate cause of their extinction, there is reason to believe that those catastrophes did not usually happen, till such a change had taken place in the physical condition of the globe, as to render it no longer a comfortable habitation for beings of their organization. 5. We must judge of the time requisite for these deposits by similar operations now in progress; and these are in general extremely slow. The lakes of Scotland, for instance, do not shoal at the rate of more than 6 inches in a century. *Macculloch's Geology*, Vol. I. p. 507. See also a full view of the arguments on this subject in *Dr. J. Pye Smith's Lectures on Scripture and Geology*, p. 391. *London Edition*, 1839.

*Objection 1.* The rapid manner in which some deposits are formed at the present day: ex. gr. in the lake of Geneva; where, within the last 800 years, the Rhone has formed a delta two miles long and 900 feet in thickness. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 213.

*Answer.* Such examples are merely exceptions to the general law, that rivers, lakes, and the ocean are filling up with extreme slowness. Hence such cases show only that in ancient times, rocks might have been deposited over limited areas, in a rapid manner; but they do not show that such was generally the case.

*Objection 2.* Large trunks of trees, from 20 to 60 feet long, have sometimes been found in the rocks, penetrating the strata perpendicularly, or obliquely; and standing apparently where they originally grew. Now we know that wood cannot resist decomposition for a great length of time, and therefore, the

strata around these trunks must have accumulated very rapidly ; and hence the strata generally may have been rapidly formed.

*Answer.* Admitting that the strata enclosing these trunks were rapidly deposited, it might have been only such a case as is described in the first objection. But sometimes these trunks may have been drifted into a lake or pond, where a deep deposit of mud had been slowly accumulating, which remained so soft, that the heaviest part of the trunks, that is, their lower extremity sunk to the bottom by their gravity, and thus brought the trunks into an erect position. Or suppose a forest of trees sunk by some convulsion, in the manner described by Rev. Mr. Parker in the Columbia River : (See Section VI.) how rapidly might deposits be accumulated around them, were the river a turbulent one, proceeding from a mountainous region.

*Objection.* 3. The vast accumulations that have been made of the shields of animalculæ since the commencement of the historic period, show that similar deposits of other animal remains might have been made of much greater thickness in ancient times, in a comparatively short period.

*Answer.* If it can be shown that the larger animals, like those found fossil, have a power of increase that will compare at all with the astonishing multiplication of animalculæ, the objection will be valid : but not till then : and this can never be shown.

*Objection.* 4. All the causes producing rocks may have operated in ancient times with vastly more intensity than at present.

*Answer.* This if admitted might explain the mere accumulation of materials to form rocks. But it would not account for the vast number of changes which took place in their mineral and organic character ; which could have taken place without a miracle only during vast periods of time.

*Objection.* 5. The fossiliferous rocks might have been created just as we now find them, by the fiat of the Almighty, in a moment of time.

*Answer.* The possibility of such an event is admitted : but the probability is denied. If we admit that organic remains, from the unchanged elephant and rhinoceros of Siberia, to the perfectly petrified trilobites and terebratulæ of the transition strata, were never living animals, we give up the whole ground work of analogical reasoning ; and the whole of physical science falls to the ground. But it is useless formally to reply to an objection, which would never be advanced by any man who had ever examined even a cabinet collection of organic remains.

*Inference.* 12. There is reason to suppose that immense num-

bers of the softer species of animals, which have no solid parts, may have lived and died, during the deposition of the older fossiliferous rocks, without leaving in the rocks a vestige of their existence.

*Proof.* Limestone being then less common than at a later period, it is probable that animals not needing it to form a covering or a skeleton, would have been created; since we find that in all periods living beings had natures exactly adapted to their condition. Again, we find many of the older secondary limestones highly bituminous: and the decomposition of soft and gelatinous animals would have produced a large amount of bitumen. *De La Beche's Manual.* p. 476.

*Inference.* 13. The greater part of the accessible crust of the globe may once have constituted portions of the animal frame.

*Proof.* In respect to limestone, which has been thought to constitute about one seventh of the earth's crust, the presumption in favor of its animal origin, seems quite probable. (*Macculloch's System of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 219. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 183.) The recent discoveries of Ehrenberg, respecting fossil animalculæ, already detailed, make it probable that a large amount of silica and oxide of iron may have thus originated. At a late meeting of the British Association, for the Advancement of Science, this naturalist exhibited "a large glass full of artificial siliceous earth," which he had prepared from existing infusoria; and he says that "pounds and tons of this earth may be easily prepared." (*American Journal of Science* Vol. 35. p. 372.) I am not prepared, however, to go so far on this subject, as a recent able and elegant writer, who says, that "probably there is not an atom of the solid materials of the globe which has not passed through the complex and wonderful laboratory of life." *Mantell's Wonders of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 670.

*Inference.* 14. It appears that every successive change, that has taken place on the earth's surface, has been an improvement of its condition.

*Proof.* Animals and plants of a higher organization have been multiplied with every change, until at last the earth was prepared for the existing races; the most generally perfect of all, with man at their head.

## SECTION VI.

## OPERATION OF AQUEOUS AND ATMOSPHERIC AGENCIES IN PRODUCING GEOLOGICAL CHANGES.

*Prin.* The basis of nearly all correct reasoning in geology, is the analogy between the phenomena of nature in all periods of the world's history: in other words, similar effects are supposed to be the result of similar causes at all times.

*Illustration and Proof.* This principle is founded on a belief in the constancy of nature: or that natural operations are the result of only one general system, which is regulated by invariable laws. Every other branch of physical science, equally with geology, depends upon this principle: and if it be given up, all reasoning in respect to past natural phenomena, is at an end.

*Remark.* It does not follow from this principle that the causes of geological change have always operated with equal intensity, nor with entire uniformity. How great has been the irregularity of their action, is a subject of debate among geologists.

*Inference.* We see from the preceding principle how important it is to ascertain the *true dynamics* of existing causes of geological change: that is, the amount of change which they are now producing. For until this is done, we cannot determine whether these causes are sufficient to account for all the changes which the earth has undergone.

*Remark* Heat, cold, and water in its manifold states, liquid, solid and vaporous, so often act conjointly upon rocks, that their separate agency cannot be pointed out. But the results of their combined action are numerous.

*Landslips, Icebergs, &c.*

*Descrip.* When snow and ice have long been accumulating upon the sides of steep hills, or mountains, the mere force of gravity at length, especially when the surface begins to thaw, causes vast masses to slide down the declivity, dragging along trees, soil, and loose rocks, which fill the vallies below, overwhelm whole villages, dam up and turn rivers out of their wonted channels, and produce other effects equally powerful.

*Examples.* Landslips among the Alps have long been known under the name of *Avalanches*; and one of these has been known to bury from one to five villages with thousands of inhabitants. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 125. In this country the landslip in the White Mountains in the year 1826, by which a family were destroyed, will long be remembered. Marks of former slides may be seen on the sides of what is called the Hopper, in Saddle Mountain, in Massachu-

setts. Indeed, landslips on a small scale, may be seen in almost every part of our country; especially when powerful rains occur at the breaking up of winter.

*Descrip.* When these landslips occur on the steep shores of the ocean in high latitudes, the mass is precipitated into the sea, and constitutes an *iceberg*. These icebergs are drifted about by the currents in the ocean sometimes to a great distance. Those from the northern ocean are sometimes seen as far south as the 40th degree of north latitude; and those from the southern ocean, as far north as south latitude 38°. Often they are of immense size, even one or two miles in circumference; and they sensibly affect the temperature for many miles around. They have been seen to rise as much as 250 or 300 feet above the surface of the ocean; and consequently must have sunk more than 2000 feet below; as every cubic foot above, implies that there are 8 cubic feet below. In this way, large masses of sand, gravel, and bowlders, as well as animals and plants, may be transported great distances and dropped upon the bottom of the ocean, as the iceberg melts away.

#### *Degradation of Rocks and Soil by Frost and Rains.*

*Descrip.* Water acts upon rocks and soils both chemically and mechanically: chemically, it dissolves some of the substances which they contain, and thus renders the mass loose and porous: mechanically, it gets between the particles and forces them asunder; so that they are more easily worn away when a current passes over them. Congelation still more effectually separates the fragments and grains, and thus renders it easy for rains and gravity to remove them to a lower level. In a single year the influence of these causes may be feeble: but as they are repeated from year to year, they become in fact some of the most powerful agencies in operation to level the surface of continents.

#### *Detritus or Debris of Ledges.*

*Descrip.* It is chiefly by the action of frost and gravity, that those extensive accumulations of angular fragments of rocks are made, that often form a *talus*, or slope, at the foot of naked ledges, and even high up their faces. In some cases, though not generally, this detritus has reached the top of the ledge, and no farther additions are made to the broken spoils, which usually slope at an angle not far from 40°. Examples of this detritus are usually most striking along the mural faces of trap

rocks; as for instance in the valley of Connecticut river in New England.

*Inference.* From these facts it appears that the earth cannot have existed in its present state an immense period of time: otherwise these slopes of *debris* would in every instance have extended to the top of the ledge: that is, the work of degradation would have been finished. We cannot, indeed, determine from this geological chronometer, the chronological epoch when this work of degradation commenced: but we are at least made sure, that the present state of the earth had a beginning.

#### Rivers.

*Descrip.* Rivers produce geological changes in four modes: 1. By excavating some parts of their beds. 2. By filling up other parts. 3. By forming deposits along their banks. 4. By forming deposits, called *deltas*, at their mouths.

*Examples.* Most of the larger rivers, especially where they flow through a level country, are filling up their channels: but where smaller streams pass through a mountainous region, the power of excavation is still going on: And it is accomplished in a good measure by means of *ice freshets*. It is impossible for one who has not witnessed the breaking up of one of these streams in the spring, when for many miles the whole channel becomes literally chocked with ice, to form an adequate idea of the immense excavating force which it exerts.

*Descrip.* The deposit formed in the lake of Geneva by the waters of the Rhone, has been already mentioned. Another is formed at the mouth of this river, on the shore of the Mediterranean, and is said to be mostly solid calcareous and even crystalline rock. (*Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 219.) The delta of the Mississippi has advanced several leagues since New Orleans was built. The delta of the Ganges commences 220 miles from the sea, and has a base 200 miles long, and the waters of the ocean at its mouth are muddy 60 miles from the shore. Since the year 1243 the delta of the Nile has advanced a mile at Damietta; and the same at Foah since the 15th. century. In 2000 years the gain of the land at the mouth of the Po, has been 18 miles, for 100 miles along the coast. The delta of the Niger extends into the interior 170 miles, and along the coast 300 miles, so as to form an area of 25,000 square miles.

*Descrip.* An immense alluvial deposit is forming at the mouth of the river Amazon and Oronoco; most of which is swept northerly by the Gulf Stream. The waters of the Ama-

zon are not entirely mixed with those of the ocean at the distance of 300 miles from the coast. The quantity of sediment annually brought down by the Ganges, amounts to 6,968,077,440 tons; or 60 times more than the weight of the great pyramid in Egypt. The quantity of matter chemically and mechanically suspended in the waters of Merrimack river, that run past the city of Lowell in Massachusetts, in 1838, according to the very accurate experiments of Dr. Samuel L. Dana, amounted to 1,678,343,810, pounds avoirdupois. The annual amount of anthracite coal used in the Merrimac Print Works in Lowell, is 5000 tons: and Dr. Dana estimates, that if the above amount of sediment were coal, it would supply those works 167 years. The quantity of water discharged by the Merrimac in 1838, was, 229,598,840,800 cubic feet.

*Inf. 1.* The extensive depositories thus forming daily by rivers, need only consolidation to become rocks of the same character as the shales, sandstones, and conglomerates of the secondary series.

*Inf. 2.* Rivers in general have not excavated their own beds; but run in valleys formed for the most part by other causes.

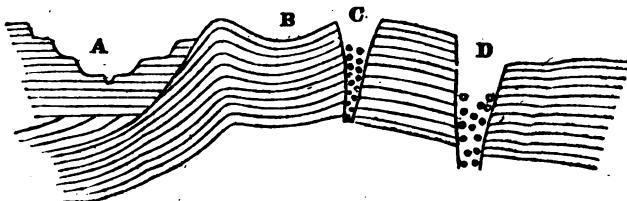
*Proof.* 1. In a majority of instances they are filling up their beds. 2. Transverse valleys frequently cross the course of rivers in such a way, that the water must have originally passed through them instead of excavating their present channels.

*Illus.* Fig. 88. shows Connecticut river, crossing Massachusetts and Connecticut, and emptying into Long Island Sound. If it had been left at first to find its own way to the ocean, and the passage between Holyoke and Tom (which are in fact but one ridge) had not been formed, it must have passed through the valley A, to the Sound: since no part of that valley, (through which the Farmington canal passes,) is more than 134 feet above the present bed of the river, where it runs between Holyoke and Tom. Or if the bed of the river had not existed through the mountains below Middletown in Connecticut, the river, instead of forming it, would have passed to the Sound through the valley B, through which the Hartford and New Haven Rail Road now runs, and no part of which can be more than 20 or 30 feet above the present level of the river at Hartford.

*Descrip.* *Terraced Valleys*, (of one of which a cross section is given in Fig. 87, at A,) sometimes exist in alluvial or tertiary regions, with the terraces on each side of equal height: and these appear to have been formed by the excavating operation of the rivers themselves.

*Mode of Formation.* Some suppose them formed by the sudden and successive bursting away of the barriers by which the river has been restrained. But it is wholly unnecessary to suppose any such bursting of barriers. The slow and uniform operation of the stream upon alluvial soil, will explain all the phenomena. But the explanation cannot be given here for want of room. It will be found in my *Report on the Geology of Massachusetts*, 2d. Edition p. 141.

Fig. 87.



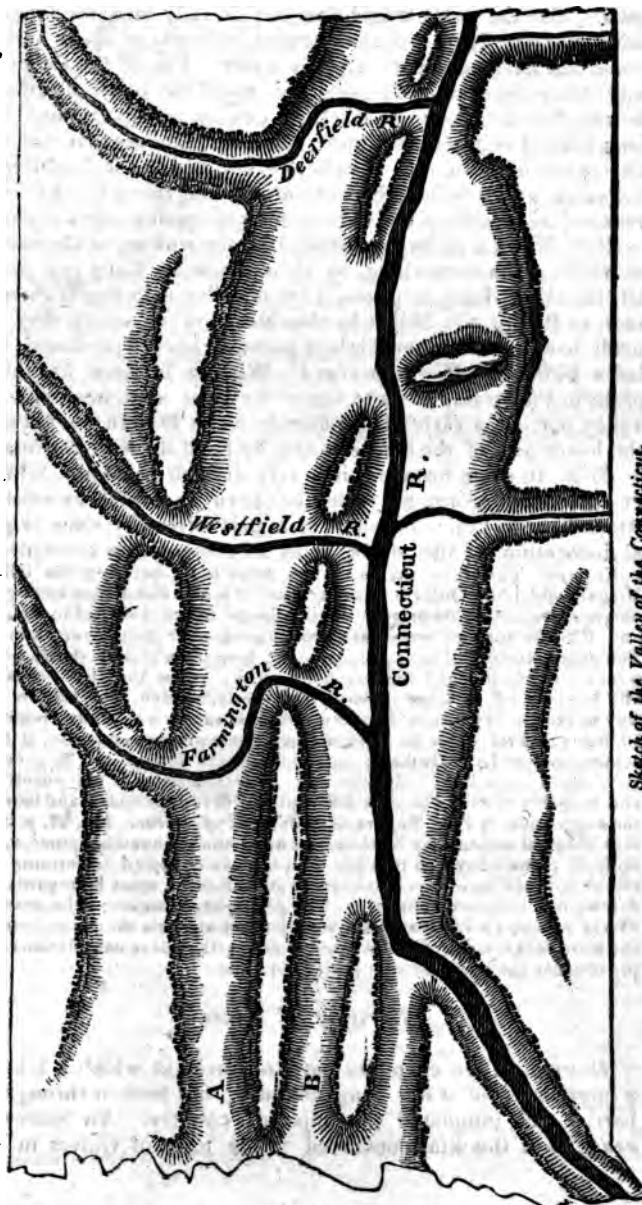
Valleys.

### Other Valleys.

*Descrip.* The terraced valleys above described are denominated *valleys of denudation*; because produced by the denuding force of water: and numerous valleys of other shapes, having been formed in the same manner, are thus called. Indeed, scarcely a valley exists that has not been more or less modified by this cause. But the greater part of the larger valleys that furrow the earth's surface, had a different origin; viz. the elevations, fractures, and dislocations which the strata have experienced.

*Proof.* The phenomena of longitudinal and transverse valleys prove that all of them cannot have been the result of running water. In fig. 88, which is a sketch of the valley of Connecticut river, with a portion of the mountainous region on both sides, it will be seen that the general direction of the mountain ridges, and of course of the valleys, is nearly north and south. Nevertheless, it will be seen that the tributaries of the Connecticut, the Farmington, Agawam, and Deerfield rivers, and also the Connecticut itself, pass across these ridges and longitudinal valleys, in transverse valleys, which must be deeper than the

Fig. 88.



Sketch of the Valley of the Connecticut.

others, else the water would flow out laterally into the longitudinal valleys. Now it is obvious that both sets of these valleys could not have been excavated by water. For if the longitudinal valleys were thus formed, how could the water afterwards be raised to the requisite level, for cutting valleys through the longitudinal ridges? We must, therefore, suppose that one and often both of these sets of valleys originated in the fractures of the strata at the time of their elevation; and that water has only rounded their outlines and covered their inequalities with detritus.

*Def.* When a valley is produced by the sinking of the strata: or which is the same thing, by their elevation along two parallel anticlinal lines, it forms, what is called a *Valley of Subsidence*, as B. Fig. 87. When by the elevation of strata, they are made to separate at their highest point, a valley is produced, called a *Valley of Elevation*; as C. When a fracture has taken place in the strata, so as to leave the sides very steep and the valley narrow, a ravine is produced; as at D. In such a case the lower part of the fissure is usually filled up with detritus.

*Prin.* In some instances it is very difficult to decide, whether a particular gorge or ravine has been excavated by existing streams, or by diluvial agency, or in part formed by some original dislocation of the strata, or by all these causes combined.

*Example.* The deep ravine, seven miles long, between the falls of Niagara and Lake Ontario, has occasioned much discussion among geologists, respecting its origin. The falls are about 150 feet in height; and 670,000 tons of water are precipitated over them every minute. The upper stratum of rock is limestone; beneath which is shale, which wears away faster than the limestone, so as to cause the latter occasionally to break off in large masses; and the falls have been said in this way to recede 50 yards in 40 years. At this rate it would have required 10,000 years for them to have reached their present situation, if they commenced at Lake Ontario; and 30,000 years longer will be necessary to reach Lake Erie. But the rate of retrocession is yet unsettled; and probably it would be very different at different periods; and besides, the suggestion of Prof. Rogers (*Amer. Journal of Science*, Vol. 27, p. 326.) that diluvial action may have commenced the excavating process, has no little plausibility: so that the time already occupied in forming this ravine, and the time requisite to carry it to Ontario, must be regarded as determined only conjecturally. The geologist, however, who witnesses the extensive excavations made by other streams in our country in the solid rocks, will not be disposed to reject the above calculations simply because they require vast periods of time.

### Bursting of Lakes.

*Descript.* A few examples have occurred in which a lake, or a large body of water long confined, has broken through its barrier and inundated the adjacent country. An interesting example of this kind occurred in the town of Glover in Ver-

mont; in which two lakes, one of them a mile and a half long and three fourths of a mile wide, and in some places 150 feet deep; and the other, three fourths of a mile long, and half a mile wide, were let out by human labor, and being drained in a few minutes, the waters urged their way down the channel of Burton river, at least 20 miles to lake Memphramagog, mostly through a forest, cutting a ravine from 20 to 40 rods wide, and from 50 to 60 feet deep; inundating the low lands, and depositing thereon vast quantities of timber. (*American Journal of Science*, Vol. 11, p. 39.) In 1818, the waters of the Dranse in Switzerland, having been long obstructed by ice, burst their barrier and produced still greater desolation, because the country was more thickly settled than the borders of the lakes above named. *De la Beche's Manual*, p. 56.

*Remark.* It has been supposed, that should the falls of Niagara ever recede to lake Erie, a terrible inundation of the region eastward would be the result: But De La Beche has proved satisfactorily, that the only effect would be a gradual draining of lake Erie, with only a slight increase of Niagara river. *Theoretical Geology*, p. 154.

### *Agency of the Ocean.*

*Descrip.* The ocean produces geological changes in three modes. 1. By its waves: 2. By its tides: 3. By its currents. Their effect is twofold: 1. To wear away the land: 2. To accumulate detritus so as to form new land.

*Descrip.* The action of waves or breakers upon abrupt coasts, composed of rather soft materials, is very powerful in wearing them down, and preparing the detritus to be carried into the ocean by tides and currents. During storms, masses of rocks weighing from 10 to 30 tons, are torn from the ledges, and driven several rods inland, even up a surface sloping with a considerable dip towards the ocean.

*Examples.* In the 13th century, a strait half as wide as the channel between England and France, was excavated in 100 years in the north part of Holland: but its width afterwards did not increase. The English Channel also, has been supposed to have been formed in a similar manner. In England, several villages have entirely disappeared by the encroachments of the sea. At Cape May, on the north side of Delaware Bay, the sea has advanced upon the land at the rate of about 9 feet in a year; and at Sullivan's Island, near Charleston, S. Carolina, it advanced a quarter of a mile in three years. But perhaps the coast of Nova Scotia and New England, exhibits the most striking examples of the powerful dashing and wasting agency of the waves; whose force there is often tremendous, especially during violent north east storms. Where the coast is rocky, insulated masses of rocks (in Scotland called *Drongs*,) are left on the shore, giving a wild and picturesque effect to the scenery, as in the following sketch, Fig. 89. which was taken upon Jewell's Island in Casco Bay.

Fig. 89.



*Descrip.* It is difficult to examine the coast of Nova Scotia and New England;—to witness the great amount of naked battered rocks, and to see harbors and indentations chiefly where the rocks are rather soft, while the capes and islands are chiefly of the hardest varieties,—without being convinced that most of the harbors and bays have been produced by this agency. In Boston Harbor, the outer islands are composed of naked rock, and farther within the harbor, the outer borders of the islands are being swept of their loose soil. Here we see the steady progress of this encroaching process.

Fig. 90, is a sketch taken near the Light House on Cape Elizabeth; not far from Portland in Maine, and will give some idea of the nakedness of the coast where it is exposed to powerful storms.

Fig. 90.



Fig. 91, shows the rocks and light houses (there is scarcely anything else to be seen) on the extremity of Cape Ann, in Massachusetts, which is peculiarly exposed to N. E. storms.

Fig. 91.

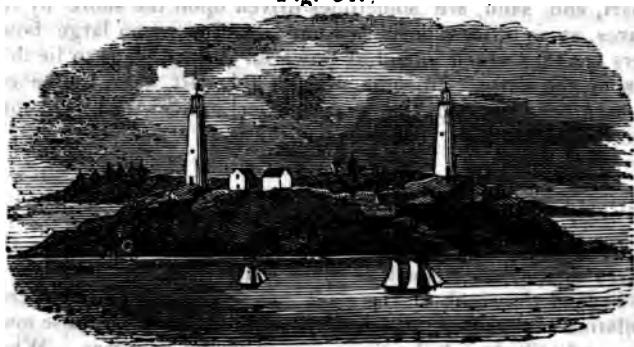
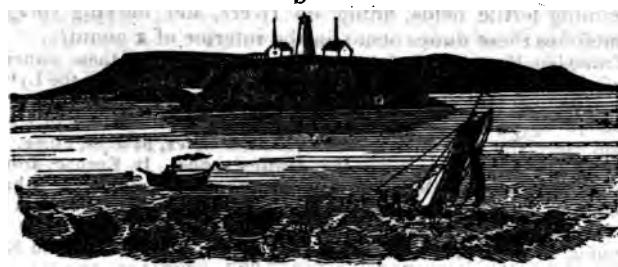


Fig. 92, will give an idea of the appearance of the islands in Boston Harbor, as it is entered from the northeast.

Fig. 92.



### *Purgatories.*

*Descrip.* When the rocks exposed to the waves are divided by fissures, running perpendicular to the coast, the mass between two fissures is sometimes removed by the water, thus leaving a chasm, often several rods long and very deep, into which the waves rush during a storm with great noise and violence. Such caverns have received in New England, the singular appellation of *Purgatories*. Very good examples occur in the vicinity of Newport, Rhode Island.

*Beaches of Shingle and Sand.*

*Descrip.* The shingle, or perfectly water worn pebbles of a coast, and sand, are sometimes driven upon the shore by the waves, so as to form beaches ; and sometimes even large boulders are thus urged inland by powerful storms, so as to lie in a row on the shore. In some cases of this sort, after the beaches have been formed, the waves rather protect the coast than encroach upon it.

*Dunes or Downs.*

*Descrip.* The sand which is driven upon the shore by the waves as above described, is often carried so far inland as to be beyond the reach of the returning wave ; and thus an accumulation takes place, which is the origin of most of those moving sand hills, known by the name of *dunes* or *dowms*. When the sand becomes dry, the sea breezes drive it farther and farther inward ; the land breezes not having equal power to force it back : and at length it becomes a formidable enemy, by overwhelming fertile fields, filling up rivers, and burying villages. Sometimes these dunes occur in the interior of a country.

*Examples.* Every one is familiar with the history of these dunes in Egypt. The westerly winds have brought in the sands from the Lybian desert, and all the west side of the Nile, with the exception of a few sheltered spots, has been converted into an arid waste. In Upper Egypt especially, the remains of ancient temples, palaces, cities, and villages, are numerous among the drifting sands. In Europe, around the Bay of Biscay, a similar destructive process is going on. A great number of villages have been entirely destroyed ; and no less than ten are now imminently threatened by sand hills, which advance at the rate of 60 or even 72 feet annually. On the coast of Cornwall in England, similar effects have taken place. These dunes are also common on the coast of the United States, especially on Cape Cod in Massachusetts ; where strenuous efforts have been made to arrest their progress, and to prevent the destruction of villages and harbors that are threatened.

*Waves and Tides.*

*Remark 1.* It has generally been stated that waves do not affect the bottom of the ocean where the water is more than 20 feet deep. But the exact depth to which their disturbing influence extends has not been accurately settled.

*Remark 2.* It must be recollected in estimating the power of waves to remove rocks, that the weight of the latter in water is not much more than half their weight in air ; and consequently that a much less force will remove them.

*Descrip.* In large inland bodies of water, such as the Mediter-

ranean, Black and Caspian seas, and Lake Superior, tides are scarcely perceptible; never exceeding a few inches; and in the open ocean they are very small; not exceeding 2 or 3 feet: But in narrow bays, estuaries, and friths, favorably situated for accumulating the waters, the tides rise from 10 to 40 feet; and in one instance even 60 or 70 feet on the European coasts, and in the Bay of Fundy, in Nova Scotia, 70 feet. In such cases, especially where wind and tide conspire, the effect is considerable upon limited portions of coast, both in wearing away and filling up. *De La Beche's Manual*, p. 85. *Lyell's Geology*, Vol. I. p. 238.

#### *Oceanic Currents.*

*Descrip.* Oceanic currents are produced chiefly by winds. The most extensive current of this kind is the Gulf Stream. This flows out of the Indian Ocean, around the Cape of Good Hope, passes northward along the coast of Africa to the equator, thence across the Atlantic; being increased by the Trade winds: and impinging against South America, it is turned northward, and continues along the coast of the United States even to the Banks of Newfoundland; from whence it turns east and southeast across the Atlantic, returning to the coast of Africa to supply the deficiency of waters there. It is estimated that this current covers a space 2000 miles in length, and 350 in breadth. Its velocity is very variable; but may be stated as from one to three and even four miles per hour; its mean rate being 1 1-2 mile. A current sets northward between America and Asia, through Behring's Straits, which passes around the northern extremity of America, and flows out into the Atlantic in two currents, one called the Greenland current, which passes along the American continent, at the rate sometimes of 3 or 4 miles per hour, until it meets and unites with the Gulf Stream, near the Banks of Newfoundland, where the velocity is two miles per hour: the other sets into the Atlantic between America and Europe. It is these two currents that convey icebergs as far south as the 40th degree of north latitude before they are melted. Among the Japanese Islands a current sets northeast, sometimes as strong as five miles per hour. Another sets around Cape Horn from the Pacific into the Atlantic Ocean. A constant current sets into the Mediterranean through the straits of Gibraltar, at less than half a mile per hour. It has been conjectured, but not proved, that an under current sets outward through the same strait, at the bottom of the ocean. Mr. Lyell also suggests that the constant evaporation going on

in that sea, may so concentrate the waters holding chloride of sodium in solution, that a deposite may now be forming at the bottom. But the deepest soundings yet made there, (5880 feet,) brought up only mud, sand, and shells. Numerous other currents of less extent exist in the ocean, which it is unnecessary to describe. They form, in fact, vast rivers in the ocean, whose velocity is usually greater than that of the larger streams upon the land. *De La Beche's Manual*, p. 91.

*Descrip.* The ordinary velocity of the great oceanic currents is from one to three miles per hour: but when they are driven through narrow straits, especially with converging shores, and the tides conspire with the current, the velocity becomes much greater, rising to 8, 10, and even in one instance to 14 miles per hour. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 240.

*Descrip.* The depth to which currents extend has not been accurately determined. Some limited experiments seem to indicate that they may sometimes reach to the depth of nearly 500 feet. It ought to be remembered, however, that the friction of water against the bottom, greatly retards the lower portion of the current; so that the actual denuding and transporting power in these currents is far less than the velocity at the surface would indicate.

*Descrip.* Alike uncertain are the data yet obtained, for determining what velocities of water at the bottom are requisite for removing mud, sand, gravel, and bowlders. It has been stated, however, (and these are the best results yet obtained,) that 6 inches per second will raise fine sand on a horizontal surface, 8 inches, sand as coarse as linseed; twelve inches, fine gravel: 24 inches per second will roll along rounded gravel an inch in diameter: and 36 inches will move angular fragments of the size of an egg. The velocity necessary for the removal of large bowlders has not been measured. A velocity of 6 feet per second would be 4 miles per hour: of 8 feet per second, 5.4 miles per hour: of 12 feet per second, 8.2 miles per hour: of 24 inches per second, 16.4 miles per hour: of 36 feet per second, 24.6 miles per hour. Fine mud will remain suspended in water that has a very slight velocity, and often will not sink more than a foot in an hour; so that before it reached the depth of 500 feet, it might be transported by a current of 3 miles per hour, to the distance of 1500 miles. *De La Beche's Theoretical Geology*, p. 56, and 64.

*Inf. 1.* It appears that most rivers, in some part of their course, especially when swollen by rains, possess velocity of current sufficient to remove sand and pebbles; as do also some tidal currents, around particular coasts: but large rivers and most oceanic currents can only remove the finest ingredients;

and as to large bowlders, it would seem that only the most violent waves and mountain streams can tear them up and roll them along.

*Inf.* 2. Oceanic currents have the power greatly to modify the situation of the materials brought to the sea by rivers and tides, and to spread them over surfaces of great extent.

*Example.* The waters of the Amazon, still retaining fine sediment, are found on the surface of the ocean 300 miles from the coast, where they are met by the Gulf stream, which runs there at the rate of 4 miles per hour. Thus are these waters carried northerly along the coast of Guiana, where an extensive deposite of mud has been formed, which extends an unknown distance into the ocean. In like manner, the muddy waters of the Orinoco and other rivers are swept northerly, and probably a deposite is going on along the whole coast of America as far north as the Gulf Stream extends. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 287.

#### CHEMICAL DEPOSITS FROM WATER.

##### *Calcareous Tufa, or Travertin.*

*Descrip.* In certain circumstances water holds in solution a quantity of carbonate of lime, which is readily deposited when those circumstances change. The deposite is called *Travertin*, or *Calcareous Tufa*.

*Examples.* At Clermont in France, a single thermal spring has deposited a mass of travertin 240 feet long, 16 feet high, and 12 feet wide. At San Vignone in Tuscany, a mass has been formed upon the side of a hill, half a mile long and of various thickness, even up to 200 feet. At San Filippo, in the same country, a spring has deposited a mass 30 feet thick in 20 years. And a mass is found there, 1 1/4 miles in length, one third of a mile wide, and in some places, 250 feet thick. In the vicinity of Rome, some of the travertin can hardly be distinguished from statuary marble; and that which is constantly forming near Tabreez in Persia, is a most beautiful variety of semi-transparent marble, or alabaster. At Tivoli in Italy, the beds are sometimes from 400 to 500 feet thick, and the rock of a spheroidal structure. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 197.

##### *Marl.*

*Descrip.* The only kind of marl now in the course of formation, is that deposited at the bottom of ponds, lakes, and salt water, known by the name of *shell marl*; and which consists of carbonate of lime, clay, and peaty matter; as has been described in a preceding Section. The marls in the tertiary strata are frequently indurated, and go by the name of *rock*.

marl. Much of the marl used in Virginia, and other southern states, is composed mostly of fossil marine shells; and this is a true *shell marl*. But that usually so called, contains only a small proportion of shells: the remainder being pulverulent carbonate of lime, except the clay and peaty matter, mixed with the carbonate. These beds of marl often cover hundreds of acres, and are several feet thick: In Ireland they contain bones of a large extinct species of elk, as well as shells of *Cypris*, *Lymnaea*, *Valvata*, *Cylas*, *Planorbis*, *Ancylus*, &c. The marls of this country contain shells of *Planorbis*, *Lymnaea*, *Cylas* and other small freshwater molluscs.

*Remark.* These alluvial deposits of marl have been generally supposed to be the result of the decomposition of the small shells which occur in them. But they seem to me only in part due to this cause. Carbonate of lime, it is well known, is scarcely soluble in pure water. But if the water contain carbonic acid, and carbonate of lime be diffused in it, the acid will render it soluble. Yet the excess of acid is easily expelled, and than the salt will be deposited; as we know to be the case in many waters that are not thermal; as at the mouths of several of the streams that empty into the Mediterranean. Nor will this deposit be necessarily crystalline; for it may be pulverulent. Now the waters in limestone regions frequently contain carbonic acid. They also often contain carbonate of lime, in a state of suspension, which has been worn from the rock. Hence the salt thus dissolved will be very likely to be deposited, when the solution containing it forms ponds, whose stagnant waters are liable to chemical changes sufficient for this purpose. Or if this be doubted, it is certainly very possible that the streams that empty into ponds, will carry thither minute particles of limestone, which have been worn from the rocks over which the waters have passed; and these will be deposited when the waters have become quiet. The largest part of these alluvial marls, that have come under my observation, appear to have been formed in one of these modes, and not by the disintegration of the shells. These are generally in a sound state, when the marl is first dug, whereas if the powdered part originated from them, we ought to find them in fragments of every size. *Henry's Chemistry*, Vol. 2. p. 612, *Eleventh Edition*. *Thomson's Inorganic Chemistry*, Vol. 2. p. 512.

#### Siliceous Sinter.

*Descrip.* Thermal waters alone can contain silica in solution to any important amount. The most noted of these are the Geysers in Iceland, where a siliceous deposit, about a mile in diameter, and 12 feet thick, occurs; and those of the Azores, where elevations of siliceous matter are found 30 feet high. The stems and leaves of the frailest plants are converted into sinter or covered with it. Thermal Springs also, not in volcanic regions, as on the Washita river in this country, and in *India*, deposite a copious sediment of silica, iron, and lime.

*Hydrate of Iron, or Bog Iron Ore.*

*Descrip.* It is probable, as will be shown in a subsequent section, that the greater part of the ferruginous deposits so widely diffused, originate from the fossil shields of animalculæ. Yet in some instances we have direct evidence that they are produced by the decomposition of iron pyrites: for where such decomposition is going on, (as in the western part of Worcester County, in Massachusetts,) the rocks are coated over with the hydrate, and the surrounding soil deeply impregnated with it. Nor can there be any doubt but this iron would be often carried by water—although not directly soluble in it—to the lowest places, and into ponds and rivers, so as to form deposits there.

*Remark.* The hydrate of manganese is almost as widely diffused through the rocks as the hydrate of iron; but its quantity is so small that it exerts but a slight influence in the production of geological changes, and will therefore be passed without particular description. The same remarks will apply to sulphate of lime, carbonate of magnesia, chloride of calcium, &c. which occur in almost all natural waters, and sometimes form deposits of small extent.

*Petroleum, Asphaltum, &c.*

*Descrip.* The great amount of bituminous matter with which certain Springs are impregnated, renders them deserving of notice as existing causes of geological change, capable of explaining certain appearances in the older rocks; many of which are highly bituminous. In the Burman empire a group of springs or wells at one locality, yield annually 400.000 hogsheads of petroleum. It is found also in Persia, Palestine, Italy, and the United States. In this country it has the name of Seneca Oil, from having been early observed on the surface of springs at Seneca in N. York. It is thrown up in considerable abundance also, at the salt borings on the Kenhawa in Ohio; where a few years ago a large quantity of it, floating on the surface of a small stream, took fire and the river for a half a mile in extent appeared a sheet of flame—(*Am. Journal of Science Vol. 24. p. 64.*) In Palestine the Dead Sea is called the lake Asphaltites, from the asphaltum which abounds there. But the most remarkable locality of bituminous matter is the Pitch Lake in the island of Trinidad, in the West Indies. It is three miles in circumference, and of unknown thickness. It is sufficiently hard to sustain men and quadrupeds; though at some seasons of the year it is soft. *Geological Transaction, Vol. 1. p. 63.*

*Remark.* Mineral pitch was a principal ingredient in the cement used in constructing the ancient walls of Babylon, and of the temple in Jerusalem. It has lately been employed in a similar manner and it is said very successfully, to form a composition for paving the streets of cities.

*Prin.* The various bitumens are produced from vegetables, by the processes by which these are converted into coal in the earth.

*Inference.* Hence the bitumens that rise to the surface of springs, or form inspissated masses on the earth's surface, or between the layers of rocks, are supposed to be produced from vegetable matters buried in the earth; and to be driven to the surface by internal heat; and the fact that such deposits usually occur in the vicinity of active or extinct volcanoes, gives probability to this theory.

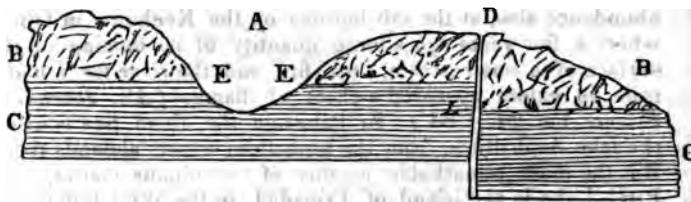
### *Phenomena of Springs.*

*Descrip.* Water is very unequally distributed among the different strata; some of them, as the argillaceous, being almost impervious to it; and others, as the arenaceous, admitting it to percolate through them with great facility. Hence when the former lie beneath the latter in a nearly horizontal position, the lower portions of the latter will become reservoirs of this fluid.

*Inference.* Hence if a valley of denudation cuts through these pervious and impervious strata, we may expect springs along their junction.

*Illus.* If B. B. Fig. 93. be the pervious and C. C. the impervious stratum, and A. the valley of denudation, we may expect springs at E. E.

Fig. 93.



### *Phenomena of Springs.*

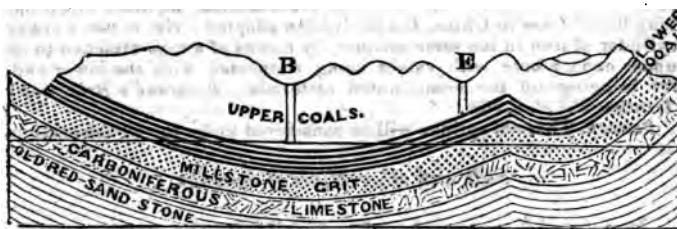
*Descrip.* If a fault occur in these strata, as at D, whereby they are sunk on the right of D, and still dip towards L, the water will be accumulated at L, because it cannot pass into C, and a spring may be expected at L.

*Remark.* Sometimes the geologist can discover the line of a fault by the occurrence of springs, where nothing else indicates its existence at the surface.

*Descrip.* In many parts of the world, if the strata be penetrated to a considerable depth by boring, water will rise, sometimes with great force, to the surface, and continue to flow uninterruptedly. Such examples are called *Artesian Wells*; from having been first discovered at Artois, the ancient Artesium.

*Theory.* The theory of these wells is simple. In Fig. 94, suppose the formation marked as the Upper coals, and also the Millstone Grit to be impervious to water: while the Lower coal is pervious, or the water bearing stratum. Now if excavations be made at B, or E, till the coal strata are reached, it is obvious that water will be forced to the surface by hydrostatic pressure; because some part of the water bearing stratum is higher than the points B, and C.

Fig. 94.



Coal Basin of South Wales: G. Britain.

*Inference.* 1. If any water bearing stratum, passing under a place where boring is attempted, rises higher at any point of its prolongation than the surface where the boring is made, the water will rise above that surface: and it will fall as much below that surface as is the level of the highest part of the pervious stratum.

*Inference.* 2. Hence borings of this sort may fail; first, because no water bearing stratum is reached; and secondly, because that stratum does not rise high enough above the place to bring the water to the surface.

*Inference.* 3. These explorations have proved that subterranean streams of water exist: some of which have a communication with water at the surface.

*Examples.* At St. Ouen in France, at the depth of 150 feet, the borer suddenly fell a foot, and a stream of water rushed up. At Touis the water brought up from the depth of 374 feet, fine sand, vegetable matter, and shells of species living in the vicinity, which must have been carried to that depth within a few months preceding. In Westphalia the water brought up several small fish, although no river existed at the surface within several leagues. The borings in the United States prove that cavities containing water exist even in granite.

*Depths of the borings.* In England, Aretesian Wells have been carried to the depth of 620 feet with success. In France, they have been sunk 800 and even 1200 feet, and in one instance near Paris to 1666 feet: and in the two last cases without success. In the United States, borings for salt water in the Western States, have been carried as deep as 800 or 900 feet. In the cities of New York, Baltimore, Albany, and in various parts of New Jersey, &c. borings for fresh water have been carried, and in most instances with success, to the depth of nearly 400 feet, though water has usually been obtained at a much less depth. The excavation in the city of N. York, 100 feet deep, and 16 feet diameter, yields 8000 gallons daily; and that in Bleeker Street, 442 feet deep, yields 44,000 gallons daily. *American Journal of Science*, Vols. 12. p. 136 and 23. p. 206.

*Remark.* Until recently these borings have been generally performed by means of a continuous iron rod, sharpened like a drill at the lower end. But a far more convenient and economical method, which has long been in use in China, has lately been adopted: viz. to use a heavy cylinder of iron in the same manner, by means of a rope attached to its upper end; a bore with valves being connected with the lower end, for bringing up the comminuted materials. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise*, Vol. I. p. 568.

*Remark.* Thermal springs will be considered under the eighth section.

### *Salt and other Mineral Springs.*

*Descrip.* All waters found naturally in the earth, contain more or less of saline matter: But unless its quantity is so great as to render them unfit for common domestic purposes, they are not called mineral waters.

*Descrip.* The ingredients found in mineral waters, are the sulphates of ammonia, soda, lime, magnesia, alumina, iron, and copper: the nitrates of potassa, lime and magnesia: the chlorides of potassium, sodium, barium, calcium, magnesium, iron, and manganese; the muriate of ammonia; the carbonates of potassa, soda, ammonia, lime, magnesia, alumina, and iron; the silicate of iron; silica, zinc, strontia, lithia, iodine, bromine, and organic matter; the phosphoric, fluoric, muriatic, sulphurous, sulphuric, boracic, formic, acetic, carbonic, crenic, and apocrenic acids: also oxygen, nitrogen, hydrogen, sulphurated hydrogen, and carbureted hydrogen. *Ure's Chemical Dictionary*, Article, Water. See also Dr. Daubeny's admirable Report to the British Association, on Mineral and Thermal Waters, 1837, p. 14.

**Theory.** Many of the above ingredients are taken up into a state of solution from the strata through which the water percolates: Others are produced by the chemical changes going on in the earth, by the aid of water and internal heat; and others are evolved by the direct agency of volcanic heat.

*Salt Springs.*

**Descrip.** The most important mineral springs in an economical point of view, are those which produce common salt. These are called salines, or rather such is the name of the region through which the springs issue. They occur in various parts of the world; and the water is extensively evaporated to obtain table salt. They contain also other salts; nearly the same in fact, as the ocean.

**Examples.** Some of these springs contain less, but usually they contain more salt, than the waters of the ocean. Some of the Cheshire springs in England yield 25 per cent: whereas sea water rarely contains more than 4 per cent. In the United States they contain from 10 to 20 per cent. They are used in New York, Ohio, Virginia, Pennsylvania, Illinois, Michigan, Missouri, Arkansas, and Upper Canada. 450 gallons of the water at Boon's Lick in Missouri, yield bushel of salt: 300 gallons at Conemaugh, Penn: 280. at Shawneetown, Ill.: 120, at St. Catharine's, U. C.: 75, at Kenawha, Vir.: 80 at Grand River, Arkan.: 50 at Muskingum, Ohio: and 41 to 45 at Onondaga, N. Y.: 350 gallons of sea water yield a bushel at Nantucket. In 1829, according to a Report of the Secretary of the Treasury, 3,804,229 bushels of salt were made in the United States. Since that time the quantity has greatly increased. In 1835, no less than 2,222,694 bushels were made at the Onondaga Springs in N. Y. alone; and 3,000,000 bushels at the Kenhawa Springs in Virginia. In all these places deep borings are necessary, sometimes even as deep as 1000 feet: but usually the brine becomes stronger the deeper the excavation. *Professor Beck's Geological Report to the Assembly of N. York, 1838. See also Prof. W. B. Roger's Report of the Geological Reconnaissance of the State of Virginia, 1836. Dr. Hildreth's first annual Geological Report to the Legislature of Ohio, 1838: Also his Article on the Geology of Ohio, Am. Journal Science, Vol. 29. Also Mr. Foster's Geological Report on Ohio, 1839: and Dr. Houghton's Report on the Geology of Michigan, 1838.*

**Origin of Salt Springs.** In many parts of Europe salt springs are found rising directly from beds of rock salt; so that their origin is certain: But as yet no deposits of rock salt have been discovered in this country east of the Rocky Mountains: and Mr. Eaton has suggested (*Survey of the Erie Canal Rocks*, p. 110.) that the ingredients only for the formation of the salt exist in the saliferous rock, and are made to combine by chemical agencies, so that the water percolating through the strata would become impregnated. An English writer (*Annals of Philosophy, for 1829.*) supposes that the salt is intimately disseminated through the saliferous rock, having been left there by

the ocean that deposited the strata. Most American geologists, however, still maintain that our salt springs proceed from beds of rock salt, deposited so deep in the earth that they have not yet been discovered: and the fact that the brine increases in strength by descending, gives strong support to this theory.  
*Prof. Beck's Report, 1838, p. 14.*

### *Gas Springs.*

**Descrip.** Carbonic acid and carbureted hydrogen are the most abundant gases given off by springs. They sometimes escape from the soils around springs, over a considerable extent of surface, and produce geological changes of some importance. Carbonic acid, for example, has the power of dissolving calcareous rocks, and of rendering oxide of iron soluble in water. It contributes powerfully also, to the decomposition of those rocks that contain feldspar. Carbureted hydrogen is sometimes produced so abundantly from springs, that it is employed, as at Fredonia in N. York, in supplying a village with gas lights. In almost all the States west of New England, this gas rises from springs in greater or less abundance, generally from salt springs.

**Origin of these gases.** Some of these gases, as carbonic acid, are given off most abundantly from springs in the vicinity of volcanoes; and in such a case there can be no question but they are produced by decompositions from volcanic heat. When they proceed from thermal springs, there is a good deal of reason for believing that internal heat may have produced them. But where they rise from springs of the common temperature, they must generally be imputed to those chemical decompositions and recompositions that often occur in the earth without an elevated temperature. Although carbureted hydrogen may sometimes proceed from beds of coal, it may also proceed from other forms of carbonaceous matter; as from bitumen disseminated through the rocks.

### *Aqueous Agency between the Tertiary and Alluvial Epochs:—often called Diluvial Action.*

**Remark.** The lithological characters of Diluvium have been given in Section 3. Three other points remain for consideration: 1. Its dispersion; 2. Its effects upon the surface: 3. the theory of its origin.

1. *Dispersion of Diluvium.*

*Descrip.* Diluvial are distinguished from tertiary deposits by two circumstances. 1. The tertiary strata were deposited in limited troughs and basins ; whereas diluvium is found in every part of the northern portions of the globe, and at all altitudes, with a few exceptions , and therefore resulted from some cause very general in its influence. 2. The tertiary strata were deposited in waters comparatively quiet : whereas diluvium has been the result of powerful currents. Towards the close of the diluvial epoch, however, when the waters became more tranquil, the deposits are with more difficulty distinguished from the tertiary strata except by their position above the coarser diluvium.

*Descrip.* Diluvial are distinguished from alluvial deposits ; 1. By the occurrence of the former in situations where no existing alluvial agency could have produced them. 2 By the marks of greater violence in the movements of the waters that produced the former, than in any waters which now produce the latter. But in some situations, where we cannot apply these two marks, the two deposits are with difficulty distinguished.

*Descrip.* The dispersion of diluvium appears, so far as the facts are yet known, to have been the result of two causes— perhaps, however, not of a different nature, but operating in one case on a limited, and in the other on a more general scale. The first cause of this dispersion is the elevation of particular mountain chains : whereby the diluvium has been scattered from the axis of the mountain outwards.

*Examples.* Perhaps the best ascertained example of such a dispersion of diluvium exists in the Alps. The greatest accumulations of boulders are in the valleys, and opposite to their *embouchures*; and hence we may be certain, that their movement took place since those valleys were formed. Elie de Beaumont supposed that the boulders were scattered during the last elevatory elevation of the Alps : and that the sudden melting of the snows on their summits, by steam and hot gases that rose through their fissures, brought down a debacle of waters with fragments of rocks into the region below.

*Ex. 2.* Rozet describes the plains of Metidja, south of Algiers in Africa, as covered in its northern parts by boulders derived from a long chain of hills running along its northern border ; while its southern part is strewed over by boulders from the Atlas chain, which stretches along its southern border. *Traité Elementaire de Géologie*, p. 259, *Tome 1.*

*Prin.* The second cause of diluvial action, whatever it may have been, appears to have operated on a more extended scale ; and to have drifted the diluvium southward over nearly all the northern hemisphere.

*Proof.* To begin with the American Continent, at the most

easterly point where observations to be depended upon have been made: we find that the bowlders spread over the southern part of Nova Scotia were derived, according to Sir Alexander Coke and Messrs. Jackson and Alger, from the ledges in the northern part of the province. Through the whole extent of Maine, the evidence is very striking of the southerly drift of the diluvium, the course being usually a few degrees east of south. And transported bowlders are even found on the summit of Mt. Katahdin, which is 5,300 feet high. *Dr. Jackson's First and Second Reports on the Geology of Maine, 1837 and 1838. Also his Reports on the Public Lands of Maine and Massachusetts, p. 16, Second Report.*

Des. In Massachusetts, the direction, as shown by a multitude of examples, varied from north and south to northwest and southeast; the most usual course being a few degrees east of south. This course carried the current very obliquely across most of the precipitous ridges of mountains in the state; nevertheless, the bowlders held on in the general direction with remarkable uniformity. The largest blocks usually lie nearest to the beds from which they were derived, and they continue to decrease in size and quantity, in a southeasterly direction, for the distance of several miles; sometimes as many as 50 or 60; and not unfrequently even 100 miles, though usually the sea coast is reached short of that distance. But often bowlders from the continent are common upon the islands many miles distant from the coast; as on Nantucket, Martha's Vineyard, and Long Island. In the western part of Massachusetts the mountains are from 1000 to 3000 feet high: yet vast quantities of bowlders have been carried over these precipitous ridges, and both slopes are covered with them the largest being upon the northern side. (*Report on the Geology of Massachusetts, 2. Edition, p. 148. Also American Biblical Repository, Vol. 10, p. 338; where numerous local details on this subject are given.*) On Long Island the diluvium corresponds to the rocks on the continent: those of different kinds always lying south of the ledges from which they were derived. (*Prof. Mather's first annual Report on the first Geological District of New York, p. 88. 1837.*) In the eastern part of N. York, the current was southeasterly; as in the western part of Massachusetts: But towards the western parts of the State, its general course appears sometimes to have been west of south. (*Mr. Hall's second annual Report on the Fourth Geological District of New York, p. 308.*) In the southeasterly part of the state, bordering on Pennsylvania and New Jersey, its direction varied from south several degrees west, to southeast: and near the city of N. York

the course was N. W. and S. E. (*American Journal of Science*, Vol. 23, p. 243. And Vol. 16, p. 357. Also Prof. Gale's Report for 1839 upon the Geology of the First District.) In the fossiliferous region of western New York, and in the states south of the great western lakes, great numbers of bowlders of primitive rocks are strewed over the surface, significantly called *lost rocks*. These have been satisfactorily traced to the beds from which they were derived on the north side of the lakes in Upper Canada. (See the papers of the Messrs Lapham in Vol. 22, and of Dr. Hildreth in Vol. 29 of *American Journal of Science*. Also the Geological Reports on the state of Ohio and Michigan.) Similar evidence of the southeasterly drift of diluvium exists in Virginia. Prof. W. B. Roger's Report on the Geological Reconnoisance of the State of Virginia p. 16.) According to Dr. Drake, primitive pebbles occur on the right bank of the Mississippi as far south as Natchez. *American Journal of Science* Vol. 29, p. 209.

*Des.* According to Mr. Catlin, (*American Jour. of Science*, Vol. 38, p. 143.) vast quantities of bowlders of primary rocks "are strewed over the great valley of the Missouri and Mississippi, from the Yellow Stone almost to the Gulf of Mexico," which have been drifted thither from the northwest. At the Red Pipe Stone quarry on the Coteau des Prairies, which is several hundred miles west of Lake Superior, he describes five granite bowlders, from 15 to 25 feet in diameter, which he supposes must have been drifted several hundred miles from the north.

*Descrip.* The distance to which bowlders have been driven southeasterly from their native beds in our country, has not been very satisfactorily determined. In New England they have been traced rarely more than 100 to 200 miles: But in the western states they are strewed over a greater distance. I am informed by the gentleman engaged in the geological surveys of those states, that primary bowlders are rarely found south of the river Ohio; but they are strewed over almost every part of Ohio and Michigan. Now the primary rocks from which they have been derived, are found on the north side of the great lakes. This would make their longest transit between 500 and 1000 miles.

*Remark.* It may not improbably be found that some examples of the dispersion of diluvium in our country have resulted from local elevations of the strata, or that the general course of the current has been greatly deflected by the peculiar features of the surface; or that during the retiring of the waters that produced the diluvium in general, the current in particular districts may have been turned into vallies lying in various directions. But all this does not destroy the evidence, which is almost everywhere so abundant, of a very wide and strong current.

of water from the north over this continent; and which may have occurred at a subsequent period.

*Descrip.* On the eastern continent the evidences of a south-erly diluvial current seems almost equally strong. In Great Britain the general course was a little east of south, modified, however, and sometimes very much changed, by the shape of the mountains; some of which, as the Penine chain, appear not to have been passed over by the bowlders, except at their lowest points. In the east part of England, the diluvium appears to have been derived from Scotland, and perhaps also from Norway. (*De La Beche's Manual* p. 189. *Phillip's Geology*, p. 208. Also his *Treatise on Geology*; Vol. I. p. 274.) On the continent of Europe, the Netherlands, Denmark, the plains of the north of Germany, of Poland, and Russia, are strewed over with bowlders and pebbles, which can be traced to the parent rocks in Sweden and Finland; in which countries they are yet more numerous upon the surface. In most cases these bowlders must have crossed the Baltic. In Sweden the current appears to have set S. S. W. The blocks decrease in size on going south, and finally at a great distance (more than 400 miles, *Greenough's Geology*, p. 138.) they disappear. *Tableau des Terrains par Al. Brongniart* p. 77. *Traite Elementaire de Geologie par M. Rozet Tome*, 1. p. 270. *De La Beche's Manual*, p. 189.

*Descrip.* According to Mr. Darwin, the equatorial regions of South America exhibit but few marks of diluvial action, or rather they are destitute of bowlders. But beyond 41° South latitude, they appear in Chili and Patagonia. Hence some geologists (Lyell and Darwin, see *Lyell's Elements*, p. 137.) infer that diluvial phenomena are limited to the colder regions of the globe. But De La Beche describes diluvial detritus as abundant in Jamaica in the West Indies; especially on the plain around Kingston; and says that it appears to have been drifted from the north. (*Geological Trans. Second Series*, Vol. 7. p. 182.) A similar statement was made to me by the late Prof. Hovey, who resided two years in the West Indies. Prof. Strudel states that in the hill country at the foot of the Himalayah mountains in India, erratic bowlders occur. (*American Journal of Science*, Vol. 36. p. 330.) Probably therefore, the equatorial regions have not yet been examined extensively enough to settle this point.

## 2. Effects of Diluvial Action upon the Earth's Surface.

*Descrip.* The tops and steep sides of high mountains and alluvial plains are nearly all the parts of the northern

hemisphere not covered with a coat of boulders, gravel, and sand; whose thickness varies from a few inches to 100 or 200 feet. Scarcely any mountains, indeed, except perhaps the Pyrenees, the Appenines, the Carpathians and the mountains of Bohemia (*Traité de Géologie par M. Rozet, p. 272, Tome 1.*) are wanting in diluvium; and sometimes very large blocks are poised upon their summits.

*Descrip.* The most abundant accumulations of diluvial detritus are found upon moderately elevated ground, near the bases of mountains, and especially near gorges and defiles.

*Descrip.* The large boulders are usually diffused through every part of the finer detritus; but as alluvial agencies wear away the latter, they often leave the former insulated; and when they are numerous, they give a picturesque appearance to the landscape.

*Examples.* A most remarkable example is on Cape Ann, in Massachusetts: especially in the vicinity of Squam; where the eye rests upon almost nothing besides large boulders. Also on the road from Lynn to Salem and Newburyport. Also on Cape Cod and Martha's Vineyard: as well as the Elizabeth Islands.

*Descrip.* Where large accumulations of diluvium exist, they are scooped out into cavities and piled up into rounded hillocks, by the action of water, so as to convey a striking idea of the great force of the currents that formed them. Fig. 95. will give an idea of these elevations and depressions as they occur in Amherst, Massachusetts.

Fig. 95.



*Descrip.* Sometimes these hillocks, 40 or 50 feet high, are arranged in a line at the foot of a mountain, so as to appear almost like the work of man.

Fig. 96. shows a row of these eminences along the base of Hoosac Mountain, in North Adams, Massachusetts.

Fig. 96.

*Diluvial Hillocks. N. Adams.*

Fig. 97. shows a similar group at the base of Monument Mountain, in Great Barrington, on the east side.

Fig. 97.

*Diluvial Hillocks. Monument Mt.*

*Inference.* Hillocks of this description, and others of a similar form, which are the remnants of a tertiary or alluvial deposit, that has been subsequently nearly washed away by water, have probably been often mistaken in the Western States for those artificial mounds, of which there are undoubtedly some examples in that region, constructed by some extinct race of men.

When these mounds are stratified, as they often are, or when of great size, or very numerous, the presumption is very strong. That they are natural. *Illinois Magazine*, Vol. 1. p. 252. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 34. p. 88.

*Descrip.* The size of single bowlders is sometimes enormous. The block out of which was hewn a pedestal for the statue of Peter the Great, weighed 1500 tons. The Needle Mountain in Dauphiny, said to be a bowlder, is 1000 paces in circumference at the bottom, and 2000 at the top. Near Neufchâtel is a block of granite 40 feet high, 50 feet long, and 20 broad, which weighs 3,800,000 pounds. The block called *Pierre a Martin*, contains 10,296 cubic feet. (*Greenough's Geology*, p. 131.) The rock Horeb is a block of granite, 6 yards square, and containing 5,832 cubic feet, lying in the plain near Mount Sinai, from which it was probably detached. (*Greenough*, p. 127.) In this country bowlders occur of equal dimensions. Thus, on Cape Ann and its vicinity, I have not unfrequently met with blocks of sienite not less than 30 feet in diameter; and in the southeast part of Bradford, I noticed one 30 feet square; which, contains 27,000 cubic feet, and weighs not less than 2,310 tons. In the west part of Sandwich on Cape Cod, I have seen many bowlders of granitic gneiss, 20 feet in diameter, which contain 8,000 cubic feet and weigh as much as 680 tons. Two graywacke bowlders of the same size lie a few rods distant from the meeting house in Norton, in Dr. Bates' garden. A granite bowlder of equal dimensions lies about half a mile southeast of the meeting house in Warwick; and one of similar dimensions lies on the western slope of Hoosac mountain in the northeast part of Adams, at least 1000 feet above the valley over which it must have been transported. One of granite lies at the foot of the cliffs at Gay Head on Martha's Vineyard, which is 90 feet in circumference and weighs 1447 tons. Finally, at Fall River is a bowlder of conglomerate, which originally weighed 5400 tons!

*Descrip.* Diluvial action appears to have destroyed numerous species of animals that inhabited the northern regions of the globe at the time of its occurrence.

*Proof.* In diluvial accumulations in the northern hemisphere, have been found the bones of several species of mastodon, hippopotamus, rhinoceros, bear, as well as the mammoth or elephant, megatherium, megalonyx, hyaena, deer, dinotherium, horse, ox, &c. animals, of whose existence since that event we have no evidence. Not less than 100 species have already been found in diluvium, although not more than half are extinct.

*Inference.* A sudden fall of temperature took place in the northern hemisphere at the period of diluvial action.

*Proof.* The animals whose remains are found in diluvium are mostly such as live in tropical climates; which shows that a higher temperature than now exists in these countries, prevailed at the commencement of the diluvial action. And that the change was sudden, appears from the occurrence of the elephant and rhinoceros undecayed in the frozen mud of Siberia, for they must have been encased suddenly in ice to prevent their putrefaction.

*Descrip.* One of the most remarkable effects of diluvial action, is the smoothing and furrowing of the surfaces of rocks in place.

*Remark 1.* Although this is a very common phenomenon, especially in the United States, yet until within a few years, scarcely any examples had been pointed out by geologists: a proof of the little careful attention that had been given to diluvial phenomena. The following examples are only a selected few, out of the multitudes which have been observed in New England.

*Remark 2.* Care must be taken by the observer, not to confound diluvial furrows with those grooves on the surfaces of rocks produced in the direction of the cleavage planes, or the planes of stratification, by the unequal disintegration of the harder and softer parts; nor with the furrows between the veins of segregation, produced in the same manner; nor with ripple marks. In fine, it is best not to consider any case as of decided diluvial origin, unless the grooves cross the planes of cleavage and stratification at a considerable angle. Such are all the cases mentioned below in New England.

*Examples.* In the state of Maine is a good deal of stony rock, often standing upon its edges, that admirably resists atmospheric agencies; and hence it presents a multitude of examples of well marked diluvial furrows. Around the city of Portland, they are very abundant and very distinct; having a direction N. 10° to 15° W. and S. 10° to 15° E. Farther east, as at Hope and Appleton, they run nearly N. W. and S. E. and some of them are a foot in depth, and six inches wide (*First Report on the Geology of Maine*, p. 57.) In other parts of the state, the direction is nearly north and south, or even inclining a few degrees to the N. E. and S. W. (*Second Report on the Geology of Maine*, p. 91.) In the eastern part of Massachusetts and Rhode Island, I might name fifty places where the furrows are obvious and distinct. In Essex County, (Mass.) they are very frequent on the hard sienite rocks; though often these are merely smoothed, and sometimes almost polished. They are visible on the gneiss at the top of the Wachusett mountain, the highest in the eastern part of Massachusetts; being 3000 feet above the ocean. The precipitous hills and the lower grounds of the valley of Connecticut river, are covered with them; and here as well as in nearly all the eastern part of the state, their direction is nearly north and south, usually however inclining a few degrees to the East of South, and West of North, and very rarely the other way. The high mountains west of Connecticut river, embracing the Hoosac and Taconic ranges, some points of which rise 4000 feet above the ocean, exhibit very numerous examples of the smoothing and furrowing effect of diluvial agency.

Graylock, the highest point in Massachusetts is so covered with soil and trees that the rocks are very rarely seen: but on that spur of the mountain called Bald Mountain, whose top is a few hundred feet below Graylock, the furrows are obvious as they are also on the northeast side of the mountain. The high conical mountain in the town of Mount Washington, which is 2600 feet above the ocean, has been worn over its whole surface, and the furrows are still visible in many places; although the rock has been so long exposed naked to atmospheric decomposing agencies. Similar markings are manifest on the top of Tom Ball, a high mountain in Alford, and they may be seen throughout the whole extent of the Taconic range, which on its west side is very precipitous. A large proportion of these grooves run N. W. and S. E. but some of them approach nearer to a coincidence with the meridian. The rock is mica and talcose slate, and in some instances is laid bare for a great distance, so as to show the smoothing and furrowing of its surface over a large extent. Indeed, one cannot stand upon one of these lofty and precipitous ridges, and witness this phenomenon, without being struck with the great power and extent of the current, that has thus left its traces upon some of the most elevated spots in N. England.—Between these mountains and Hudson river the graywacke is crossed by markings running N. W. and S. E. Near the city of New York, according to Prof. Gale, they run in the same direction. In the Western part of N. York, they are numerous, and they run sometimes S. S. W. and N. N. E. They are common also, upon the mountains of Pennsylvania; and also in Ohio, Michigan and Illinois where their most usual course is from N. W. to S. E.

The top of Mount Monadnock in N. Hampshire, which is 3250 feet above the ocean, is a naked surface of many acres of granitic gneiss; and the whole of it is most strikingly grooved and furrowed, the grooves running on the west and southwest sides of the mountain, from north  $10^{\circ}$  west, to south  $10^{\circ}$  east, but on the summit, nearly north and south. I learn from Mr. Abraham Jenkins Jr. to whom I am indebted for the facts respecting this mountain, and who is well qualified for its examination by great familiarity with the phenomena in Massachusetts, that this is a very striking case; and that in the vicinity of the mountain similar grooves occur. He measured some of the furrows on the mountain, and found the largest 14 feet in width and 2 feet deep.

*Descrip.* On the eastern continent these diluvial furrows appear to be far less common than in this country: for notwithstanding the great ability and zeal displayed by European geologists, only a few cases of such grooves have yet been recorded. In Scotland however, they were noticed long ago by Sir James Hall, on green stone and other rocks, having a direction N. W. and S. E. also a similar case is mentioned in North Wales, and in the Brora coal region of Scotland, where they run N. N. W. and S. S. E. They occur also in the Alps, and in Scandinavia this phenomenon seems nearly as common as in New England. Their general course is N. N. E. and S. S. W. though there are local deviations, occasioned by the forms of the hills. "Monsieur Sefstroom," says the distinguished Berzelius, "has found that the northeast part of the mountains of Sweden, are, throughout, rounded and worn from the base to the summit, so as to resemble at a distance, sacks of wool, piled upon each other. The southwest sides of these mountains present almost fresh fractures of the rocks, with their angles rounded, little or none."

*Descrip.* This is a description very exact of many of the

mountains of N. England, although the current here had a little different direction. The grooves are most common and deepest near their summits: and for some distance down their northwardly slopes, if the depression be small. On the opposite slope also, they are sometimes visible, where the slope is quite gentle, but never if it is steep. On the north side the greatest amount of boulders is accumulated. Sometimes they are poised upon the very summit of the mountain, and even upon the very rock which they had contributed to furrow.

*Descrip.* These furrows are rarely met with on pure limestone, on account of its great liability to disintegration. Most of the coarse granites and conglomerates, as well as gneiss are so much decomposed at the surface, as to have lost all traces of these markings. Greenstone, sienite, and porphyry, are frequently rounded and smoothed; but the markings are usually faint on account of their great hardness. Upon the whole, the upturned and smoothed ledges of talcose, micaceous, and argillaceous slates, retain these markings most distinctly. But where the soil has been removed, almost every rock presents them to view. And were the rocks of N. England to be entirely laid bare, I cannot doubt but four fifths of the surface would show marks of this aqueous scarification.

*Inference 1.* It appears that in all cases the direction of these furrows corresponds to that of the drift of the diluvium; and that they are precisely such an effect as we should predict, from the passage of masses of detritus by the force of running water.

*Inf. 2.* Between the time when the diluvial currents began to subside, and that in which rivers assumed essentially their present beds, a long period must have elapsed; during most of which the water must have flowed with far less violence.

*Proof.* Above the stratum of coarse diluvial gravel which we find almost every where, there frequently are placed deposits of clay, sand, and marl. A yellow calcareous loam, scarcely at all stratified, and sometimes from 100 to 200 feet thick, exists along the banks of the Rhine, and is called *Loess*, which may have been deposited by the subsiding diluvial waters:—though on this point there will be a diversity of opinion. (*Lyell's Geology Vol. 2, p. 289.*) Rev. W. B. Clarke describes the diluvium of the county of Suffolk, in England, as consisting in part of a bed of clay in some places 400 feet thick. (*Proceedings of the Geological Society of London, No. 50, p. 532.*) In New England a bluish clay is common in troughs and basins, both in the primary and secondary strata; and it lies above the diluvial deposit; though sometimes interstratified with it. Its thickness is in some places not less than 100 feet. Above the clay is a deposit of sand, which in its lower part alternates with the clay. During the deposition of the sand, there was probably more agitation in the waters than while the clay was forming: for the upper surface of the sand sometimes shows diluvial excavations of considerable depth.

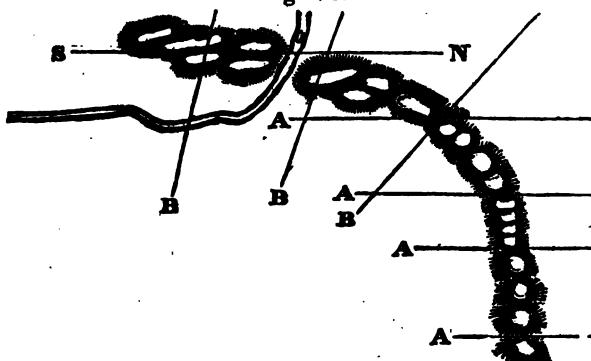
*Remark 1.* In my Report on the Geology of Massachusetts, I have described the clay and sand above mentioned in New England as the newest of the tertiary strata. But I have since discovered evidence (which would occupy too much space to be here inserted,) that they lie above the principal diluvial deposit.

*Rem. 2.* In the northern part of New York, Prof. Emmons says that in the valley of Champlain, a deposit of clay and sand, which he calls tertiary, lies upon the surface which is abraded by diluvial action. I have no doubt but that these deposits are the same as those which I have denominated diluvial sand and clay. *Report of the New York Geologists for 1839*, p. 350.

*Prin.* In gradually assuming lower levels, the diluvial waters produced in strata favorably situated, numerous valleys of denudation; and greatly modified other vallies, produced by previous agencies.

*Proof.* Many valleys have been imputed to diluvial agency which were due to other causes. But when we find the surface of a country cut up into numerous parallel valleys of no great depth, which correspond with the course taken by the diluvial current, and show on their sides and bottoms, diluvial furrows, and which cannot be imputed to any previous disturbance; especially when they cross mountain ridges obliquely in order to conform to the direction of the diluvial current, it seems a fair inference to ascribe these valleys to the diluvial waters. In Europe many examples have been pointed out. In New England a fine instance occurs on the trap ranges of Holyoke and Tom, in the valley of Connecticut river: where a great number of valleys of moderate depth cross the precipitous ridge, in the direction of the diluvial current, retaining their parallelism, over the whole mountain, but being thereby made to form almost every possible angle with the curvilinear direction of the range. Thus, Fig. 98 shows the top of this ridge, crossed by Connecticut river, and by numerous valleys A,A,A,A, N S. Now if they had been the result of the original elevation, or internal structure of the mountain, they would change their direction to B,B,B, as the ridge altered its course. But instead of this, we find them still continuing to run nearly north and south, as N. S.; even where the ridge has nearly that direction.

Fig. 98.



*Theories of Diluvial Action.*

*Remark.* On no subject in Geology probably, is there such a diversity of opinion as in respect to the cause of diluvial action. A principal reason of this diversity, lies in the proneness of geologists to form their opinions from the facts that have fallen under their own notice in a particular district. Other causes, however, are the inherent difficulty of the subject; the want of a knowledge of diluvial agency over the whole globe; and the imperfection of our knowledge in this respect even of the northern hemisphere. Under these circumstances, I shall state the different theories, with the principal arguments in their favor and against them.

*Prin.* Any theory of diluvial action to be satisfactory, must explain the four following varieties of the phenomena: 1. Erratic Bowlers: 2. Diluvium: 3. Diluvial Furrows and Valleys: 4. Diluvial Elevations and Depressions. Some theories might satisfactorily explain particular phases of the phenomena, but fail in their application to the entire group.

*First Theory.*

Some suppose that the diluvial phenomena which geology exhibits, resulted from the deluge of Noah.

*Proof.* 1. In both instances the diluvial action appears to have been comparatively recent: 2. And very extensive if not universal.

*Objections.* 1. Nearly all the animals found in diluvium belong to extinct species if not genera; and hence it is probable the present species did not exist when it was deposited. 2. The remains of man have not been found in diluvium, as they ought to be if he existed in the countries that have been examined. 3. The time occupied in the production of diluvial phenomena must have been much greater than that assigned by the sacred historian for the duration of the Noachian deluge. This objection is very strong to those who have carefully examined diluvial phenomena. *American Biblical Repository*, Vol. 11. p. 4.

*Second Theory.*

Diluvial action, it is maintained, is nothing more than terrestrial alluvial action in early times: that is, existing rivers, the bursting of lakes, landslips and the like, will account for most of the phenomena of what is called diluvial action. *Macculloch's and Lyell's Geology*.

*Proof.* Rivers may be conceived to have flowed in almost any situation on the globe where diluvium is now found, if we

only admit subsequent changes of level, and long continued erosive action: and in that way a large proportion of diluvial detritus might have been accumulated. If such a body of water as lake Erie, and especially lake Superior, were suddenly to burst its barrier, it would inundate a vast region of country and produce wide and powerful currents.

*Objections.* Admitting that rivers have greatly changed their beds and their levels, and that in this way limited cases of diluvial action may be explained, yet the most important cases remain unexplained. It appears to be well established, that a current from the northern parts of Europe has carried diluvium a great distance southerly, over a region at least 1500 miles broad; or from Netherlands to Moscow. In North America, also, a current set from the north and northwest, from the extremity of Nova Scotia to the great western lakes; a distance of 1200 or 1500 miles. How could such currents have been produced by rivers? 2. There is decisive evidence that the relative levels of different portions of the surface have not been essentially changed since the period of diluvial action: For the diluvium is accumulated in the greatest abundance on the northern side of mountains: and the boulders decrease in size and numbers in ascending these mountains: all of which proves that these mountains occupied their present place when the diluvial waters poured over them. 3. No examples are on record in which extensive lakes have burst their barriers suddenly, and produced extensive inundations: and there is reason to believe, that where large bodies of water are drained, the process will be a very gradual one, producing no inundation. 4. There are no examples among diluvial phenomena of those excavations called *pot holes*, so frequent in the gorges of rivers; and hence the currents must have been oceanic.

*Remark.* The supposed extensive depression around the Caspian Sea in Asia can no longer be referred to, to illustrate this case of floods from the bursting out of lakes and inland seas: since it seems proved that no such depression exists; as has already been mentioned, p. 11.

### *Third Theory.*

Some theorists maintain that diluvial phenomena were produced by currents, tides, and waves, with icebergs, in the ocean, while our continents were beneath its waters; and while they were gradually rising above them. By means of the icebergs, the boulders that are so widely distributed, and which were carried across such deep valleys, are supposed to have been removed and dropped in their present position. *Lyell's Anniversary Address before the London Geological Society.*

*Feb. 19th, 1836, p. 32. American Journal of Science, Vol. 35.  
p. 88. Second Report on the Geology of New York, p. 307.*

*Proof.* 1. Wide currents exist at present in the ocean, which probably convey detritus to great distances: as for instance, the Greenland current, which deposits sand on the banks of Newfoundland. If a similar polar current existed when the northern part of this country was beneath the ocean, it might have carried the detritus southerly in the manner in which we find it distributed. 2. As the land was gradually rising from the ocean, the tides and breakers must have deeply excavated the shores, producing valleys of denudation, and swelling the amount of detritus in the ocean. 3. Icebergs might have been borne by these currents very far southerly, as they now are, loaded with the fragments of distant rocks, which, as the ice melted, would be strewed over the bottom and mixed with the finer materials borne along by the waters. The subsequent elevation of the bottom of this ocean, would present diluvial accumulations such as we now witness.

*Objections.* Admitting that some limited examples of diluvium may have been produced in the manner this theory suggests, and that many insulated and far traveled boulders may have been transported by icebergs, (and it seems difficult to conceive of any other mode in which many of them could have been placed where they now are,) yet it fails to account for the most important part of the phenomena. 1. Oceanic currents, such as now exist, (and this theory does not admit of any more powerful in early times,) have not sufficient velocity to transport detritus as coarse as the great body of diluvium, unless it be in some very limited spots; as in narrow straits where their velocity is increased by winds and tides. They could have carried nothing coarser than sand. Much less could such currents have produced that powerful erosion of the surface of rocks, which they now exhibit: for even the most powerful mountain streams, aided by ice floods, do not make as much impression of this sort upon the rocks, as many of the tops of the mountains in N. England exhibit. 2. Icebergs conveyed by common oceanic currents, though they might transport detached masses of rock, and drop them upon the bottom, could not have produced the grooves and scratches which are so abundant in this country, not merely upon the tops of mountains, but on their sides, and at the bottoms of valleys, wherever a northerly current could reach. If we could suppose the number of icebergs to have been very great, and loaded with an immense quantity of detritus; and that their velocity was vastly greater than that of any known oceanic current, the cause

would be more nearly commensurate to the effects. 3. If icebergs conveyed southerly most of the boulders and diluvium of New England, they must have been formed in almost every part of that region: since these boulders and diluvium were detached from almost every part. But the climate is not now cold enough to form such icebergs; except on a very limited scale; and as we have already seen, there is evidence that the climate was warmer when diluvial action commenced. 4. The boulders are scattered southerly from the parent rock and diminish gradually in size and quantity, just as would be the case, were they scattered by a powerful current: but had icebergs lifted them up, they must have been floated a considerable distance before they had melted out. 5. But the most decisive objection to this theory, and the one that seems to settle the question, is derived from the fact that diluvial action did not take place till after the deposition of the tertiary strata: for it hence follows that most of the present dry land must have existed before that period. Thus, in New England, the rocks contain coal and numerous impressions of terrestrial plants; which imply that dry land existed in the vicinity, even before their deposition; and the same thing is proved by the fossil remains of the red sandstone in the valley of Connecticut river. There is other evidence that the primary strata in that part of the country were elevated before that period. Yet all these primary and secondary strata, as well as the tertiary strata on Martha's Vineyard, Long Island, and in New Jersey, are alike strewed over with diluvium; and the tops of the mountains, at least of all not more than 5000 feet high, have been powerfully abraded by a diluvial agency from the north, which has swept over all the strata indiscriminately almost without any reference to their strike, or the deep vallies by which they are furrowed. How could this work have been performed beneath the waters of the ordinary ocean, when the rocks were already several thousand feet above its surface.

#### *Fourth Theory.*

Other theorists regard diluvial phenomena as the effect of the sudden elevation of chains of mountains, while yet they were wholly or in part beneath the waters; which, rushing away from the axis of elevation, would transport detritus in various directions. *Phillips' Geology*, p. 205.

*Proof.* The Alps are a striking example to establish this theory: for they appear to have been raised, if not from the ocean, yet to a considerable height after the deposition of ter-

tiary strata: for remnants of these strata are found covering their summits, and in their mountain valleys; while the diluvium is scattered in all directions from the central axis. It is probable that when the facts are more fully understood, it will be possible to refer all diluvium boulders and grooves to the elevation of particular mountains.

*Objections.* I understand this theory to impute diluvial phenomena to the original elevation of the mountain chains, whose surfaces exhibit those phenomena; and not to the upheaving of the bottom of distant oceans, whereby the waters were thrown over those mountains. This latter supposition belongs to another theory, which I shall examine soon. The theory under consideration will very reasonably explain some cases of diluvial action: but labors under several strong objections when applied to all the phenomena. 1. In a majority of instances the mountains appear to have been so far elevated before diluvial action took place, as in a great measure to be above the waters; and consequently the receding waves could affect only their lower parts; yet their summits exhibit as strong marks of diluvial agency as their bases. This is the case in Sweden according to Sefstroem and Berzelius: the latter of whom says, that "the northeast part of the mountains of Sweden are throughout rounded and worn from the base to the summit;" and he adds, "the origin of these phenomena appears to be attributable to an immense current of water, filled with the ruins of rocks, which has passed in this direction over the Scandinavian soil, wearing and furrowing the mountains which were capable of resisting it, breaking down and tearing away others, and producing that immense quantity of rounded pebbles with which Sweden is inundated, and which has been transported even to Germany, where the Scandinavian granite is recognized in the water worn pebbles and gravel." (See *Buffalo Journal*, Dec. 15th, 1831.) Now where in Sweden, or Norway, or Lapland, is the mountain range whose elevation, since the deposition of the tertiary strata, could have produced this tremendous rush of waters; for the plains of Denmark, Prussia, and Russia, where the primary Scandinavian detritus is scattered, are composed of tertiary strata. (See *Lyell's Map of the Tertiary Strata in Europe*.) A similar case occurs in the northern part of the United States. As already described, the highest parts of New England have been swept over by a powerful current from the north and northwest. Dr. Bigsby describes the whole of Upper Canada from Lake Huron eastward, as showing marks of a diluvial current from the same direction. Here then we have a long belt of primitive moun-

tainous country, 500 or 600 miles wide, over which this diluvial torrent rushed, after the deposition of the tertiary strata that appear along its southern border, and which are strewed over with diluvial detritus. In this whole region no evidence has yet been discovered, that any part of it was elevated as recently as the tertiary period, except perhaps a slight movement along its southern borders. Where then are we to look for the mountain range, whose elevation threw such a wave over New England? It may indeed be found in the vast region north of Canada: but such a case would rather belong to the next theory to be examined. 2. The direction of the diluvial current often crosses all the systems of elevation in a country, in such a manner as shows that it could have no connection with any of them. This is particularly the case in New England; where most of the systems of elevation run nearly north and south, or east and west. We have one also of limited extent running N. E. and S. W. and another N. W. and S. E. But the diluvial current has swept over them all indifferently; and has evidently not been influenced by any of them. 3. The cause in many instances seems inadequate to the effect. The paroxysmal elevation of a mountain chain would cause the waters to rush away from it violently, and of course a great deal of detritus would be swept along. But such an erosion as the mountains of Scandinavia and of New England have experienced, could never have been produced by one sudden and transient rush of waters over them, however violent and filled with detritus. The action must have been continued for a considerable length of time; as any one will admit who has carefully examined the phenomena in those countries. Especially is this cause insufficient to explain the long continued action of the gradually diminishing waters which some regions (Ex. gr. the valley of Connecticut River,) exhibit.

### *Fifth Theory.*

The fundamental principle in this theory is the same as in the last, viz. that diluvial action has resulted from the sudden elevation of portions of the earth's crust: but it supposes this elevation to have taken place in some instances at the bottom of oceans, remote from the region where diluvial phenomena occur; and that these phenomena have resulted from the inundating waves that have rushed from the centre of disturbance. While it admits that the diluvial detritus of the Alps, and perhaps some other mountains, may have resulted from the local elevation of these mountains, it supposes that a more powerful

and extensive rise has taken place in the arctic regions, whereby the northern ocean has been driven southward, over a considerable part of Europe and America, bearing along masses of ice loaded with detritus. And further, that there may have been a succession of elevatory movements, which produced successive waves; so that the waters may have repeatedly fallen and risen again, and while at their ebb, they may have been frozen to the surface, so that as they subsequently rose, vast masses of ice may have been driven along, loaded with detritus, which may have been forced up declivities considerably steep, and thus the surface be powerfully and rapidly abraded, and the rocks scoured and furrowed. *De La Beche's Geological Manual*, p. 172. *Also his Theoretical Geology*, p. 319. *Biblical Repository* Vol. 11, p. 23.

*Proof.* It seems to be pretty well established, that in early times repeated upheavings of the bottom of the ocean have taken place; and the great masses of detritus which some of the mechanical rocks contain seem to be the result of the abrasion which must have then occurred. At the present day, also, similar elevations occur; (ex. gr. Hotham or Graham Island in the Mediterranean, in 1831. Sabrina, near the Azores, in 1811: and among the Aleutian Islands in 1814, an island, said to be 3000 feet high:—another in 1806, which is permanent: and another in 1795. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 295 and 388.) and in some instances, we are able to see the effects in the tremendous waves that follow; as during the earthquake at Lisbon in 1765. The force of such waves, as they reached the shore, and successively rose higher and higher, were a large area of the northern ocean to be suddenly upraised, can scarcely be estimated; loaded as they would be with ice; and it seems almost the only conceivable agency by which large boulders could be forced up hills of considerable steepness, and deep diluvial grooves be formed on the northern slopes of hills in Sweden and America. 2. In the latter country certainly, if not in the former, it seems scarcely possible to doubt that the surface of the country is essentially the same now as when the diluvial agency was exerted upon it; except perhaps those few local minor and slow elevations and depressions of which probably every country furnishes some examples: and hence the source of diluvial action must be sought out of the country.

*Objections.* 1. It is difficult to conceive that the force of an oceanic current, however violent at its commencement, should be sufficient after passing from the arctic regions to the 45th or even 40th degree of north latitude, to accomplish what the di-

uvial current has accomplished in some northern countries. Indeed, it is difficult to see how water under any circumstances, even with the aid of icebergs, could sweep southerly to so great a distance, almost without reference to the direction of valleys and the obstruction of precipitous ridges, so great an amount of diluvium, and wear down and round the crests of high mountains. This objection, however, lies rather against any theory that imputes diluvial agency to water, than to the particular one under consideration; and probably it will weigh little with any one who has examined diluvial phenomena, and who can hardly fail to see that water *has done*, what *a priori* we might deem impossible. 2. A great length of time appears to have been occupied by the diluvial waters, if not in accumulating the coarser and principal coat of diluvium, yet in wearing out vallies of denudation and furrowing the rocks in particular districts.

#### *Sixth Theory.*

A theory has lately been advanced, which attributes the accumulation of boulders and the furrowing of rocks, to the descent of glaciers along the slopes of mountains, as the strata were elevated suddenly: and in this case it is not necessary to suppose the mountains surrounded by, or rising from the ocean. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 35. p. 241.

*Obj.* This theory is so evidently insufficient to account for the *tout ensemble* of diluvial phenomena, that it seems needless to spend time in its examination. That it might account for some detrital accumulations at the foot of steep mountains, elevated since the deposition of the tertiary strata, and form some grooves on their slopes, is admitted. But how obvious that the great mass of diluvium, which has been spread over comparatively level regions, and especially that portion by no means small, in New England, which has been driven up moderate slopes, how obvious that this could never have been the work of glaciers! How absurd to suppose a glacier siding down a declivity several hundred miles in length; as for instance from Scandinavia across the Baltic, 400 miles south upon the plains of Germany. See Prof. Strudler's examination of this theory, in the *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 36, p. 325.

#### *Seventh Theory.*

A seventh theory, which was proposed originally by Dr. Halley, and which has found supporters even to this day, (Geolo-

*gie Populaire, par N. Boubee, p. 46. Paris 1833,) supposes a comet to have come into contact with the earth; or at least into near proximity, by which, either the axis of the earth was changed, or a powerful tide raised so as to produce a deluge.*

*Objection.* This theory will probably demand little farther attention, (waiving all other considerations,) since it is now rendered probable, that comets have "no more solidity or coherence than a cloud of dust or a wreath of smoke,"—"through which the stars are visible with no perceptible diminution of their brightness." *Whewell's Bridgewater Treatise, p. 152, 153.*

*Inf. 1.* It is probable that the philosophical and unprejudiced mind will feel as if none of the preceding theories furnish an entirely satisfactory account of the origin and operation of diluvial agency; although some of them may explain most of the phenomena. And hence such a person will infer, that the time has not yet arrived for forming a complete theory on this subject; and therefore that it is best to keep the mind open to facts and reasonings from all quarters. He cannot, however avoid the general and very important conclusion, that near the close of the tertiary period, most of the dry land in the northern hemisphere, has been swept over by powerful currents of water; either at once or at successive periods.

*Inf. 2.* Although diluvium may have been produced at different epochs, yet we may be sure that the interval was not great, in a geological sense, between them. For were the periods very remote from one another, the diluvium, and especially the furrows on the rocks, would exhibit marks of a diversity in age. But they all appear comparatively recent. *De La Beche's Manual, p. 193.*

*Inf. 3.* It appears that deluges, or diluvial currents, have often occurred on the globe during the deposition of the fossiliferous rocks.

*Proof.* 1. Different mountain chains have been elevated at different epochs during the formation of these rocks and thus powerful diluvial currents must have been produced. 2. Numerous beds of detrital rocks occur among the fossiliferous strata, and these are probably in general consolidated diluvium.

## SECTION VII.

## OPERATION OF ORGANIC AGENCIES IN PRODUCING GEOLOGICAL CHANGES.

*Remark.* Many of the facts naturally belonging to this Section, have been necessarily anticipated in the preceding Sections; and will therefore, need only to be referred to in this place.

*Agency of Man.*

*Prin.* The human race produce geological changes in several modes: 1. By the destruction of vast numbers of animals and plants to make room for themselves. 2. By aiding in the wide distribution of many animals and plants, that accompany man in his migrations. 3. By destroying the equilibrium between conflicting species of animals and plants; and thus enabling some species to predominate at the expense of others. 4. By altering the climate of large countries by means of cultivation. 5. By resisting the encroachments of rivers and the ocean. 6. By helping to degrade the higher parts of the earth's surface. 7. By contributing peculiar fossil relics to the alluvial depositions now going on, on the land and in the sea: such as the skeletons of his own frame, the various productions of his art, numerous gold and silver coins, jewelry, cannon balls, &c. that sink to the bottom of the ocean in shipwrecks, or become otherwise entombed.

*Examples.* The only examples of the entire extinction of the larger animals coeval with man; and probably through his agency, are 1. The great Irish Elk, which was 10 feet high to the top of the horns, which are from 10 to 14 feet between their tips. 2. The *Dodo*, a bird larger than the turkey, which existed in Mauritius and the adjacent islands when they were colonized by the Dutch 200 years ago: but it is no longer to be found; and even all the stuffed specimens that were brought to Europe are lost: so that a head and a foot of one individual in the Ashmolean Museum at Oxford, and the leg of another in the British Museum, are all that remains of it, except some fossil bones lately found in the Isle of France. 3. The *Apteryx ratsirala* of New Zealand appears to be on the point of extinction, if not actually extinct: as only one specimen of it exists in Europe: and no others can be obtained, though the missionaries say that its skin is still worn by the natives. *Wonders of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 105.

In particular countries it is a more common occurrence for species to become extinct; as the beaver, wolf, and bear, in England. In this country the animals of the forests are disappearing or moving westward, as the forests are clearing up. Since the discovery of the island of South Georgia, in 1771, one million two hundred thousand seal skins have been annually taken from thence; and nearly as many more from the island of Desolation. The animal is becoming extinct at these

islands. How many of the smaller animals may have become extinct, through the agency of man, it is impossible to ascertain.

It has been maintained with great confidence, that the climate of Europe is very much warmer than in the days of ancient Rome: and this has been imputed to the clearing away of the forests. (*Rees' Cyclopædia, Article, Climate.*) But M. Arago has lately rendered it probable, that no such change has taken place. (*Lyell's Principles of Geology, Vol. 2. p. 107.*) In North America, however, the extremes of heat and cold have probably been modified by the clearing away of the forests.

In Italy the Po, Adige, and other rivers, are prevented from overflowing the adjacent country by embankments. These have been carried so high, and the bed of the river has so much filled up in some places, that the surface of the Po is more elevated at Ferrara than the roofs of the houses. *Lyell's Principles of Geology, Vol. 1. p. 179.*

*Inference.* Some writers maintain that as species of animals and plants disappear from the earth, new species are created to take their place, that the proper equilibrium of organic nature may be preserved. But as no certain example of the creation of a new species has yet been discovered, this opinion can be regarded only as an hypothesis: And the majority of authors suppose that in general, no new creation takes place, until nearly the entire race, inhabiting a country at any one period, have been destroyed, either by a sudden catastrophe, or in the slow manner that has been described.

*Obs.* This question, with the whole subject of the permanence, distribution, and mutual influence of species of animals and plants, is fully and ably discussed in *Lyell's Principles of Geology, Book 3.* The general principles regulating their distribution has been given in Section V.

### *Agency of Other Animals.*

*Prin.* Very many other animals exert an influence on geological changes analogous to that of man, though less in degree, except the following.

### *Polyparia or Polyps.*

*Remark.* The lithological character of the stony habitations erected by these minute animals, has been described in Section III. Some account of the Polyps has also been given in Section VI. The history of *Coral Reefs* remains to be described.

*Descrip.* Coral Reefs are ridges of calcareous rock, whose basis is coral, (chiefly of the genera *Porites, Astrea, Madrepora, Meandrina* and *Caryophyllia*,) and whose interstices and surface are covered by broken fragments of the same, with broken shells and echini, and sand, all cemented together by calcareous matter. They are built up by the Polyparia, apparently on the margin of volcanic craters, beneath the ocean, not generally from a depth greater than 25 or 30 feet, yet sometimes prob-

ably 90 feet. The polyparia continue to build until the ridge gets to the surface of the sea at low water; after which, the sea washes upon it fragments of coral, drift wood, &c. and a soil gradually accumulates, which is at length occupied by animals with man at their head. The reefs are usually arranged in a circular manner, with a lagoon in the center, where, in water a few fathoms deep, grow an abundance of delicate species of corals, and other marine animals, whose beautiful forms and colors rival the richest flower garden. Volcanic agency often lifts the reef far above the waters, and sometimes covers one reef with lava, which in its turn is covered with another formation of coral. The growth of coral structures is so extremely slow, that centuries are required to produce any important progress. The rate of increase has not been determined.

*Descrip.* The diameter of these circular reefs has been found to vary from less than one to 30 miles. On the outside, the reef is usually very precipitous, and the water often of unfathomable depth. Fig. 99. is a view of one of these circular islands in the south seas, called Whitsunday Isle; so far reclaimed from the waters as to be covered with cocoa nut trees and with some human dwellings.

Fig. 99.



Whitsunday: a Coral Island.

*Descrip.* These circular islets occur abundantly in the Pacific Ocean, between the thirtieth parallels of latitude. They abound also, in the Indian Ocean, in the Arabian and Persian Gulfs, in the West Indies, &c. Usually they are scattered in a

linear manner over a great extent. Thus, on the eastern coast of New Holland, is a reef 350 miles long. Disappointment Islands and Duff's Group are connected by 600 miles of coral reefs, over which the natives can travel from one island to another. Between New Holland and New Guinea, is a line of reefs 700 miles long, interrupted in no place by channels more than 30 miles wide. A chain of coral islets 480 geographical miles long, has long been known by the name of the Maldivas. *Lyell's Principles of Geology, Vol. 2. p. 172.*

### *Infusoria.*

*Rem.* It is certainly one of the most astonishing discoveries of modern science, that the animalculæ of infusions, of which 500,000,000 may live and sport in a drop of water, should originate extensive formations of rocks and soils by their skeletons. But the mystery is explained when we learn how astonishing is their power of multiplication. The facts on this subject, however, have been so fully detailed in Section V. that nothing more can be profitably added in this place.

### *Agency of Plants.*

*Descrip.* Animal and vegetable substances, when buried in the earth, or the waters, sometimes undergo an almost entire decomposition: at other times, this is very partial; and sometimes the change is so slow that for years scarcely no apparent progress is made. Different substances will be the result of these different degrees of decomposition.

### *Geine and Geates.*

*Descrip.* When a complete decomposition takes place, a compound called *Geine* is the result. If acted upon by an alkali, it assumes acid properties; and then combines with earths, alkalies, and oxides, forming neutral salts, which may be called *Geates*. And in fact, most of the geine in soils exists as geate of alumina, of lime, of magnæsia, of iron, and manganese. It is these geates, with some geine in an uncombined state, mixed with the detritus derived from the disintegration of rocks, and which are mostly silicates, that form soils, and especially vegetable mould. These geates and geine are more or less soluble in water, and in that condition are taken up by rootlets of plants, and form a large part of their nourishment. Hence it is that the thickness of vegetable mould rarely becomes very great, even in uncultivated regions; though some of the prairie soils are said to be several feet deep. If organic mat-

ters upon the earth's surface are not converted into geine and geates, they are liable to be changed into their original ultimate elements, and to escape in the form of gas. But in the condition of geates they are permanent. *Report on a Re-examination of the Geology of Massachusetts* p. 30.

*Remark.* Some writers maintain that geine is composed of two or three acids; the crenic and apocrenic. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 36. p. 369.

#### Peat.

*Descrip.* Peat usually consists of soluble and insoluble geine, with a mixture of undecomposed vegetable matter, and some earths. Most of it results from the decomposition of certain mosses; especially of the genus *Sphagnum*; which decay at their lower extremity, while the top continues to flourish with vigor. Trees and whatever other organic matter happen to get into these peat bogs, soon become enveloped and assist to swell the amount. In some instances the beds have acquired a thickness of more than 40 feet.

*Descrip.* In tropical climates, except on high lands, the decomposition of vegetable matter is so rapid that it is resolved into its ultimate elements before peat can be produced. Hence peat is limited chiefly to the colder parts of the globe. In Ireland, the peat bogs are said to occupy one tenth of the surface, and one of them, on the Shannon, is 50 miles long and two or three broad. In Massachusetts, exclusive of the four western counties, the amount of peat has been estimated at not less than 120 millions of cords; and probably this falls far short of the actual amount.

*Descrip.* By the long continued action of water and other agents, the geine of peat is changed into bitumen and carbon, which constitute lignite and bituminous coal. In a few instances the process of bituminization has been found considerably advanced in the beds of peat. *Macculloch's System of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 352. *Dr. C. T. Jackson's Second Report on the Geology of Maine*, p. 80. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 35. p. 345.

*Descrip.* Peat bogs are remarkable for their antiseptic power, or the power of preserving animal substances from putrefaction; some remarkable cases of which are on record. (*Leyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 115.) Whether this be owing to the existence of acetic acid in the peat, or to the conversion of the animal muscle into adipocere, seems to be not well ascertained.

*Descrip.* Peat bogs sometimes burst their barriers in consequence of heavy rains, and produce extensive inundations of black mud.

*Descrip.* The increase of peat varies so much under different circumstances, that it is of no use to attempt to ascertain its rate of growth. On the continent of Europe, it is stated to have gained seven feet in 30 years. *Macculloch's System of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 344.

*Descrip.* Where peat is formed in, or transported into estuaries, it is sometimes covered with a deposit of mud: over this another layer of peat forms, and in this way several alternations may occur.

*Descrip.* In some peat bogs, large trees have been found standing where they originally grew, yet immersed to the depth of 20 feet: as in the Isle of Man. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 113.

*Descrip.* The following analysis of three specimens of marsh peat from Massachusetts, will give an idea of the composition of this substance.

	From Sunderland.	From Westboro'.	From Hadley.
Soluble Geline,	26.00	48.80	34.00
Insoluble, do.	59.60	43.60	60.60
Sulphate of Lime,	4.48	1.88	1.36
Phosphate of do.	0.72	0.12	0.24
Silicates,	9.20	5.60	4.40
	100.00	100.00	100.00

### Drift Wood.

*Descrip.* Large rivers which pass through vast forests, carry down immense quantities of timber. When these rivers overflow their banks, this timber is in part deposited upon the low grounds. But much of it also collects in the eddies along the shores, or is carried into the ocean. After a time it becomes water-logged; that is, saturated with water; and sinks to the bottom. Thus a deposit of entangled wood is often formed over large areas. This is subsequently covered by mud; and then another layer of wood is brought over the mud: so that in the course of ages, several alternations of wood and soil are accumulated. The wood becomes slowly changed into what Dr. Macculloch terms *Forest Peat*; that is, peat which retains its woody fibre.

*Example.* 1. The Mississippi furnishes the most remarkable example known of these accumulations. In consequence of some obstruction in the arm of the river called the Atchafalaya, supposed to have been formerly the bed of the Red River, a raft had accumulated in 35 years, which in 1816 was 10 miles long, 220 yards wide, and 8 feet thick. Although floating, it is covered with living plants, and of course with soil. Similar rafts occur on the red river: and one on the Washita, concealed the surface for 17 leagues. At the mouth of the Mississippi,

also, numerous alternations of drift wood and mud exist, extending over hundreds of square leagues. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 182. 228. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 3. p. 17.

*Ex 2* Similar deposits of wood and mud are found in the river Mackenzie, which empties into the North Sea; and in the lakes through which it passes. At the mouth of the river, which is almost beyond the region of vegetation, are extensive deposits brought from the more southern regions, through which the river passes. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 136.

*Ex. 3.* A part of the drift wood which is brought down the Mississippi and other rivers, along the coast of America, is carried northward by the Gulf Stream, and thrown upon the coasts of Greenland. The same thing happens in the bays of Spitzbergen, and on the coasts of Siberia. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 138.

*Inference.* In the history of common peat and drift wood, we see the origin of the beds of coal which exist in the older strata: For it needs only that the layers of peat (in which term I include submerged drift wood,) should be bituminized, and the intervening layers of sand and mud be consolidated, in order to produce a genuine coal formation. Common marsh peat alone, can have originated but a small part of the beds of coal. *Phillips' Geology*, p. 116.

### *Consolidation of Loose Materials.*

*Rem.* Having in this and the preceding Sections described a variety of natural processes by which just such materials as form the fossiliferous rocks are produced, it remains to enquire whether any agents are now in operation to effect their consolidation.

*Prin.* A considerable degree of solidity is sometimes produced by mere desiccation.

*Examples.* 1. When clay is exposed for a long time to the sun, it becomes as hard as some rocks—*ex. gr.* the marly clay dug from the bottom of Lake Superior. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 217. 2. Some rocks, when dug from considerable depth in the earth, in so soft a state as to be readily cut with a knife, become very hard on exposure to the atmosphere.

*Prin.* Carbonate of lime, conveyed in a state of solution among the loose particles of gravel, sand, clay, or mud, and there precipitated, becomes a very efficient agent of consolidation.

*Examples.* 1. On the shores of the Bermuda and West Indian Islands, extensive accumulations of broken shells, corals, and sand, are formed upon the shores by the waves; and these are subsequently consolidated, frequently into very hard rock, by the infiltration of the water which contains carbonate of lime in solution. The famous Gaudalope rock, in which human skeletons, along with pottery, stone arrow heads, and wooden ornaments, are found, is of the same kind. 2. The Mediterranean delta of the Rhone, is ascertained to be in a good measure solid rock, produced by the numerous springs that empty into it, that contain carbonate of lime in solution. The same is true of the deposits at the

mouths of other rivers in the south part of Italy: but more especially on the east coast of the Mediterranean; where the ancient Sidon, formerly on the coast, is now 2 miles inland. (*Lyell's Principles of Geology, Vol. I. p. 236. 3.*) In Pownal, Vermont, 3 miles north of Williams College, large masses of diluvial gravel are cemented by carbonate of lime. 4. I have specimens of a calcareous breccia from West Stockbridge, in Massachusetts, which was formed by the chips thrown off in hewing marble, cemented together by the stream that passed over them, so as to be nearly as solid as the original limestone. This was accomplished in 17 years.

*Prin.* Another agent of consolidation is the red or peroxide of iron; or rather the carbonate of iron; since the peroxide is not soluble in water, without carbonic acid.

*Examples.* 1. On the northern coast of Cornwall, Eng. large masses of drifted sand have been cemented by iron into rocks, solid enough sometimes to be employed for building stones. 2. A similar case occurs on the coast of Karamania, and other parts of Asia Minor. (*Dr. Le Becke's Manual, p. 78.*) In the United States it is common to find the sand and gravel of the diluvial and tertiary strata, more or less consolidated by the hydrated peroxide of iron.

*Prin.* Silica dissolved in water, appears to have been in former times, an important agent in consolidating rocks: But at the present day it seems to be limited chiefly to deposits from thermal waters; since it is only water in this condition that will dissolve silica in much quantity.

*Examples.* The deposits around the Geysers in Iceland, the Azores Islands, &c.

*Prin.* Heat is an important agent in the consolidation of rocks: the most so when it produces complete fusion; yet this is not necessary to the production of a good degree of solidification.

*Examples.* The instances are so common in the arts, (as in burning bricks, pottery, porcelain, &c.) where heat solidifies; and also in the vicinity of volcanoes, where loose materials have become very hard by the proximity of lava, that particular instances need not be pointed out.

*Prin.* In many of the cases that have been described, great pressure assists in the work of consolidation. Indeed, it is sometimes sufficient of itself to bring the particles within the sphere of cohesive attraction.

*Example.* This principle is too well understood to require particular instances to be pointed out.

#### *General Inference from this and the Preceding Section.*

*Inf.* From the facts detailed in this and the preceding Section, it appears that all the stratified fossiliferous rocks of any importance, may have resulted from causes now in operation.

*Proof and Examples.* 1. Beds of clay need only to be consolidated to become clay slate, graywacke slate, or shale. 2. The same is true of fine mud. 3. Sand consolidated by carbonate of lime, will produce calcareous sandstone: by iron,

ferruginous sandstone. 4. Diluvial deposits, in like manner, will form conglomerates of every age, according to variations in the agents of consolidation. 5. Marls need only to be consolidated to form argillaceous limestones; and if sand be mixed with marl, the limestone will be siliceous. 6. Coral reefs and deposits of Travertin, subjected to strong heat under pressure, will produce those secondary limestones that are more or less crystalline: but more of this under the next Section. 7. We have already seen how beds of lignite and coal may be produced from peat, and drift wood. 8. The formation of such extensive beds of rock salt and gypsum, as occur in the secondary and tertiary rocks, is more difficult to explain by any cause now in operation. And yet in respect to the former, it is said that the lake of Iundersk, 20 leagues in circumference, on the Steppes of Siberia, has a crust of salt on its bottom more than six inches thick, hard as stone, and perfectly white. The lake of Penon Blanco in Mexico, yearly dries up, and leaves a deposit of salt, sufficient to supply the country. (*Ure's Geology*, p. 373.) I have also described a somewhat similar case at the lake of Ooromiah in Persia. (*See Section III.*) Probably also, volcanic action was concerned in the deposition of rock salt. The origin of gypsum is still more difficult to explain by agencies now at work, since we know of but very few springs that deposit it, and these (ex. gr. at Baden near Vienna,) in small quantity.

*Remark.* 1. It does not follow from the preceding inference that the causes of geological change now in operation, have not operated during the deposition of the fossiliferous rocks with greater energy than at present; but only that they have been identical in nature, during the past and present periods.

*Remark.* 2. We can better judge whether existing agents have produced the older stratified rocks, and the unstratified class, when we have examined the dynamics of igneous agencies.

## SECTION VIII.

### OPERATION OF IGNEOUS AGENCIES IN PRODUCING GEOLOGICAL CHANGES.

*Def.* Volcanic action in its widest sense, is the influence exerted by the heated interior of the earth upon its crust. Igneous agency has a still more extensive signification; embracing all the action exerted by heat upon the globe, whether the

source be internal or external. The history of the former will prepare us better to appreciate the influence of the latter.

*Prin.* Volcanic agency has been at work from the earliest periods of the world's history; producing all the forms and phenomena of the unstratified rocks, from granite to the most recent lava. Modern volcanos will first come under consideration.

*Def.* These are of two kinds, *Extinct* and *Active*. The former have not been in operation within the historic period: the latter are constantly or intermittently in action.

*Def.* A volcano is an opening in the earth from whence matter has been ejected by heat, in the form of lava, scoria, or ashes. Usually the opening, called the *crater*, is an inverted cone; and around it, there rises a mountain in the form of a cone, with its apex truncated, produced by the elevation of the earth's crust and the ejection of lava. The volcanic cones vary in height from 600 feet (*Stromboli*.) to 17730 feet. (*Cotopaxi*.) *Humboldt on the Superposition of Rocks*, p. 408.

*Def.* When nothing but aqueous and corrosive vapors have been emitted from a volcanic elevation for centuries, such elevation is called a *Solfatara*, or *Fumerole*.

*Def.* When volcanos exist beneath the sea, they are called *Submarine*; when upon the land, *subaerial*.

*Descrip.* As a general fact, volcanic vents are not insulated mountains, but are arranged in extensive lines, or zones; often reaching half around the globe.

*Examples.* 1. Perhaps the most remarkable line of vents is the long chain of islands commencing with Alaska on the coasts of Russian America, which passes over the Aleutian Isles, Kamtschatka, the Kurilian, Japanese, Phillipine, and Moluccan Isles, and then turning, includes Sumbawa, Java, and Sumatra, and terminates at Barren Island in the Bay of Bengal. 2. Another almost equally extensive line, commences at the southern extremity of S. America, and following the chain of the Andes, passes along the Cordilleras of Mexico, thence into California, and thence northward as far at least as Columbia River; which it crosses between the Pacific Ocean and the Rocky Mountains. (*Parker's Tour beyond the Rocky Mountains*.) 3. A volcanic region, 10 degrees of latitude in breadth, and 1000 miles long, extending from the Azore Islands to the Caspian Sea, abounds in volcanos; though very much scattered. The region around the Mediterranean, is perhaps better known for volcanic agency than any other on the globe; because no eruption occurs there unnoticed.

*Def.* Volcanos not arranged in lines or zones, are called ~~subaerial~~ *isolated volcanos*, and are more or less insulated.

*Examples.* Iceland, the Sandwich Islands, Society Islands, Island of Bourbon, Jorullo in Mexico, &c. a region in Central Asia, of 2500 square geographical miles, from 800 to 1200 miles from the ocean. *De la Beche's Theoretical Geology*, p. 130.

*Descrip.* The number of active volcanos and Solfataras on the globe, is estimated at a little over 300: (303) *Considerations Generales sur les Volcans &c. Par M. J. Girardin*, p. 2d. Paris 1831, and the number of eruptions, about 20 in a year, or 2000 in a century: though on both these points there is room for considerable uncertainty.

The following Table will show how the Active Volcanos and Solfataras are distributed on the Globe.

	On Continents.	On Islands.	Total.
Europe,	4	20	24
Africa,	2	9	11
Asia,	17	29	46
America,	86	28	114
Oceanica,		108	108
Total.	109	194	303

*Descrip.* 194 of these volcanos, or about two thirds, are situated upon the islands of the sea; and of the remaining third, the greater part are situated upon the borders of the sea, or a little distance from the coast. *Girardin's Considerations, &c.* p. 25.

*Inference.* Hence it is inferred that water acts an important part in volcanic phenomena: indeed, it seems generally admitted that the immediate cause of an eruption is the expansive force of steam and liberated gases. It ought not to be forgotten, however, that some volcanos are far inland: as Jorullo in Mexico, and the volcanos in central Asia.

#### *Intermittent Volcanos.*

*Descrip.* Only a few volcanos are constantly active: in most cases their operation is paroxysmal; and is succeeded by longer or shorter intervals of repose. This interval varies from a few months to seventeen centuries. In the Island of Ischia, the latter period has been known to intervene between two eruptions.

*Inf.* Hence some of the volcanos of America, generally regarded as extinct, (as Chimborazo, and Carguairazo in Quito, Taczoa in Peru, and Nevado de Toluca in Mexico,) may yet

break forth and show themselves to belong to the class of active volcanos.

*Phenomena of an Eruption.*

*Descrip.* A volcanic eruption is commonly preceded by earthquakes in the vicinity; stillness of the air, with a sense of oppression; noises in the mountain; and the drying up of fountains. The eruption commences with a sudden explosion, followed by vast clouds of smoke and vapor, with flashes of lightning, and showers of ashes and stones; and finally by red hot lava; which flows over the rim of the crater and spreads over the surrounding country.

*Descrip.* Probably the most remarkable eruption of modern times took place in 1815, in the island of Sumbawa, one of the Molucca group. It commenced on the 5th of April, and did not entirely cease till July. The explosions were heard in Sumatra, 970 geographical miles distant in one direction, and at Ternate in the opposite direction, 720 miles distant. So heavy was the fall of ashes at the distance of 40 miles, that houses were crushed and destroyed beneath them. Towards Celebes, they were carried to the distance of 217 miles; and towards Java, 300 miles, so as to occasion a darkness greater than that of the darkest night. On the 12th of April, the floating cinders to the westward of Sumatra, were two feet thick; and ships were forced through them with difficulty. Large tracts of country were covered by the lava: and out of 12,000 inhabitants on the island, only 26 survived.

*Descrip.* During the great eruption of the volcano of Cosigüina in Gautimala, on the shores of the Pacific, in 1835, ashes fell upon the island of Jamaica, 800 miles eastward: and upon the deck of a vessel 1200 miles westward. *American Journal of Science, Vol. 33. p. 53.*

*Descrip.* The situation of Vesuvius and Etna has made their history better known than that of most volcanos. Eighty one eruptions of the latter are on record, since the days of Thucydides; and thirty seven of the former, since the first century of the Christian era. That which occurred in Vesuvius A. D. 79, is best known, from the fact that it buried three cities, Herculaneum, Pompeii, and Stabiae; which were flourishing at its base. No melted lava appears to have been thrown out at the eruption, which consisted wholly of lapilli, sand, and stones. Hence it is, that almost every thing enveloped in those cities;—streets, houses, inscriptions, papyri, (manuscripts), grain, fruit, bread, condiments, medicines, &c. &c. are in a

most perfect state of preservation. They are indeed perfect examples of fossil cities! *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. I. p.323. *Dr. James Johnson's Philosophy of Travelling*, p. 232.

*Remark.* The vast quantities of aqueous vapor that escapes during a volcanic eruption, is often condensed and descends in torrents of rain, which falling upon the ashes, which the volcano has cast out, converts them into mud; and it was probably mostly mud that enveloped Pompeii, though Herculaneum appears to have been covered with melted matter. Mud ready formed, however, not unfrequently is emitted from volcanoes.

*Descrip.* In the year 1759, in the elevated plain of Malpais, in Mexico, which is from 2000 to 3000 feet above the ocean, and at the distance of 125 miles from the sea, a volcanic eruption took place, producing six volcanic cones; now varying in height from 300 to 1600 feet. Around these cones, and covering several square miles, are a multitude of small cones, from 6 to 9 feet high, called *Hornitos*, which continually give off hot aqueous vapor and sulphuric acid.

*Remark.* There is still a diversity of opinion as to the manner in which volcanic cones are formed. Von Buch, the distinguished Prussian geologist, maintains that a large part of the cone is produced by the upheaving of the strata, and that the crater, which in such cases he calls a *crater of elevation*, results from the fracture at the summit. Upon this elevated mass lava accumulates. Other geologists suppose the cone to be entirely formed of lava.

*Descrip.* Sometimes during a violent eruption, the whole mountain, or cone, is either blown to pieces, or falls into the gulf beneath, and its place is afterwards occupied as a lake.

*Examples.* 1. In 1772, the Papandayang, a large volcano in the island of Java, after a short and severe eruption, fell in and disappeared over an extent 15 miles long and six broad; burying 40 villages, and 2957 inhabitants. 2. In 1638, the Pic, a volcano in the Island of Timor, so high as to be visible 300 miles, disappeared, and its place is now occupied by a lake. 3. Many lakes in the south of Italy are supposed to have been thus formed; and this is probably the origin of the Dead Sea in Palestine. *Bakewell's Geology*, p. 265. 4. A volcano occupying the same spot, as the present Vesuvius, is supposed thus to have been destroyed in 79, and its remains to constitute the circular ridge, called Somma, which is several miles in diameter.

### *Dynamics of Volcanic Agency.*

*Prin.* We can form an estimate of the power exerted by volcanic agency, from three circumstances: first, the amount of lava protruded; secondly, from the distance to which masses of rock have been projected; and thirdly by calculating the force requisite to raise lava to the tops of existing craters.

*Descrip.* Vesuvius, more than 3000 feet high, has launched

scoria 4000 feet above the summit. Cotopaxi, nearly 18,000 feet high, has projected matter 6000 feet above its summit; and once it threw a stone of 109 cubic yards in volume, to the distance of nine miles.

*Descrip.* Taking the specific gravity of lava at 2.8, the following Table will show the force requisite to cause it to flow over the tops of the several volcanos, whose names are given; with their height above the sea. The initial velocity which such a force would produce, is also given in the last column.

Name.	Height in feet.	Force ex- erted upon the Lava.	Initial ve- locity per second.
Stromboli, (highest peak.)	2168	176 Atmospheres.	371 feet.
Vesuvius,	3874	314	496
Jorullo, Mexico,	2043	319	502
Hecla, Iceland,	5106	413	570
Etna,	10892	882	832
Teneriffe,	12464	1009	896
Mouna Kea, Sandwich Isles.	14700	1191	966
Popocatapetl, Mexico,	17712	1435	1062
Mount Elias,	18079	1465	1072
Cotopaxi, Quito,	18869	1492	1104

*Remark.* There can be little doubt but the chimney of a volcano extends generally as much below the level of the sea, as it does above; and often probably fifty times as deep: so that the actual force pressing upon the lava in its reservoir, may be far greater than the second column of the preceding table represents: and the initial velocity much greater than in the third column.

*Descrip.* The amount of melted matter ejected from Vesuvius in the eruption of 1737, was estimated at 11,839,168 cubic yards: and in that in 1794, at 22,435,520 cubic yards. But these quantities are small compared with those which Etna has sometimes disgorged. In 1660, the amount of lava was 20 times greater than the whole mass of the mountain; and in 1669, when 77,000 persons were destroyed, the lava covered 84 square miles. Yet the greatest eruption of modern times was from Skaptar Jokul in Iceland, in 1783. Two streams of lava flowed in opposite directions; one of them 50 miles long and 12 broad; and the other 40 miles long and 7 broad: both having an average thickness of 100 feet: which was sometimes increased to 500 or 600 feet. Twenty villages and 9000 inhabitants were destroyed. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 343.

#### *New Islands formed by Volcanic Agency.*

*Descrip.* History abounds with examples of new islands rising out of the sea by volcanic action. Such were Delos,

Rhodes, and the Cyclades, situated in the Grecian Archipelago, and described by Pliny the naturalist, and other ancient writers. In more modern times, small islands have risen in the Azore Group : such as Sabrina in 1811, which was 300 feet high, and a mile in circumference : but after some months it disappeared : another in 1720, was six miles in circumference. In 1707 the island called Isola Nuova, was thrown up near Santorini, and continues to this day. Just before the great eruption of Skaptar Jokul in Iceland in 1783, a new island appeared off the coast ; which, however, subsequently disappeared. In 1796, a new island rose to the height of 350 feet ; having two miles of circumference, in the Aleutian Group, east of Kamtschatka, which is permanent. In 1806 another permanent island rose in the same vicinity ; four geographical miles in circumference. In the same archipelago, in 1814, another peak arose, which was 3000 feet high ; and which remained standing a year afterwards. In those cases where the cone does not sink back beneath the sea, it is probably composed of the more solid lavas, such as trachyte, or basalt. So late as 1831, a new island appeared near Sicily, in the Mediterranean, rising to the height of 220 feet, and after exhibiting volcanic phenomena for some time, it disappeared. *Girardin Considerations, &c. sur les Volcans, p. 31—Poulett Scrope's Considerations on Volcanos, p. 172, London 1825—Lyell's Principles of Geology, Vol. 1, p. 388, Bakewell's Geology, p. 261.*

*Remark.* 1. In some instances the islands thus raised, are composed mainly of the rocks which form the bottom of the sea ; and which has been upheaved ; as the island of New Kamenoi near St. Eriini, which rose in 1707, and which was composed partly of limestone and covered with living shells.

*Remark.* 2. These islands are not always raised to their full height by a single paroxysm of the volcanic force ; but by a succession of efforts for months and even years.

*Descrip.* Very many large islands appear to be wholly, or almost entirely, the result of volcanic action ; and to be composed chiefly of lava and rocks upheaved by volcanic action ; such as sandstone and limestone : Ex. gr. the Sandwich Islands : of which Hawaii, the largest, contains 4000 square miles of surface, and rises 18,000 feet above the ocean : Teneriffe, 13,000 feet high : Iceland, Sicily, Bourbon, St. Helena, Tristan d'Acunha, the Madeira, Faroe and Azore Islands ; a great part of Java, Sumatra, Celebes, Japan, &c.

#### *Character of Molten Lava.*

*Descrip.* Lava in general is not very thoroughly melted ; so that when it moves in a current over the country, its sides form

walls of considerable height, and a crust soon forms over its surface, which serves still more to prevent its spreading out laterally.

*Remark.* Hence a lava current may be deflected from its course by breaking away its crust on one side: and in this way it has sometimes been turned away from towns that were threatened by it. In one instance, the inhabitants of Catania attacked a lava current and turned it towards Paterno; whose inhabitants took up arms and arrested the operation. *Lyell's Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 337

*Descrip.* The crust that forms upon lava soon becomes a good non-conductor of heat; and hence the mass requires a long time to cool: ex. gr. the case of Jorullo in Mexico, 1600 feet high, which was ejected almost 100 years ago, but is not yet cool. The lava thrown out of Etna in 1819, was in motion, at the rate of a yard in a day, nine months after the eruption: (*Scrope on Volcanos*, p. 101.) and it is stated that lava from the same mountain, at a previous eruption, was in motion after the lapse of 10 years. *De La Beche's Theoretical Geology*, p. 135.

*Remark.* This explains a curious fact. In 1823 a mass of ice was found on Etna, lying beneath a current of lava. Probably before this flowed over it, the ice might have been covered by a shower of volcanic ashes; which are a good non-conductor of heat; and might prevent the immediate melting of it; while the superimposed lava has preserved it from the period of its eruption to the present.

*Descrip.* When lava is thrown out upon the dry land, with only the pressure of the atmosphere upon it, it is apt to become vesicular and scoriaceous: But when cooled slowly and under great pressure, it becomes compact and may be even crystalline.

#### *Volcanos constantly Active.*

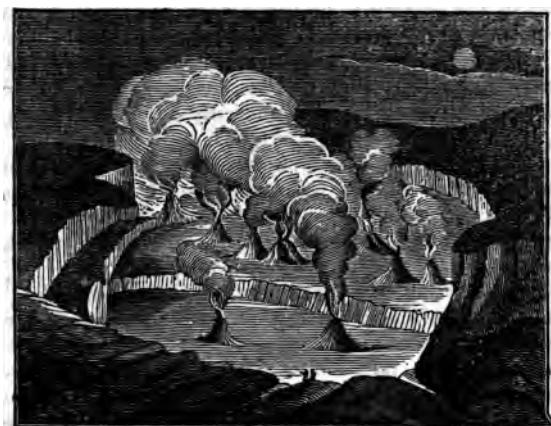
*Descrip.* A few volcanic vents have been constantly active since they were first discovered. They always contain lava in a state of ebullition; and vapors and gases are constantly escaping.

*Example 1.* Stromboli one of the Lipari Islands has been observed longer probably than any volcano of this class: and for at least 2000 years it has been unremittingly active. The lava here never flows over the top of the crater: though it is sometimes discharged through a fissure into the sea, killing the fish, which are thrown upon the shore ready cooked. It is said to be more active in stormy than in fair weather; likewise more so in winter than in summer: A fact explained by the different degrees of pressure exerted by the air upon the lava at different times. When the air is light, the internal force predominates: but when heavy, it restrains the energy of the volcano.

*Ex 2.* In lake Nicaragua is a volcano which is constantly burning. Villarica in Chili, so high as to be seen 150 miles, is never quiet. The name is said to be the case with Popocatepetl, in Mexico, which is nearly 18,000 feet high. Ever since the conquest of Mexico it has been pouring forth smoke. *Girardin's Considerations, &c.* p. 188.

*Ez. 3.* But the most remarkable volcano on the globe is that of Kiraeua in the Sandwich Islands, on Hawaii; for the first accurate account of which we are indebted to American Missionaries. (*American Jour. of Science*, Vol. 11, p. 1, and 362.) Rev. Messrs. Stewart and Ellis, the first an American, and the latter an English Missionary, have both given us most graphic and thrilling descriptions of it. It appears to be situated upon a plain 8000, or 10,000 feet above the ocean; and at the foot of Mount Roa. In approaching the crater, it is necessary to descend two steep terraces, each from 100 to 290 feet high, and extending entirely around the volcano. The outer one is 20 and the inner one 15 miles in circumference; and they obviously form the margin of vast craters, formerly existing. Arrived at the margin of the present crater, the observer has before him a crescent shaped gulf, 1500 feet deep; at whose bottom, which is from 5 to 7 miles in circumference, the top being from 8 to 10, is a vast lake of lava, in some parts molten, in others covered with a crust; while in numerous places (some have noticed as many as 50 at once,) are small cones, with smoke and lava issuing out of them from time to time. Sometimes, and especially at night, such masses of lava are forced up, that a lake of liquid fire, not less than two miles in circumference, is seen dashing up its angry billows, and forming one of the grandest and most thrilling objects that the imagination can conceive. Fig. 100 is a view of this volcano taken by Mr. Ellis.

Fig. 100.



Volcano of Kiraeua : Sandwich Islands.

*Seat of Volcanic Power.*

*Prin.* Volcanic power must be deeply seated beneath the earth's crust.

*Proof.* 1. The melted lava is forced out from beneath the oldest rocks; as gneiss and granite: for masses of these rocks are frequently broken off and thrown out. 2. Lines or trains of volcanoes indicate some connection between the vents, and the great length of these lines, several thousand miles in some instances, can be explained only by supposing that the fissure or cavity by which the connection is made, must extend to a great depth. 3. When in 1783, a submarine volcano, on the coast of Iceland, ceased to eject matter, immediately another broke out 200 miles distant, in the interior of the island. 4. Were not the power deep seated, volcanoes would become exhausted; as they sometimes throw out more matter at a single eruption, than the whole mountain melted down could supply.

*Earthquakes.*

*Descrip.* Earthquakes almost always precede a volcanic eruption; and cease when the lava gets vent.

*Inference.* 1. Hence the proximate cause of earthquakes is obvious: viz. the expansive efforts of volcanic matter, confined beneath the earth's surface.

*Inference* 2. Hence too the ultimate cause of volcanos and earthquakes, is the same; whatever that cause may be.

*Descrip.* Earthquakes are said to be preceded by great irregularities of the seasons; by redness of the sun, haziness of the air, violent winds, succeeded by dead calms, and the like; but it is doubtful, whether these precursors be not more imaginary than real. That elective matter, or inflammable g<sub>r</sub>s, or fire, should issue from the soil with mephitic vapors; that noises, like the trundling of carriages, and the discharge of artillery should be heard from beneath the ground, that something like sea sickness should be experienced; and that animals should show greater alarm than men, are all easily believed; because they are effects naturally resulting from the known phenomena.

*Descrip.* During the paroxysm of the earthquake, heavy rumbling noises are heard; the ground trembles and rocks; fissures open on the surface, and again close; swallowing up whatever may have fallen into them; fountains are dried up; rivers are turned out of their courses: portions of the surface are elevated and portions depressed; and the sea is agitated and thrown into vast billows.

*Example.* The cases that might be mentioned, of cities, and towns, wholly or in part submerged by the ocean, in consequence of earthquakes, are very numerous. In the year 876, Mount Acracos is said to have fallen into the sea: in 541, Pompeiopolis was half swallowed up: in 1692, a part of Port Royal in the West Indies was sunk: in 1755, a part of Lisbon: in 1812, a part of Caracas. About the same time numerous earthquakes agitated the valley of the Mississippi, for an extent of 300 miles, from the mouth of the Ohio, to that of the St. Francis; whereby numerous tracts were sunk down and others raised, lakes and islands were formed, and the bed of the Mississippi, was exceedingly altered. In 1819, the bed of the Indus at its mouth, was sunk 18 feet, and the village and port of Sindree submerged. At the same time a tract of the delta of the Indus, 50 miles long and 16 broad, was elevated about 10 feet. In Caracas, in 1790, a forest was sunk over a space of 800 yards in diameter, to the depth of 80 or 100 yards. In 1783, a large part of Calabria was terribly convulsed by earthquakes, over an area of 500 square miles. The shocks lasted for four years: in 1783 there were 949, and in 1784 151. A vast number of fissures of every form were made in the earth, and of course a great many local elevations and subsidences; which however do not appear to have exceeded a few feet. In some sandy plains, singular circular hollows a few feet in diameter, and in the form of an inverted cone, were produced by the water, which was forced up through the soil. Some of these are exhibited on Fig. 101.

Fig. 101.



Holes formed by an Earthquake.

Rev. Mr. Parker has described a remarkable subsidence, 20 miles in length, and a mile in width, just above the falls in Columbia river. Through this whole distance the trees are standing in the bottom of the stream, at an average depth of 20 feet: only that part of them above high water mark being broken off. He could discover no evidence that this tract had separated from the bank of the river. But the whole region appears to be one of extinct volcanos and the river passes through hills and walls of basalt and most probably this is a case of subsidence from an earthquake. The banks are too high and rocky to admit of the explanation that a lake has been formed by the river cutting through its *levee*, and overflowing the adjacent low ground, whereby, along the Mississippi a lake with trees standing in it, is sometimes produced. *Parker's Exploring tour beyond the Rocky Mountains*, p. 132.

The most extensive elevation of land on record by means of earthquakes, took place on the western coast of South America in 1822. The shock was felt 1200 miles along the coast: and for more than 100 miles, the coast was elevated from 3 to 4 feet; and it is conjectured that an area of 100,000 square miles was thus raised up. This case, originally noticed by Mrs. Graham, and subsequently by Dr. Meyen and Mr. Freyer, has excited a great deal of discussion among European geologists: nor can it yet be regarded as absolutely settled: For Mr. Cuming, an able naturalist, who resided at Valparaiso at the time of the earthquake, (whose greatest power was exhibited there,) says that the spring tides rose to the same height upon a wall near his house after the event as before. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 380.

*Remark*. 1. In estimating the permanent effects of earthquakes, it ought to be recollect that the changes of level which they produce are often restored to their original state, after the lapse of a few months or years. This is especially true of elevations.

*Remark*. 2. The number of earthquakes is probably about the same as that of volcanic eruptions, viz. about 20 annually.

### *Vertical Movements of Land without Earthquakes.*

*Descrip.* It seems to be pretty well established, that various parts of our present continents are subject to vertical movements, either of elevation or depression, or of both, in alternation; and that too in districts not known to be subject to the action of earthquakes, or of volcanic agency in any form.

*Examples*. 1. The most certain example of elevation of an extensive tract of country in comparatively recent times, is that of the northern shores of the Baltic, investigated with great ability by Von Buch and Lyell. Some parts of the coast appear to have experienced no vertical movement. But from Gothenberg to Torneo, and from thence to North Cape, a distance of more than 1000 geographical miles, the country appears to have been raised up from 100 to 200 feet above the sea. The breadth of the region thus elevated is not known, and the rate at which the land rises (in some places towards 4 feet in a century) is different in different places. The evidence that such a movement is taking place, is principally derived from the shells of mollusca now living in the Baltic, being found at the elevations above named; and some of the barnacles attached to the rocks. They have been discovered inland in one instance 70 miles. (*Lyell's Principles of Geology* Vol. 1. p. 437.)

2. Several examples are quoted in England of elevated sea beaches with the remains of shells; such as now occur in the ocean. Also in Italy; at the Cape of Good Hope; and in the West Indies. But I may be permitted to doubt whether some of these cases are not rather to be explained by the depositions of the slowly retiring diluvial waters; which as in another place we have seen, did deposit clay and sand of great thickness. Yet Prof. Phillips says, that in most of the cases under consideration, the sea shells occur beneath the diluvial deposit. If so, must it not be quite difficult to distinguish the formation from the most recent tertiary? 3. On the margin of Lubec Bay, in the state of Maine, Dr C. T. Jackson describes a deposit of recent shells, in clay and mud, with the remains of balani attached to the trap rock, 26 feet above the present high water mark. (*First Report on the Geology of Maine*, p. 18.) 4. A remarkable case of subsidence seems pretty well established as having occurred on the coast of Greenland for a distance of 600 miles north and south. (*Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 446.) 5. The history of submarine forests furnishes another example of subsidence. But this phenomenon deserves a fuller description.

### *Submarine Forests.*

**Descrip.** On the shores of Great Britain, France, and the United States, usually a few feet beneath low water mark, there occur trees, stumps, and peat, seeming to be ancient swamps, which have subsided beneath the waters, sometimes to the depth of 10 feet. In many cases the stumps appear to stand in the spots where they originally grew; yet it requires great care to ascertain this fact. *For localities, see De La Beche's Manual*, p. 151. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 250 and Vol. 2. p. 140. *Report on the Geology of Massachusetts*, p. 124.

**Origin of Submarine Forests.** It is probable that this phenomenon results from several causes. 1. When the barrier between a peat swamp and the sea is broken through, so that the water may be drained off, a subsidence of several feet may take place in the soft spongy matter of the swamp, sufficient to bring it under water. 2. From a case which I have described on Hogg Island, in Casco Bay, (*Boston Journal of Natural History*, Vol. 1. p. 338.) I have inferred that some submarine forests may have been produced by the gradual removal of the contents of a peat swamp, by the retiring tide, after the barrier between it and the ocean has been removed so as to form a slight slope into the sea. At the spot referred to, the process may be seen partly completed. 3. But probably most submarine forests were produced by earthquakes, or other causes of subsidence, which we find to have operated on the earth's surface: and the explanation of which will be better understood after the statement of more facts relating to igneous agency.

*Thermal Springs.*

*Descrip.* Hot Springs are very common in the vicinity of volcanos: such as the well known Geysers in Iceland. Some of these are intermittent, probably in consequence of the agency of steam within subterranean cavities. The Great Geyser consists of a basin 56 by 46 feet in diameter; at the bottom of which is a well 10 feet in diameter and 78 feet deep. Usually the basin is filled with water in a state of ebullition: but occasionally an eruption takes place, by which the water is thrown up from 100 to 200 feet, until it is all expelled from the well, and there follows a column of steam with amazing force and a deafening explosion, by which the eruption is terminated. These waters hold silica in solution; as do those of the Azore Islands; and extensive deposits are the result. The coating over of vegetables by this siliceous matter, has given rise to the common opinion that certain rivers and lakes possess the power of rapid petrifaction.

*Descrip.* Thermal springs are not confined to the vicinity of volcanos. They occur in every part of the globe; and rise out of almost every kind of rock. They frequently contain enough of mineral substances to constitute them mineral waters. But one of their most striking properties is the evolution of gas; such as carbonic acid, nitrogen, oxygen, sulphureted hydrogen, &c. in a free state.

*Theory of Thermal Springs.* When these springs occur in volcanic districts, their origin is very obvious. The water which percolates into the crevices of the strata, becomes heated by the volcanic furnace below, and impregnated with salts and gases by the sublimation of matter from the same focus. Dr. Daubeny, who has devoted great attention to this subject, has also endeavored to show that the thermal springs not in volcanic districts, in a large majority of cases, rise either from the vicinity of some uplifted chain of mountains, or from clefts and fissures caused by the disruption of the strata; and therefore, in all such cases are probably the result of deep seated volcanic agency, which may have been long in a quiescent state. If this view of the subject be not absolutely proved, it is at least extremely probable. *Report on Mineral and Thermal Waters, by Prof. Daubeny, 1836, p. 62.*

*Extinct Volcanos.*

*Descrip.* Many writers maintain that there is a marked difference between the matters ejected from active and extinct vol-

canos. It is said that the more modern lavas have a harsher feel, are more cellular, and more vitreous in their appearance, and also less feldspathic than the ancient. (*Girardin's Considerations Sur les Volcans p. 13. De La Beche's Manual p. 126.*) But it is doubtful whether any character will satisfactorily distinguish them, except the period of their eruption.

*Descrip.* The extinct volcanos are of very different ages. Some of them were active during the tertiary period, some during the diluvial epoch; and some since that period. The lava, especially in the most ancient, was not always ejected from conical elevations, so as to form regular craters, but along extended fissures. In some instances, as in a mountain called the Puy de Chopine in Auvergne, which stands in an ancient crater, and rises 2000 feet above an elevated granitic plain, itself about 2800 feet above the sea, there is a mixture of trachyte and unaltered granite.

*Examples.* The extinct volcanos of Auvergne, and the south of France have long excited deep interest; and have been fully illustrated by Scrope, Bakewell, and others. Near Clermont, the landscape has as decidedly a volcanic aspect as in any part of the world; of which Fig. 104 will convey some idea.

Fig. 104.



Extinct Volcano : Auvergne.

2. Extinct volcanos exist also in Spain, in Portugal, in Germany, along the Rhine, in Hungary, Transylvania, in Styria and in the vicinity of the Dead Sea in Palestine. There is reason to believe that the southern part of this sea occupies the site of the five ancient cities, Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah, Zeboim, and Zoar, that were destroyed according to the Sacred Scriptures, at an early period. Such a lake, as we have seen, charged with saline matter, is not unfrequently the result of a volcanic eruption; and if Dr. Henderson's translation of Job, 22. 15 to 20 be correct, it is rendered probable that these cities were destroyed by volcanic agency.

"Hast thou observed the ancient tract  
That was trodden by wicked mortals,  
Who were arrested on a sudden;  
Whose foundation is a molten flood?  
Who said to God, depart from us,  
What can Shaddai do to us?  
Though he had filled their houses with wealth.

(Far from me be the counsel of the wicked!)  
 The righteous beheld and rejoiced,  
 The innocent laughed them to scorn:  
 Surely their substance was carried away,  
 And their riches devoured by fire."

*Rem.* Professor E. Robinson and Rev. Eli Smith, who have recently made very interesting researches in the vicinity of the Dead Sea, have proposed a somewhat different and ingenious theory, to explain the mode in which the cities of the plain were destroyed. They suppose that plain to have been underlaid with a vast deposit of bitumen, like the asphaltum lake of Trinidad; in proof of which they quote the account of the *Slime pits* (literally *wells of asphaltum*) in Genesis 14: 10. and 11: 3. This asphaltum, the Lord by means of lightning, set on fire: and thereby consumed the cities and sunk the level of the plain so that the sea flowed over it. *See an interesting article on this subject, in the American Biblical Repository for January, 1840, p. 24: Also Objections to this theory by Dr. Lee: Same work for April 1840, p. 324.*

3. According to Professor Parrot, Mount Ararat in Asia, is an extinct volcano. A specimen sent me by Rev. Justin Perkins from that mountain is decidedly vesicular lava.

4. A large proportion of the lofty peaks of the Andes and the mountains of Mexico belong to the class of extinct volcanos: and it is very probable, from the statements of Rev. Mr. Parker and others, that a vast region between the Rocky Mountains and the Pacific Ocean is of the same character. For although he describes the prevailing rock as basalt, and only incidentally alludes to volcanic cones and craters, yet in personal conversation he assures me that regular craters are not unfrequent; and having shown him specimens of trachytes from the continent of Europe, he at once identified them with rocks found associated with the basalt of that region.

*Descrip.* The size of ancient volcanic cones and craters was often very large.

*Examples.* In the middle and southern parts of France, extinct volcanos cover several thousand square miles. Between Naples and Cumæa, in the space of 200 square miles, according to Brieslak, are 60 craters; some of them larger than Vesuvius. The city of Cumæa has stood 3000 years in a crater of one of these volcanos. Vesuvius stands in the midst of a vast crater, whose remains are still visible, called Somma. The volcanic peak of Teneriffe stands in the center of a plain, covering 108 square miles, which is surrounded by perpendicular precipices and mountains, which were probably the border of the ancient crater. According to Humboldt, all the mountainous parts of Quito, embracing an area of 6300 square miles, may be considered as an immense volcano, which now gets vent sometimes through one, and sometimes through another of its elevated peaks; but which must have been more active in former times, to have produced the results now witnessed. We have seen that the great volcano of Kiraues, on the Sandwich Islands, is surrounded by two circular walls, one 15 and the other 20 miles in circumference; which must have marked the limits of the crater in early times.

*Inference.* From such facts it has been inferred by many geologists, (ex. gr. Poulett, Scrope, Bakewell, Phillips, Brongniart, Girardin, &c.) that volcanic agency in early times was more powerful than at present; and that it is gradually diminishing. Mr. Lyell, however, considers this view as entirely erroneous; and quotes the eruption from Skaptar Jokul, in 1783, as equalling any that is known to have occurred in ancient times. *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 345.

*The Older Unstratified Rocks.*

*Remark.* So rapid has been the change of opinion respecting the origin of the unstratified rocks, that from an almost universal belief in their deposition from water, geologists are now nearly or quite unanimous in ascribing them to igneous agency. A brief summary of the arguments that sustain this latter opinion, will be, therefore, all that is now necessary to present.

*Prin.* The different unstratified rocks appear to be the result of volcanic agency exerted at different periods under different circumstances.

*Proof. 1. Identity of lithological characters between recent lavas and several varieties of unstratified rocks.* The amygdaloids of the trap rocks often exactly resemble those vesicular lavas which are cooled in the open air: while the compact trap rocks can scarcely be distinguished from the compact lavas of submarine production. Some varieties of trachyte very much resemble granite; and the two rocks often pass insensibly into each other; so that it is difficult to say whether trachyte be melted granite, or a portion of the materials out of which granite was originally produced, cooled in a different manner.

*Proof. 2. The insensible gradation of the different unstratified rocks into one another.* In the same continuous mass we find a gradual passage from trap into all the other unstratified rocks; so that the same general cause that produced one variety, must have produced the whole. It is very rare, however, that coarse granite, destitute of hornblende, graduates into trap rocks of the same age. In general, they appear to have been formed at different epochs. *Macculloch's System of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 157.

*Remark.* It must not be inferred from this statement, that all the unstratified rocks have resulted from the same melted mass, cooled under different circumstances: For the difference in their chemical composition is too great to admit of such a conclusion. See Section 4, p. 78.

*Proof. 3. The mode of occurrence of the unstratified in relation to the stratified rocks.* We have seen, (Section IV.) that the former exist as protruding, intruding, and overlying masses, and occupying veins in the latter. Now these are the precise modes in which recent lava occurs when connected with stratified rocks: whereas no example can be produced in which rocks have been made to take these forms by aqueous

agency. Indeed, it is difficult to conceive how this would be possible.

*Proof. 4. The columnar structure of the trap rocks.* This structure is not uncommon in lavas. The experiment of Mr. Watt also, upon 700 pounds of melted basalt, which on cooling assumed the columnar form, as detailed in Section IV, confirms this view: whereas no example of such a structure from aqueous agency has ever been found.

*Proof. 5. The crystalline structure of some of the unstratified rocks.* When several substances are contained in an aqueous menstruum, it is difficult to make them crystallize except in succession; whereas in granite the different ingredients appear to have crystallized simultaneously. And if the materials of granite, or of glass, be melted and slowly cooled, especially under pressure, most if not all the ingredients will assume more or less of a crystalline form at the same time.

*Proof. 6. The mechanical effects produced by the unstratified upon the stratified rocks.* In the vicinity of veins and irregular masses of the unstratified rocks, the stratified ones are bent and twisted in every conceivable manner, and sometimes broken entirely. Not unfrequently also, fragments of the stratified rocks are broken off and entirely imbedded in the veins of the unstratified. In almost every case an upward or a lateral force appears to have been exerted; showing that the veins were filled from beneath. For examples, See *Macculloch's Geology of Glen Tilt in the geological Transactions*. Also his *Geology of the Western Islands*. Also *Report on the Geology of Massachusetts*, p. 414, 416, 418, 464, &c. Fig. 105 below, shows a vein of green-stone, or indurated wacke, passing through a ledge of sand-stone near New Haven, on the road to Middletown, the sand-stone being bent upwards. Fig. 106 is a view of a hill in Ackworth, N. Hampshire, through which an enormous vein of granite passes, whereby the hornblende slate has been much bent and contorted. This is a famous locality for beryls, rose quartz, and crystalized mica.

Fig. 105.

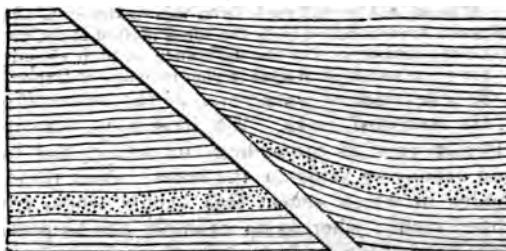
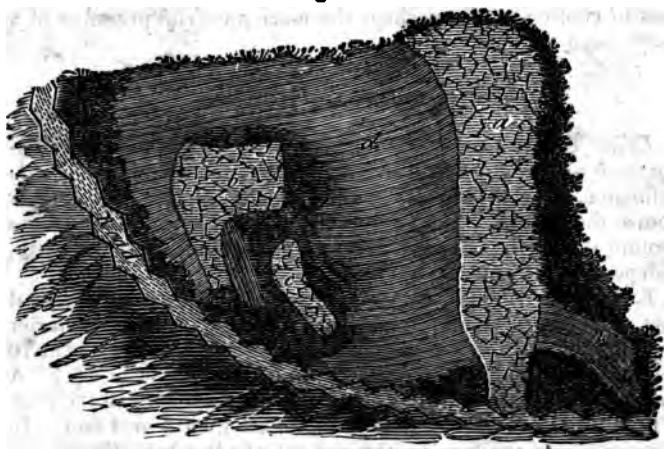


Fig. 106.



*Proof. 7. The chemical effects produced upon the stratified rocks by the contact of the unstratified.* These effects are precisely the same as those produced by dykes of recent lava. Thus, compact fossiliferous limestone and chalk, where dykes of trap rocks, porphyry, and granite, pass through them, are changed into crystalline limestone; shale and sandstone are indurated and converted into siliceous slate, or jasper; as at Nahant, Mass, Newport, R. Island, and Rocky Hill near Hartford, Ct.: micaceous sandstone and other slaty rocks are changed into mica slate, or hornblende slate. Now these are effects that could not result from any other agency with which we are acquainted except heat. And in respect to chalk, an experiment of Sir James Hall is decisive. He confined some of it in a strong iron tube, and subjected it to a strong heat, which, liberating the carbonic acid, produced a powerful pressure, and the result was crystalized carbonate of lime. *Buckland's Geology*, p. 146.

*Objection.* The older unstratified rocks present no example of a volcanic cone or crater.

*Reply 1.* They appear in general to have been produced by a force acting along extended fissures, and not directed to particular foci. 2. If these cones and craters once existed, the powerful denuding agencies that have operated on the globe may have destroyed them.

*Prin.* The greater degree of crystallization in the older un-

stratified rocks, may be explained, by supposing a more perfect fusion of the materials than in recent lavas, and greater slowness in cooling, under perhaps the more powerful presence of a deep ocean.

*Temperature of the Globe.*

**Prin.** The principal circumstances that determine the temperature of the globe and its atmosphere, are the following : 1. Influence of the sun. 2. Nature of the surface. 3. Height above the ocean. 4. Temperature of the celestial spaces around the earth. 5. Temperature of the interior of the earth, independent of external agencies.

1. *Solar Heat.* The Solar rays exert no influence as a general fact, at a greater depth than about 100 feet. (Baron Fourier mentions 130 feet as the maximum depth : Poisson fixes it at 76 feet. *Am. Jour. Science*, Vol. 32. p. 5. and Vol. 34. p. 59.) A thermometer placed at that depth, remains stationary all the year. The diurnal effect does not extend more than 3 or 4 feet. In receding from the tropics, the amount of solar heat diminishes. During six months it continues to increase, and to diminish the remaining six months. The decrease of the mean temperature from the equator towards the poles, is nearly in the proportion of the cosines of latitude. Prof. Forbes has recently made some observations near Edinburgh, from which it appears that the oscillations of annual temperature would cease at the depth of 49 feet in trap tufa, 62 feet in incoherent sand, and 91 feet in compact sandstone. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 38, p. 109.

*Remark.* Solar heat is the fundamental element on which depends the surface temperature of the globe and the character of the climate.

**Prin.** The amount of solar heat is actually though very slightly diminishing in consequence of a change in the eccentricity of the earth's orbit. The possible amount of this diminution is not known, because the limits of the eccentricity of that orbit are not known : But there is no probability that the annual temperature ever has changed or ever will change from this cause more than  $3^{\circ}$  or  $4^{\circ}$ . (*Am. Jour. Sci.* Vol. 36. p. 332.) Hence this cause is insufficient to account for the extra-tropical heat of the present cold regions of the earth in early times.

2. *Nature of the Surface.* The radiating and absorbing power of land is quite different from that of water. Ice and snow are still more different ; and the nature of the soil affects sensibly its power to imbibe or give off heat. Hence low islands have a *higher temperature* than larger continents in the same latitude ; and the ocean possesses a greater uniformity of climate than the land.

*Remark.* On these facts Mr. Lyell has founded an hypothesis for explaining the high temperature of the surface of the globe in northern latitudes in early times. He supposes that but little land then existed in the northern parts of the globe, and that this produced so great an elevation of temperature, above what it is at present, that tropical plants and animals might then have inhabited regions now subjected to almost perpetual winter. That the quantity of dry land in the northern hemisphere during the deposition of the older fossiliferous rocks was much less than at present, is very probable; and that this would render the climate warmer and more uniform is made certain by comparing the climate of Great Britain with that of the United States. But that from this cause the climate of Canada, of the North West Coast of America, between  $60^{\circ}$  and  $70^{\circ}$  of North Latitude, and even of Greenland and Melville Island, where the thermometer now descends to  $58^{\circ}$  below zero, was so mild and uniform as to produce tropical ferns, lepidodendra, &c. is a position which will need strong proof; especially when we recollect that for several months annually they must have been most of the time in darkness. Those, however, who wish to see this hypothesis ably defended, may consult *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 110, &c.

3. *Height above the Ocean.* The temperature of the air diminishes one degree (Fahr.) for 300 feet of altitude: two degrees for 595 feet: three degrees for 872 feet: four degrees for 1124 feet: five degrees for 1347 feet: and six degrees for 1539 feet: Hence at the equator perpetual frost exists at the height of 15,000 feet, diminishing to 13,000 feet at either tropic. Between latitudes  $40^{\circ}$  and  $59^{\circ}$ , it varies from 9000 to 4000 feet. In almost every part of the frigid zone this line descends to the surface. These results, however, are greatly modified by several circumstances: so that in fact, the line of perpetual congelation is not a regular curve, but rather an irregular line descending and ascending. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 33. p. 52. *Introduction à la Géographie Mathématique et Physique*, Par. S. F. Lacroix, p. 289.

4. *Temperature of the Celestial Spaces around the Earth.* —This cannot be much less than the temperature around the poles of the earth; where the solar heat has scarcely no influence. Now the lowest temperature hitherto observed on the globe, (at Melville Island,) is  $58^{\circ}$  below zero: and this has been assumed as the temperature of the planetary spaces. Hence it follows that there must be a constant radiation of heat from the earth into space.

5. *Temperature of the Interior of the Earth, Independent of External Agencies.*

*Prin.* In descending into the earth, beneath the point where it is affected by the solar heat, we find that the temperature regularly and rapidly increases.

*Proof.* 1. *The temperature of Springs which issue from the rocks in mines, as shown in the following Table.*

*Temperature of Springs in Mines.*

COUNTRIES.	MINES.	Depth in Feet.	Temper- ture.	Mean tem- perature at Surface.	Depth for one degree Fahrenheit.
Saxony,	Lead and Silver Mine of Junghohe Birk.	256	48°9	46.9	102.4
	do of Beschertgluck,	712	54.5	46.4	87.
	do do	840	56.8		80.7
	do Himmelfahrt,	735	57.9		63.9
Brittany,	do Kuprinz,	634	80.1		18.8
	do Poullauen,	128	53.4	52.7	182.
	do do	246	53.4		351.
	do do	459	58.3		82.
	do Huelgoet,	197	54.	51.8	89.5
	do do	262	59.		36.4
	do do	394	59.		54.7
	do do	755	67.5		48.4
Cornwall,	Dolcoath Mine,	1440	82.	50.	45.
Mexico.	Guanaxato, Silver Mine.	1713	98.2	68.8	45.8

*Proof 2. Temperature of the Rock in Mines; as shown in the following table.*

COUNTRIES.	MINES.	Depth in Feet.	Temp. Ob- served.	Mean temp. of surface.	Depth for one degree.
<i>1. In loose matter near the face of the Rock.</i>					
Cornwall,	United Copper Mines,	1142	87°4	50°	30.5
Carmeaux France.	1201	88.			31.1
	Coal Pit of Ravin,	597	62.8	52	55.3
Littry, do. Decise, do. do do	do of Castellan,	630	67.1	52	40.8
	do of St. Charles,	325	61.		36.1
	do of St. Jacobi,	351	64.		29.2
	do do	561	71.7		26.5
<i>2. In the Rock near its surface.</i>					
Saxony,	Mine of Beschertgluck,	591	52.2		101
	do do	813	59.	46.4	67
	do do	236	47.7		174.7
	do do	552	55.		63.7
	do do	880	59.		60.8
	do do	1246	65.7		64.4
<i>3. Three feet three inches within the rock.</i>					
Cornwall,	Dolcoath Mine. Reg- ister kept 18 Months.	1381	75.6	50.	54.
	Lead and Silver Mine of Kuprinz,	413	59.6		31.3
		686	62.5		42.6
		1063	67.7		49.9

In a colliery at Wigan, in Lancashire, England, at 150 feet deep, the temperature was constantly  $53^{\circ}$ : at 450 feet, it was  $56^{\circ}.75$ : at 750 feet it was  $63^{\circ}$ . This would give an increase of one degree for every 48 feet. *Am. Jour. of Science*, Vol. 34. p. 36.

A single experiment in the deepest coal mine in Great Britain, near Sunderland, gave the following results: Depth of the place of observation, 1584 feet: below the level of the sea, 1500 feet. Mean annual temperature at the surface,  $47^{\circ}.6$ : Temperature on the day of observation (Nov. 15, 1834,)  $49^{\circ}$ . Do. of the air at the bottom of the pit,  $64^{\circ}$ : close to the coal,  $68^{\circ}$ . Do. of water collected at bottom,  $67^{\circ}$ : Do. of salt water issuing from a hole made the same day,  $70^{\circ}1$ : Do. of gas rising through the water,  $72^{\circ}6$ : Do. of the front of the coal,  $68^{\circ}$ : Do. of the same, left in a bore hole for a week,  $71^{\circ}2$ . Hence, the heat increases at the rate of about a degree for every 60 feet.

*Proof 3. Temperature of Artesian Wells*, as shown in the following Table.

LOCALITIES.	Depth in Feet.	Mean temp. at Surface.	Temp. of Wells.	Depth for 1 degree in Feet.
Paris: Fountain de la Garde St. Ouen.	216	51. <sup>°</sup> 1	55. <sup>°</sup> 2	52.7
Dept. du Garde et des Pas Calais				
Fountain Artesienne de Marguette.	184	50.5	54.5	46.
Do. d'Aire.	207		55.9	38.3
Do. de St. Venant,	328		57.2	49.
Sheerness, England, mouth of the Medway,	361	50.9	59.9	40.1
Tours,	459	52.7	63.5	42.5
A well at La Rochelle,	369	53.4	64.6	33.
Near Berlin, Prussia, at,	675	49.1	67.66	36.3
Do. the same well at,	516		63.95	34.7
Do. do at,	392		62.82	28.5
Near New Brunswick, N. Jersey, at the depth,	250		52. }	72.
Do. at,	394		54. }	
South Hadley, Mass.	180	47.0	52.	36.

*Rem. 1.* Near Vienna in Austria are from 40 to 50 Artesian Wells, whose temperature varies from  $52^{\circ}$  to  $58^{\circ}$ ; the mean temperature at the surface being  $50^{\circ}.54$ . At Heilbronn in Wurtemburg, five wells sunk from 60 to 112 feet, have a temperature of  $55^{\circ}$ .

*Rem. 2.* Artesian wells have lately been applied with success in Wurtemburg, to prevent frost from stopping machinery, which was moved by running water; and also for warming a paper manufactory. Who knows but this application may prove of immense benefit to some regions of the globe? *Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1. p. 567.

*Proof 4. Thermal Springs.* Vast numbers of these occur in regions far removed from any modern volcanic action; generally upon lofty mountain ranges; as upon the Alps, the Pyren-

ees, Caucasus, the Ozark mountains in this country, where are nearly 70, &c. Their temperature varies from about summer heat nearly up to that of boiling water. Nor can their origin be explained without supposing a deep seated source of heat in the earth. This argument is not indeed, as direct and conclusive as those previously mentioned. But it confirms the others.

*Proof 5. The existence of numerous deep seated volcanos.* This argument is of the same kind as the last, and does not need any farther illustration here.

*Proof 6. Not one exception to this increase of internal temperature has ever occurred, where the experiment has been made in deep excavations.*

*Inference 1.* The increase of temperature from the surface of the earth downwards, does not appear to be at the same rate in all countries. The mean of all the observations recorded in the preceding tables, which have been made in England, gives 44 feet for a change of one degree. In some mines in France the increase is much slower, and in a few it is faster. The mean is reckoned at about 45 feet for each degree. In Mexico, according to the only observation given above, it is 45.8 feet. In Saxony it is considerably greater, not far from 65 feet to a degree. The few observations in this country given in the preceding table, indicates an increase of 54 feet to a degree.

*Inference 2.* The average increase for all the countries where observations have been made, is stated by Kupffer, to be 36.81 feet for each degree. *Edinburgh Journal of Science, April, 1832.*

*Inference 3.* At this rate, and assuming the temperature of the surface to be  $50^{\circ}$ , a heat sufficient to boil water would be reached at the depth of 5962 feet, or a little more than a mile: a heat of  $7000^{\circ}$ , sufficient to melt all known rocks, would be reached at 48 miles: and at the centre of the earth, it would amount to  $577.000^{\circ}$ . *Cordier's Essay on the Temperature of the Interior of the Earth.* Amherst, 1828, p. 73. *Moffatt's Scientific Class Book by Prof. Johnson, Philadelphia, 1836, Vol. 2, p. 311.*

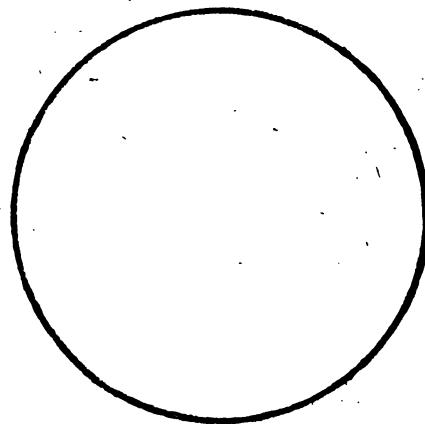
*Remark.* It is has been thought by many, and probably with reason, that the rate of increase in the subterranean heat, as deduced by Kupffer, is too rapid. From careful observation upon the Artesian Wells of Scotland, Dr. Patterson finds the mean increase to be one degree for every 47 feet: and from a more extended comparison given in Jameson's Journal, (April to July 1839,) the mean increase is one degree for 53 feet: Per-

haps the rate of 45 feet to a degree, fixed upon by the British Association, ought to be considered the best hitherto obtained.

*Inference 4.* From the preceding facts, and other collateral evidence, it has been inferred that all the interior of the earth, except a crust from 50 to 1000 miles thick, is at present in a state of fusion: that originally the whole globe was melted, and that its present crust has been formed by the cooling of the surface by radiation.

*Remark.* Fig. 107 is intended to represent the proportion of melted and unmelted matter in the earth, agreeably to the above inference; and on the supposition that the solid crust is 100 miles thick. This is shown by the broad line that forms the circumference. According to the mean increase of subterranean heat stated above, this crust should be only half as thick.

Fig. 107.



*Proof.* 1. Until some fact can be adduced showing that the heat of the earth ceases to increase beyond a certain depth, nothing but hypothesis can be adduced to prove that it does not go on increasing, until at least the rocks are all melted: for when they are brought into a fluid state, it is not difficult to see how the temperature may become more equalized through the mass, in consequence of the motion of the fluid matter; so that the temperature of the whole may not be greatly above that of fused rock. Now if the hypothesis of internal fluidity have other arguments (which follow below) in its favor, while

no facts of importance sustain its opposite, the former should be adopted.

*Proof.* 2. It appears from the experiments and profound mathematical reasoning of Baron Fourier, that even admitting all the internal parts of the earth to be in a fused state, except a crust of 30 or 40, miles in thickness, the effect of that internal heat might be insensible at the surface, on account of the extreme slowness with which heat passes through the oxidized crust. He has shown that the excess of temperature at the surface of the earth, in consequence of this internal heat, is not more than 1-17th of a degree, (Fahr.) nor can it ever be reduced more than that amount by this cause. This amount of heat would not melt a coat of ice 10 feet thick, in less than 100 years: or about one inch per annum. The temperature of the surface has not diminished on this account, during the last 2000 years, more than the 167th part of a degree: and it would take 200.000 years for the present rate of increase in the temperature as we descend into the earth to increase the temperature at the surface one degree: that is supposing the internal heat to be 500 times greater than that of boiling water. From all which it follows, that if internal heat exist, it has long since ceased to have any effect practically upon the climate of the globe. *Annals de Chimie et de Physique* No. 27. *American Journal of Science*, Vol. 32. p. 1. *Phillips' Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 2. p. 275.

*Remark.* These results of Fourier require the application of very profound mathematical investigations. And it may nay not be amiss to mention, that the late lamented Dr. Bowditch informed me, that he had followed Fourier through all his intricate analyses of this subject; and that the reasoning was entirely conclusive: nor did he consider his results at all invalidated by the papers of Prof. Parrot, which he had also read. Those of M. Poisson, in opposition to Fourier, have appeared since Dr. Bowditch's death.

*Proof.* 3. The existence of 300 active volcanos, and many extinct ones, whose origin is deep seated, and which are connected over extensive areas. If these were confined to one part of the globe, or if after one eruption the volcano were to remain forever quiet, we might regard the cause as local and the effect of particular chemical changes at those places, aided perhaps by electro-magnetic agencies. But if the internal parts of the earth are in a melted state, that is, in the state of lava; and if this mass were slowly cooling, occasional eruptions of the matter ought to be expected to take place; just as in fact they do take place by existing volcanos. Assuming the thickness of the earth's crust to be 60 miles, the contraction of this envelope, one 13000th of an inch, would force out matter enough to form

one of the greatest volcanic eruptions on record. More probably, however, the percolations of water to the heated nucleus, or other cause of disturbance, more frequently causes an eruption than simple contraction.

*Other Hypotheses of Volcanic Action.*

*Hypothesis of the Metalloids.* This hypothesis, originally proposed, though subsequently abandoned, by Sir Humphrey Davy, supposes the internal parts of the earth, whether hot or cold, fluid or solid, to be composed in part of the metallic bases of the alkalies and earths, which combine energetically with oxygen whenever they are brought into contact with water, with the evolution of light and heat. To these metalloids water occasionally percolates in large quantities through fissures in the strata, and its sudden decomposition produces an eruption. Dr. Daubeny, the most strenuous advocate of this theory at the present time, has brought forward a great number of considerations which render it quite probable that this cause may often be concerned in producing volcanic phenomena, even if we do not admit that it is the sole cause. *Daubeny on Volcanos.*

*Remark 1.* It is interesting to notice how the hypothesis of central heat, or the Mechanical Theory of Cordier, as it is often called; and this Chemical Theory of Daubeny, apply almost equally well to the explanation of volcanic phenomena. Both agree as to the necessity of water being brought in contact with a heated mass in the earth. Both explain equally well the formation of vapor, the extrication of gases, and the sublimation of sulphur, salts, &c. Both show why volcanos are usually in the vicinity of water; "why their action is intermittent, and why the volcanic power appears to have decreased in energy. The constantly active volcanos, especially such an one as Kiraua, are more difficult to explain by the chemical theory. It must also be considered a strong objection to this hypothesis, that silicium, the most abundant of all the metalloids in the earth, "is incombustible in air and in oxygen gas; and may be exposed to the flame of the blowpipe without fusing, or undergoing any other change." (Turner's Chemistry, p. 323.) and that aluminium, the most abundant metal in the earth next to silicium, "is not oxidized by water at common temperatures: though on heating the water to near its boiling point, oxidation of the metal commences:—the oxidation however is very slight." (Turner, p. 316.)

*Remark 2.* There is not necessarily any discrepancy between these two theories: for admitting even igneous fluidity in the earth, the nucleus may nevertheless be metals uncombined. Hence some distinguished advocates for the doctrine of central heat, have also adopted partially or wholly the other theory. *Ex. gr. De La Beche, in his Theoretical Geology; and Professor Phillips, in his Treatise on Geology in the Encyclopedia Britannica.*

*Modified Chemical Theory.* Some geologists have called in the aid of electricity to assist in the decompositions and recom-

positions that result from volcanic agency. By this means the temperature of the uncombined metals is raised, so as to cause them to become more readily oxidized. This is the view advanced by Mr. Lyell. (*Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1, p. 440.) This hypothesis includes of course, as one of its elements, the earlier hypothesis of Lemery and others, who imputed volcanic phenomena to the combustion of coal, bitumen, &c. and the decomposition of the sulphate of the metals. *For an account of numerous modifications of opinion respecting the cause of volcanic agency, see Girardin Sur les Volcans, p. 84.*

*Proof. 4. The Spheroidal Figure of the Earth.* Its form is precisely that which it would assume, if while in a fluid state, it began to revolve on its axis with its present velocity; and hence the probability is strong that this was the origin of its oblateness. But if originally fluid, it must have been igneous fluidity: for since the solid matter of the globe is at present 50,000 times heavier than the water, the idea of aqueous fluidity is entirely out of the question.

*Other Suppositions.* 1. Some maintain that the earth was created in its present oblate form. This is indeed possible; because God could have given it any form he pleased. But there is no proof that such was the fact: while on the other hand, we may always assume that whenever we can see natural causes for natural phenomena, they were produced by those causes; unless we can see some reason for special Divine interference. 2. Sir John Herschel has suggested the possibility of accounting for the flattening at the poles, by causes now in action; which hypothesis seems to Mr. Lyell quite reasonable: though Sir John does not maintain that such was actually the mode in which it took place. He supposes the earth to have been created a perfect sphere, covered by an uniform ocean: and to have commenced a rotation on its axis, as at present. The water of course would rush towards the equator, leaving the polar regions dry, and very much elevated. But as this great equatorial ocean wore down its shores, the land would gradually be carried towards the equator, and spread over the bottom of the sea, and ultimately be elevated so as to form the present continent. It is hardly necessary to say, that the present distribution of land and water, and the form of continents, do not accord with such a mode of formation: and so improbable is the idea that two vast continents, around the poles, with a height of nearly 12 miles, have been thus worn down and carried thousands of miles towards the equator, that though theoretically possible, it must be regarded as practically impossible. *Prof. Phillips' Treatise on Geology, p. 8.*

*Proof. 5. The tropical and ultra tropical character of organic remains found in high latitudes.* If the globe has passed through the process of refrigeration, as the hypothesis of original igneous fluidity implies, there must have been a time, before reaching its present statical condition, when the surface had the high temperature denoted by these remains: and that

period must have been very remote ; since no essential change of temperature from internal causes has taken place for thousands of years. A climate, also, chiefly dependent on subterranean agency, would be more uniform over the whole globe, than one dependent on solar influence ; and such appears to have been the climate of those remote ages. Hence we may reasonably impute that temperature to internal heat ; if some other more probable cause cannot be found.

*Other Suppositions.* 1. It has already been stated, that Mr. Lyell has proposed an hypothesis, dependent upon the relative height of land in high latitudes at different periods, to explain the tropical character of organic remains, without the aid of secular refrigeration. But that hypothesis has been already sufficiently explained. 2. Another hypothesis has been advanced with much confidence by certain writers, not however practical geologists, to the same effect. It supposes these organic remains to have been drifted after death from the torrid zone. But their great distance in general from the torrid zone, the perfect preservation, in many cases, of their most delicate parts, with other evidences of quiet inhumation near the spot where they lived, such as the preservation in at least two cases of the softer parts of the animals, render such a supposition wholly untenable.

*Proof.* 6. *The fact that nearly all the crust of the globe has been in a melted state.* As to the unstratified rocks, there will scarcely be a dissenting voice among geologists, to the opinion that they are of igneous origin, and have been melted. As to the detrital, or fossiliferous rocks, also, it will be admitted by all, that they were originally made up of fragments derived from the primary stratified or unstratified rocks ; and that consequently, so far as derived from the latter, they have been melted. And in regard to the primary stratified rocks, also, although there are two different theories as to the mode in which they have been produced, yet both admit either of the entire fusion of these rocks, or of their having been so highly heated as to be able to assume a crystalline arrangement. Hence if the entire crust of the globe has been fused, it is a fair presumption that it was the result of the fusion of the whole globe.

7. *This theory furnishes us with the only known adequate cause for the elevation of mountain chains and continents.*

*Other supposed causes of elevation.*

1. *Earthquakes.* Examples have been given in another place

(p. 222.) of small and limited elevations of land, produced by earthquakes. And it has been maintained that an indefinite repetition of such events might elevate the highest mountains, if they took place on no larger scale than at present. But it seems to be satisfactorily proved, that some elevations at least, such as those producing the enormous faults of the north of England, have been produced to an extent of several thousand feet, by a single paroxysmal effort; whereas the mightiest effects of a modern earthquake have produced elevations only a few feet; and in most cases the uplifted surface has again subsided. Again, there is little probability that a succession of earthquakes should take place along the same extended line through so many ages, as would be necessary to raise some existing mountain chains. Earthquakes may explain some slight vertical movements of limited districts; but the cause seems altogether inadequate to the effect, when applied to the elevation of continents.

2. *Expansion of the rocks by heat.* Col. Totten, who is now at the head of the Topographical Bureau in this country, has made some accurate experiments on the expansion of rocks by heat. A block of granite, five feet long, by a change of temperature of  $96^{\circ}$  F. expanded 0.027792 inch: crystalline marble, 0.03264 inch: sandstone, 0.054914 inch. By these data it appears that were the temperature of a portion of the earth's crust 10 miles thick, to be raised  $600^{\circ}$ , it would cause the surface to rise 200 feet. This would be a greater thickness than could be produced by the accumulation of detritus at the bottom of any ocean, whose temperature might be raised on the hypothesis of Prof. Babbage. Yet a still greater thickness might be heated, provided any new and extensive foci of heat should be produced deep beneath the surface of the globe. Still this accession of heat would finally be dissipated by radiation; and then the surface would again subside. This cause, therefore, though it may perhaps explain such vertical movements of particular regions as are taking place in Scandinavia, Greenland, Italy, England, &c. seems inadequate to account for the permanent elevation of large continents. If they had been raised in this manner, and the same remark applies to some extent to earthquakes, we should hardly expect to find several distinct systems of elevation on the same continent, nor so many examples of vertical strata.

3. *Unequal contraction and expansion of land and water by cold and heat.* Assuming the mean depth of the ocean to be 10 miles, and that it had cooled from boiling heat to  $40^{\circ}$  F. its volume would contract about 0.042; while the contraction of

the land would be only 0.00417. This would produce a sinking of the ocean of 697 feet. (*Phillips' Geology*, p. 277.) An increase of temperature would produce an opposite effect: viz. the partial submersion of the land; though it would be less than the desiccation, because of the greater area over which the water would flow. Admitting these changes of temperature to have taken place, and the theory of central heat supposes the former, that is, the refrigeration, they could not account for the desiccation of the globe, because the tilted condition of the strata shows that the land has been raised up: whereas this theory implies a mere draining of the waters.

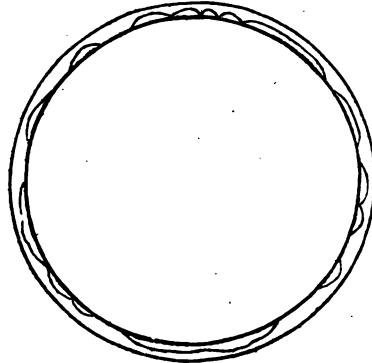
4. *A change in the position of the poles of the Globe.* This hypothesis—not long since so much in vogue—would explain how continents once beneath the ocean are now above it, if we admit the form of the earth before the change, to have been the same as at present: viz. an oblate spheroid. But it would not explain the tilted condition of the strata, nor is it sustained by any analogous phenomena which astronomy describes.

#### *Elevation by Central Heat.*

*First Mode.* It is possible to conceive that volcanic power, acting as at present, but with vastly greater intensity, might have lifted up continents: for their elevation, in part at least, appears to have been the result of local forces acting beneath the earth's crust.

*Second Mode.* A more probable hypothesis, suggested by Beaumont, imputes the present ridged and furrowed condition of the earth's surface to *a collapse of its consolidated crust upon its contracted interior nucleus*. This may be illustrated by Fig. 108.

Fig. 108.



The outer circle represents the crust of the earth, after it had become consolidated above the liquid mass within. This heated nucleus would go on contracting as it cooled, while the crust would remain nearly of the same size. At length, when it became necessary for the crust to accomodate itself to the nucleus, contracted say to the inner circle, it could do this only by falling down in some places and rising in others ; as is represented by the irregular line between the two circles. Thus would the surface of the earth become plicated by the sinking down of some parts by their gravity, and the elevation of correspondent ridges by the lateral pressure. The principal ridges thus produced, must coincide very nearly with a great circle : and as the earth's crust made successive efforts to accomodate itself to the constantly contracting nucleus, ridges would be produced in different directions, crossing one another ; and thus the various systems of elevation known to exist on the globe, be formed at various epochs.

*Objection.* Such a shortening of the earth's diameter as this hypothesis supposes, would increase the rapidity of its rotatory motion, and shorten the length of the day : whereas astronomy shows that for 2000 years no such change has taken place. *Answer.* That period is too short fairly to test the point ; since it requires a long time for the tension upon the crust of the globe to become so great as to produce a fracture ; and this may not have occurred since that time. If there be any flexibility, however, in the earth's crust, gravity must produce some depression of it in some places, and elevation in others, before the tension is great enough to produce a fracture. And possibly this may be the origin of some cases of slight subsidence or elevation on record.

### *Origin of the Primary Stratified Rocks.*

*Remark.* The way has not previously been prepared for a full understanding of the hypotheses above alluded to, concerning the origin of the primary stratified rocks ; because both of these depend more or less upon internal heat.

*First Hypothesis.* According to this hypothesis the stratified primary rocks are merely the detrital or fossiliferous rocks altered by heat. As these accumulated at the bottom of the ocean, being much poorer conductors of heat than water, they would confine the internal heat that was attempting to escape by radiation, until it became so great as to bring the matter into a crystalline state : but not great enough to produce entire fusion, so as to destroy the marks of stratification.

### *Arguments in favor of this Hypothesis.*

1. Numerous facts show that the molecular constitution of solid bodies may undergo great changes, without much change of the general form ; and even without any great elevation of temperature. Thus the heat of the sun alone, will change prismatic crystals of zinc into octahedrons ; and the same takes place with sulphate of nickel. (*Connection of the Physical Sciences by Mrs. Somerville*, p. 171.) Indeed, Dr. Macculloch

says he has completely proved by experiments, that "every metal can completely change its crystalline arrangements while solid, and many of them at very low temperatures." (*System of Geology*, Vol. I. p. 190.) Analogous changes have taken place in sandstone beneath trap rocks: in trap rocks after they have become solid; and in solid glass. Hence the presumption is in favor of these internal changes in rocks of mechanical origin from internal heat.

2. The heat requisite for the conversion of detrital into crystalline rocks, without destroying the stratified structure, may have been derived either from an internal heated nucleus in the earth, when the crust was thinner than at present, as it was during the period in which the primary strata were deposited, or from local nuclei of heat, propagated upwards through detrital deposits, according to the theory of Prof. Babbage.

3. Geology furnishes numerous examples, in which the mechanical or fossiliferous rocks have been converted by heat into primary crystallized rocks in limited spots by the agency of heat. When dykes of granite, porphyry, trap rocks, or recent lava, pass through detrital deposits, for a certain distance on the sides of the dyke, these conversions have taken place. Chalk and earthy limestone are in this manner in Ireland, converted into crystallized marble: and the same effect was produced upon chalk by heating it powerfully in a sealed gun barrel. Experimental proof has also been furnished by the chemist, that quartz rock is merely sandstone altered by heat; as is shown also at Salisbury Craig, Teesdale, and Shropshire, in Great Britain, where sandstone and basalt come into contact. In Shetland argillaceous slate, when in contact with granite, is changed into hornblende slate. Beneath the greenstone of Mt. Tom, in Massachusetts, the micaceous sandstone is so much changed, where the rocks come in contact, that it can hardly be distinguished in hand specimens from some varieties of mica slate. Clay slate is obviously nothing but clay that has been subjected to strong heat and pressure.

4. The primary stratified rocks still retain marks of a mechanical origin. The general appearance of gneiss and mica slate is that of fragments of crystals, more or less worn and rounded, and then recemented by heat. But real conglomerates occur which yet have all the characters of the primary stratified rocks, except perhaps gneiss. Thus, I have in my cabinet from Rhode Island, a perfect and highly crystalline mica slate, which contains as perfectly rounded pebbles of quartz as any secondary conglomerate: also a talco-micaceous slate of the same character, which abounds in crystals of magnetic oxide of iron. These rocks are connected with

transition slates on the one side, and with primary slates on the other. I have also, perfectly distinct conglomerates of quartz rock, made up of rounded fragments of quartz, cemented by comminuted materials of the same kind. The strata of this rock in Berkshire County, in Massachusetts, are associated with gneiss and mica slate; all of which at the spot, (in Washington,) stand upon their edges.

*Objections.* 1. There is little probability that detritus is conveyed to the bottom of the ocean in quantities sufficient to cause such an accumulation of internal heat, as would convert mechanical into crystalline rocks:—a degree of heat nearly equal to that which would melt them. True, the heat would accumulate in these detrital deposits to a certain degree: but not beyond what exists in the solid crust of the earth generally; and this would require us to descend nearly 50 miles, before a temperature would be reached sufficient for the purpose. Unless, therefore, this theory supposes a much higher temperature on the globe when this change took place, than at present, (and most of its advocates deny this,) the requisite heat could not have been obtained, especially as in many cases the primary rocks extend to the surface, and do not appear to have ever been covered with newer ones; so that there must have been heat enough to produce this transformation immediately beneath the waters of the ocean.

2. The difference in chemical composition between the primary and the newer rocks, is opposed to the idea that the former are only modifications of the latter. For we find that some of the ingredients, lime and carbon for instance, are far more abundant in the newer than in the older rocks. This difference points of course to a different origin.

3. If all the stratified primary rocks are metamorphic we ought to find in them occasionally, especially in the limestones, traces of organic remains. For examples are not uncommon, in which the traces of such remains are found, (of which a description has been given in Section 5,) in calcareous rocks which have become perfect crystalline limestone, as in the encrinial limestone: and in other rocks which are converted into vesicular trap by the agency of heat. It is incredible, therefore, that if the remains of animals and plants once existed in these rocks, as numerous as they now exist in the secondary rocks, they should all have vanished; since it is certain, that the heat which produced the metamorphosis, was not great enough to obliterate the stratification.

*Second Hypothesis.* This hypothesis supposes the primary *stratified rocks* to have been formed, partly in a mechanical,

and partly in a chemical mode, by aqueous and igneous agency, when the temperature of the crust of the globe was very high, and before organic beings could live upon it.

*Arguments in favor of this Hypothesis.*

1. It shows why, amid so much evidence of chemical agency, in the formation of the primary rocks, there is still so much proof of the operation of mechanical agencies. For in that state of the globe, when its crust had cooled only so far as to allow water to exist upon it in a fluid state, volcanic agency must have been far more active than at present: and consequently the agitated waters must have worn away the granite at their bottom extensively. But as the heated waters would contain a great deal of silica, and other ingredients which would readily fall down as chemical deposits, the abraded materials would be consolidated before they had become entirely rounded into pebbles; so that the compound might, upon the whole, be regarded as of chemical origin; and yet not be destitute, as gneiss and mica slate are not, of the marks of attrition. Indeed, it would be strange, if in some instances the attrition did not proceed so far as to produce the materials for a perfect conglomerate; as the facts mentioned under the last hypothesis show was sometimes the fact.

2. It shows us why silicates predominated in the earlier periods of the globe; and why limestone and carbon were more abundant at later periods. Thermal waters, it has been shown in another place, often contain an abundance of silica in solution; but cold water never does. Again, by heating water to the boiling point, the carbonic acid is all driven off: and without this acid, carbonate of lime could not be held in solution to much extent: and farther, hot water will dissolve much less quicklime than cold; the proportion being as 778 to 1270. Hence the heated seas of those early times would contain and deposit more of silica, but less of lime, or carbonate of lime, than under existing circumstances. Another cause why less of lime is found in the older rocks, is, that probably it was then less in quantity; since it would seem to be derived, in part at least, from organic beings which did not then exist.

3. It explains the absence of organic remains in the primary stratified rocks. It shows that the temperature was too high, and the surface too unstable, to allow of the existence of animals and plants. And if they had existed in as great abundance as at present—an assumption which is made by the preceding hypothesis—it is incredible that some traces of them

should not remain: for if the fusion of these rocks was not so entire as to obliterate all marks of mechanical agency, if, in fact, perfectly rounded pebbles still occur in them, there is no reason why the harder parts of animals should not also remain: We have examples where the traces of organic remains exist in rocks, that have been almost entirely fused—at least so much melted, as in the case of a vegetable stem in trap, in the valley of the Connecticut, that it is converted into decided vesicular amygdaloid; and yet its vegetable character can scarcely be doubted. (*See a fine specimen in Amherst College.*) We may hence infer, with no little confidence, that organic life did not exist on the globe when the primary rocks were in a course of deposition, and this hypothesis explains the reason.

4. It explains too the reason why carbon is much less abundant in the older than in the newer rocks. Organic beings are undoubtedly the source of most of the carbon in the rocks—and of course it would be found in small quantities where neither animals nor plants existed.

*Remark.* Dr. Macculloch does indeed state that he found organic remains (*orthocerata*), in quartz rock, connected with gneiss, in Sutherland; but other distinguished geologists (Sedgwick and Murchison,) have failed in finding any at that spot. He thinks, also, that fragments of shells occur in hornblende slate in Glen Tilt (*System of Geology, Vol. 1. p. 418.*) Von Dechen also mentions fossiliferous graywacke, interstratified with gneiss and mica slate in Bohemia. But facts of so anomalous a character, need still farther confirmation. *Phillips' Geology.* p. 78.

5. It explains the imperceptible gradation of gneiss into granite, which we often witness. For if thick beds of gneiss were deposited upon the granite, under the circumstances supposed by the hypothesis, it is easy to conceive how the internal heat should accumulate in the manner explained by Prof. Babbage, so as to melt the granitic crust anew, and to extend the fusion into the lower beds of the gneiss; at least so as to produce an almost entire obliteration of the lines of stratification, and form numerous *nuduses* of perfect granite in the gneiss. This hypothesis explains the passage of these two rocks into each other, better than the first hypothesis; because it supposes a higher temperature beneath and upon the earth's crust at the time of the formation of the gneiss.

*Rem.* The most important objections to this hypothesis are embraced in those which are urged against the doctrine of internal heat in general; and therefore, it will be necessary to state only the latter.

#### *Objections to the Doctrines of Internal heat.*

*Obs. 1.* *It has been maintained that the high temperature of deep excavations may be explained by chemical changes going on*

in the rocks; such as the decomposition of iron pyrites by mineral waters, the lights employed by the workmen, the heat of their bodies, and especially by the condensation of air at great depths.

*Answer.* In the experiments that have been made upon the temperature of mines, care has been taken to avoid all these sources of error except the last, (which are indeed sometimes very considerable,) and yet the general result is as has been stated; nor is there a single example on the other side to invalidate that result. As to the condensation of air in mines, Mr. Fox has shown that the air which ascends from their bottom is much warmer than when there; so that it carries away instead of producing heat. *Cordier's Essay on the Temperature of the Interior of the Earth. Edinburgh Journal of Science April, 1832.*

*Obs. 2. The temperature of the Ocean.* Prof. Parrot, who urges this objection, recapitulates the results of the most accurate observations upon the temperature of the ocean: "1. That the temperature diminishes as the depth increases: 2. That it diminishes at first rapidly, then very slowly. From the surface to the depth of 2478 feet, it diminishes more than 41° F. and from that to 5490 feet, less than 2°." *American Journal of Science, Vol. 26. p. 12.*) According to De La Beche, there are some exceptions to these conclusions, especially in high latitudes. In fresh water lakes, the same observer found that the temperature decreased till it had nearly reached 40° F. when it continued nearly the same to the greatest measured depths. (*Manual of Geology, p. 20.*) Facts of this sort Prof. Parrot considers as directly at variance with the idea of internal heat.

*Answer.* Taking the conclusions of Prof. Parrot as true, they are just what we might expect would be the temperature of the ocean, whether the earth had internal heat or not. For it appears that the strata of water arrange themselves according to their specific gravities. The warmest particles being the lightest, of course rise to the top; and the coldest sink to the bottom: just as we find to be the case in a vessel of water that is being heated over a fire. But when fresh water has descended to the temperature of 40° F. it begins to expand, and therefore water below that degree will not sink but rise. Yet experiments show that it rarely goes lower than that degree; and therefore, when the water has reached it, or nearly reached it, we might expect that the temperature at greater depths would be nearly the same. Salt water continues to contract until it reaches the freezing point, which varies from 32° to 4°,

according to the amount of salt which it contains. Hence we might expect that the temperature of the sea, except perhaps in very cold latitudes, would decrease downwards until it reached a temperature below which it rarely descends; after which we should expect a uniform temperature to the greatest depths. A few observations, indeed, are on record, which can hardly be reconciled to the general principle that waters of lakes and oceans arrange themselves according to their specific gravities: yet such cases probably result from local causes of variation. Upon the whole, it seems that the facts in respect to the ocean's temperature, neither prove nor disprove the doctrine of central heat.

*Remark.* Some have supposed, that since the ocean has a depth of several miles, the water at its bottom ought to be in a state of ebullition, if the doctrine of internal heat be true. But there is no reason to suppose the earth's crust to be thinner there than on the dry land; and hence no more heat will escape into the waters by radiating from the earth, than escapes into the air; which, as we have seen, according to Fourier, is a very small quantity: not sufficient to affect the temperature of water or air perceptibly.

*Obj. 3.* "If the central heat were as intense as is represented, there must be a circulation of currents, tending to equalize the temperature of the resulting fluid, and the solid crust itself would be melted."—"If the whole planet, for example, were composed of water covered with a spheroidal crust of ice fifty miles thick, and with an interior ocean having a central heat about 200 times that of the melting point of ice, &c:—If it must be conceded, in this case, that the ice would soon melt, on what principle can it be maintained that analogous effects would not follow in regard to the earth under the conditions assumed in the theory of central heat?" *Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 1. p. 456, 462.

*Answer.* In the first place, it is not essential to the doctrine of central heat, that a temperature very much exceeding that requisite to melt rocks, (7000° F.) should exist in any part of the molten nucleus. It may even be admitted that the whole globe was cooled down very nearly to that point, before a crust began to form over it. For still, according to the conclusions of Fourier, it would require an immense period to cool the internal parts, so that they should lose their fluid incandescent state, after a crust of some 20 miles thick had been formed over them. In the second place, we have the case of currents of lava, which cool at their surface, so as to permit men to walk over them, while for years, and even decades of years, the lava beneath is in a molten state, and some times even in motion. And if a crust can thus readily be formed over lava,

why might not one be formed over the whole globe, while its interior was in a melted state: and if a crust only a few feet in thickness, can so long preserve the internal mass of lava at an incandescent heat, why may not a crust upon the earth, many miles in thickness, preserve for thousands of years the nucleus of the earth in the same state? True, if we immerse a solid piece of metal in a melted mass of the same, the fragment will be melted; *because it cannot radiate the heat which passes into it*: but keep one side of the fragment exposed to a cold medium, as the crust of the earth is, and it will require very much stronger heat to melt the other side. If the crust of the globe were to be broken into fragments, and these plunged into the fluid matter beneath, probably the whole would soon be melted, if the internal heat be strong enough. But so long as its outer surface is surrounded by a medium, whose temperature is at least  $58^{\circ}$  below zero, nothing but a heat inconceivably powerful, can make much impression on its inferior surface. In the third place, a globe of water intensely heated at its centre, and covered by a crust of ice, is not a just illustration of a globe of earth in a similar condition, covered by a crust of rocks and soils. For between ice and water there is no intermediate or semi-fluid condition. As soon as the ice melts, there exists a perfect mobility among the particles, so that the hottest, because the lightest, would always be kept in contact with the surrounding crust of ice, and melt it continually more and more: especially as ice, being a perfect non-conductor of heat, would not permit any of it to pass through, and by radiation prevent the melting. On the other hand, between solid rock and perfectly fluid lava, there is every conceivable degree of spissitude; and of course every degree of mobility among the particles. Hence they could not in that semi-fluid stratum, arrange themselves in the order of their specific gravities; and therefore, the layer of greatest heat would not be in contact with the unmelted solid rock. True, the heat would be diffused outwards, but so long as the hardened crust could radiate the excess of temperature, the melting would not advance in that direction. This would take place only when the heat was so excessive, that the envelop could not throw it off into space.

*Objection 4.* It is maintained, that if the earth was originally in a fluid or gaseous state, and subsequently condensed, the solidification would commence at the centre, and proceed outwards. The solidification of a nucleus at the centre by pressure, would throw out much heat, by which a layer around the nucleus would be expanded, so as to become lighter, and to cause heavier particles to take its place. These would at length be-

come solidified, and thus would this process gradually advance towards the circumference of the globe, until the whole was converted into a solid mass. This is the view of M. Poisson. See *Am. Journal of Science*, Vol. 34, p. 61.

*Answer.* If it be admitted that the order of solidification in a globe condensing from a fluid or a gaseous state, would be from the centre to the circumference, while that globe was surrounded by a medium of very high temperature, yet if the temperature were such as actually surrounds the earth, radiation must produce a crust over the surface; and when once a solid crust was formed, then the conclusions of Baron Fourier, already explained, would follow. Even though enormous pressure might make the central parts more dense than the crust, still this would so confine the heat that a high temperature might exist in the interior. In every case in which experiments have been made upon the cooling of intensely heated bodies, a crust forms over the surface, which much retards the refrigeration of the central parts. All known analogies, therefore, are opposed to this hypothesis.

*Remark.* M. Poisson resorts to a most extraordinary supposition to explain the observed increase of temperature as we descend into the earth. He assumes as true, the suggestion of the elder Herschel, that the solar system is in motion through space, and that the temperature of this space is so different in different parts, as to heat the earth to a great depth at one time, and then, while passing through the frigid regions, it is gradually giving off its heat. It is hardly necessary to say, that such a movement of the solar system as is here supposed has scarcely nothing but conjecture to prove it. But if it be admitted, we cannot imagine what evidence there is, that different portions of the space passed over should have more than a very slight difference of temperature. This is, therefore, an hypothesis based upon hypothesis.

### *Hypothetical state of the Globe in the earliest Times.*

*Remark.* The theory of central heat, as already explained, extends no farther back in the world's history than to the time when the globe was in a state of fusion from heat: and the chemical theory, which ascribes subterranean heat to the oxidation of a metallic nucleus, does not necessarily describe the state of things in the beginning. But the mind naturally enquires, whichever of these theories is adopted, what was the state of things at the commencement, or at the earliest period of which we can obtain any glimpses. To gratify this curiosity the two following hypothesis have been suggested. It ought, however, to be remarked, that though they be entirely groundless, the theories of central heat and of the oxidation of a metallic nucleus, may nevertheless be true.

*First Hypothesis.* This is advanced by the advocates of original igneous fluidity, and supposes that previous to that time, the matter of the globe had been in a state so intensely heated, as to be entirely dissipated, or converted into vapour and gas.

As the heat was gradually radiated into space, condensation would take place: and this process would evolve a vast amount of heat, by which the materials would be kept in a molten state, until at length a solid crust would be formed as already explained.

*Arguments in favor of this Hypothesis.*

1. The nature of comets shows that worlds may be in a gaseous state. These bodies appear to have "no more solidity or coherence than a cloud of dust, or a wreath of smoke,"—"through which the stars are visible with no perceptible diminution of their brightness." (*Whewell's Bridgewater Treatise*, p. 152, 153.) Sometimes however, they appear more dense towards their centre, and well defined circular nuclei have been seen in a few. It has been thought, also, that some of them become more dense at their successive returns. Dr. Herschell regards them all as self luminous. Now in such facts do we not see a striking resemblance to the early condition of our globe, according to this hypothesis—to its condition before it had become so much condensed as to be a fluid incandescent mass.

2. The nebulae appear to be similar in composition to comets: though not yet actually converted into comets. They prove that a vast amount of the matter of the universe actually exists in the state of vapor.

3. The sun, and probably the fixed stars, appear to be examples of immense globes so far condensed as to be in a fluid state by intense heat. This heat perhaps, is still powerful enough to dissipate the more volatile materials, which form a vast zone around the sun's equator and produce the zodiacal light.

4. The process of refrigeration appears to be still farther advanced upon the moon: so much so, that it has ceased to be self luminous. And yet its entire surface bears the marks of volcanic desolation: so that it is doubtful whether even yet it is in such a condition that beings like man could inhabit it. *Bakewell's Geology* p. 384.

5. Some of the other planets appear to be in a transition state between habitable and uninhabitable worlds. Thus, a remarkable nebulosity surrounds the asteroid planets, Juno, Ceres, and Pallas. Jupiter is not improbably covered with water; and Saturn by a fluid lighter than water.

6. All these facts render it probable that other worlds are passing through the successive stages of refrigeration to which the hypothesis under consideration supposes the earth to have been subject. They afford us some glimpses of a far reaching law of nature on this subject.

*Second Hypothesis.* This hypothesis supposes the globe to have been created a mass of combustibles and metals uncombined: to which were suddenly added water, the atmosphere, chlorine, iodine, and perhaps hydrogen. The chemical action that would ensue, would produce an intense ignition and combustion of the whole surface of the planet: a new and oxidized crust would be formed over it; that crust would be rent and dislocated, as we now find it to have been. But as the crust became thicker, water and other agents, which

act energetically on the uncombined metals, would less frequently reach them ; and at length the surface would become habitable. *Am. Jour. Science*, Vol. 14. p. 88.

*Proof.* It is not pretended that any facts directly corroborative of this hypothesis are known. But the facility with which it explains the changes that have taken place on the globe, is supposed to render it probable.

*Intensity of Action in the Causes of Geological Change.*

*First Theory.* Mr. Lyell contends that the causes of geological change now operating upon the globe, with no increase of intensity, that is, acting with no more energy than at present, are sufficient to account for all the revolutions which the crust of the earth has undergone. He admits of no irregularities or catastrophes greater than now take place : and supposes that effects which transcend any single effect of existing causes, have been the result of repetitions, sometimes almost endless, of present agencies. In other words, he supposes that things have remained from the beginning subject to no greater changes than they experience at the present time. To prove these positions is the great object of his able work on the *Principles of Geology*.

*Proof.* 1. It is agreed on all hands, that the nature of geological causes has been the same in all ages ; although even as late as the time of Cuvier, he says that "none of the agents nature now employs were sufficient for the production of her ancient works."

2. An indefinite repetition of an agency on a limited scale, can produce the same effects as a paroxysmal effort of the same agency, however powerful ; provided the former is able to produce any effect, as for instance, in the accumulation of detritus the elevation of continents, the dislocation of strata, &c. Now it is unphilosophical to call in the aid of extraordinary agency, when its ordinary operation is sufficient to explain the phenomena.

3. Nearly every variety of rock found in the crust of the globe, has been shown to be in the course of formation by existing aqueous and igneous agencies : and if a few have not yet been detected in the process of formation, it is probably because they are produced in places inaccessible to observation.

*Second Theory.* This theory admits that no causes of geological change, different in their nature from those now in action, have ever operated on the globe : in other words, that the geological processes now going on, are in all cases the antitypes of those which were formerly in operation : but it maintains that

the existing causes operate now in many cases, with less intensity than formerly.

*Proof.* 1. The spheroidal figure of the earth and other facts already detailed, seem to render almost certain the former fluidity of the globe. Now whether that fluidity was aqueous or igneous, or both in part, it is certain that the agencies which produced it must have operated in earlier times with vastly greater intensity than at this day, and that their energy must have been constantly decreasing from that time to the present.

2. Still more direct is the evidence from the character of organic remains in high latitudes, of the prevalence of a temperature in early times hotter than tropical: too warm, indeed, to explain by any supposed change of levels in the dry land. And if this be admitted, heat must have been more powerful in its operation than at present; and this would increase the aqueous, atmospheric and organic agencies of those times.

3. No agency at present in operation, without a vast increase of energy, is adequate to the elevation, several thousand feet, of vast chains of mountains and continents; such as we know to have taken place in early times. A succession of elevations by earthquakes, repeated through an indefinite number of ages, the vertical movements being only a few feet at each recurrence, is a cause inadequate to the effect, if we admit that earthquakes have exhibited their maximum energy within historic times. Besides, it is difficult to conceive how a continent could be sustained several thousand feet high, unless melted matter be forced in beneath its crust. But earthquakes, and even the whole amount of volcanic power, if the doctrine of internal heat be rejected, could not supply any such prop. If we could suppose a succession of earthquakes, acting for thousands or millions of years along some anticlinal axis of great length, we have reason to suppose from their known operation, that sometimes they would elevate, and sometimes sink down the surface; so that the final resultant would be probably little change of level, and not an elevation like the Audea or the Himalayah mountains.

4. In a majority of cases the periods of disturbance on the globe appear to have been short compared with the periods of repose that have intervened: as is obvious from the fact that particular formations have the same strike and dip throughout their whole extent: unless some portions have been acted upon by more than one elevatory force: and then we find a sudden change of strike and dip in the formations above and below. Whereas, had any of the causes of elevation now in operation listed up these formations by a repetition of their present com-

paratively minute effects, there ought to be a gradual decrease in the dip from the bottom of the formation upwards, and no sudden change of dip between any two consecutive formations, unless some strata are wanting. At the periods of these elevatory movements, therefore, the force must have been greater than any that is now exerted, to produce analogous effects.

5. The sudden and remarkable changes in the organic contents of the strata, as we pass from one formation to another, even when none of the regular strata are wanting, coincides exactly with the supposition of long periods of repose, succeeded by destructive catastrophes. Nor is the supposition that species of animals and plants have become gradually extinct, and have been replaced by new species, by a law of nature during periods of repose, sustained by any facts that have occurred within the historic period: no example having been discovered of the creation of a new species by such a law; and not more than one or two (the Dodo and Apteryx) of the extinction of a species.

6. We have no evidence that the most important of the older rocks, both stratified and unstratified, are produced by any causes now in operation. That they may be produced deep in the earth, where igneous causes are still in intense operation, is a plausible hypothesis, but unsustained by a single example of the production of mica slate, gneiss, granite, or sienite. The highly crystalline and in other respects peculiar character of these rocks, as well as their entire deficiency of traces of organic existence, when they were formed, point to a state of the globe different from the present, but different only because existing causes especially heat operated then with greater energy than at present.

7. Diluvial action, since the deposition of the tertiary strata, requires for its explanation a greater intensity of action in existing geological agencies than is known at the present day. This point, however, has been so fully discussed in Section VII, that nothing more need be added here.

8. Upon the whole, with the exception of diluvial action, were we to confine our attention to the tertiary and alluvial strata, it might be possible to explain their phenomena by existing causes, operating with their present intensity. But when we examine the secondary and primary rocks, we are forced to the conclusion that this hypothesis is inadequate: and that we must admit a far greater intensity in geological agencies in early times than at present.

#### *Character and Repletion of Metallic Veins.*

*Remark.* The subject of metallic veins,—one of the most difficult in

geology, although touched upon in several places in this work, has been mainly deferred to this place; because it could not be well understood without an acquaintance with nearly the whole of geology.

*Descrip.* The metallic matter, called *ore*, rarely occupies the whole of the vein: but is disseminated more less abundantly through the quartz, sulphate of baryta, wacke, granite, &c. which constitutes the greater part of the vein, and is called the *gangue, matrix* or *veinstone*. Often the ore and the gangue form alternating layers. Sometimes there are cavities, lined with crystals, which cavities are called *druses*.

*Descrip.* Metallic like other veins vary very much in width, both in a vertical and a horizontal direction. They are of unknown depth; for scarcely ever have they been exhausted downward. The deepest mine that has been worked, is that at Truttenberg in Bohemia: which has been explored to the depth of 3000 feet.

*Descrip.* In all cases metallic like other mineral veins, are filled with matter different from the rocks which they traverse. In some instances they are obviously of the same age with the containing rock, but in a majority of cases, they are fissures that have been subsequently filled. They exhibit almost every variety of dip and strike, and yet it has been thought that they very often affect an east and west direction, though frequently they run north and south and their dip usually approaches the perpendicular. These veins often ramify and diminish until they finally disappear. Their width is very various; from a mere line, up to some hundreds of feet. The metallic veins of Cornwall vary from an inch to 30 feet in width. The contents are sometimes arranged in successive and often corresponding layers on each side.

*Descrip.* The contents of metalliferous veins often vary in the same vein, in different rocks, through which it passes, both perpendicularly and in the direction of the vein. Its width also varies in the same manner.

*Descrip.* Metallic veins are most numerous in primary and transition rocks. No vein is worked in Great Britain above the new red sandstone. Nor are any explored of much importance, above the carboniferous limestone. In the Pyrenees, however, hematitic and spathic iron occur in transition strata, in the lias, and the chalk. In the Cordilleras of Chili, also, tertiary strata, which have become crystalline by the proximity of granite, are traversed by true metallic veins of iron, copper, arsenic, silver, and gold, which proceed from the underlying granite.

*Descrip.* As a general fact, metallic veins are most produc-

Fig. 109.



tive near the junction of stratified and unstratified rocks. Their productiveness depends also, on their direction, in some measure: an east and west direction being regarded as the most favorable in Cornwall; while the *cross courses*, or north and south veins, are usually unproductive.

Fig. 109, is a section of tin and copper veins near Redruth in Cornwall. They generally pass from the killas, or slate, into the granite beneath. The section reaches to the depth of 1200 feet. The dotted lines represent the tin lodes, (veins) and the continuous lines, the copper lodes.

*Theories to explain the Repletion of Veins in General.*

1. Werner supposed that veins were fissures filled by aqueous infiltration from above. But it is probable that this hypothesis will apply to scarcely a single example of all the varieties of veins.

2. Hutton supposed that veins were filled by melted matter injected from beneath. And the facts that have been detailed in this work, make it almost certain, that a large part of the veins, filled by unstratified rock, were thus produced. Indeed, it is often practicable to trace these veins to the central mass from which they proceeded, and to follow them at the other extremity, as they thin off and are lost. It is almost equally certain that many metallic veins were thus produced.

3. Prof. Sedgwick supposes some veins to have been produced by chemical segregation from the rock in which they occur, while that was in a yielding state; just as the nodules of flint were segregated from chalk, or crystals of simple minerals from the rocks in which they are now found imbedded. That many veins were produced in this manner can hardly be doubted: for sometimes we find them passing by insensible gradation into the including rock, and thus

showing that they are of contemporaneous origin, with the rock, while both were in a fluid state. In such cases chemical segregation is the only known principle by which the veins could have been formed.

4. Mr. Fox and M. Becquerel refer the origin of many metallic veins to electro-chemical agencies, which are operating at the present day, to transfer the contents of veins even from the solid rocks, in which they are disseminated, into fissures in the same. The former of these gentlemen has shown conclusively, that the materials of metallic veins, arranged as they are in the earth, are capable of exerting a feeble electro-magnetic influence: that is, they constitute galvanic circuits, whereby numerous decompositions and recompositions, and a transfer of elements to a considerable distance, may be effected. He was induced to commence experiments on this subject, by the analogy which he perceived between the arrangements of mineral veins and voltaic combinations. And he thinks if such an agency be admitted in the earth, it shows why metallic veins, having a nearly east and west direction, are richer in ore than others; since electro-magnetic currents would more readily pass in an east and west than in a north and south direction, in consequence of the magnetism of the earth. M. Becquerel has shown, that even insoluble metallic compounds may be produced by the slow and long continued reaction and transference of the elements of soluble compounds by galvanic action. He has also made an important practical application of these principles, which is said to be in successful operation in France: whereby the ores of silver, lead, and copper, are reduced without the use of mercury. (*Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, 2d, Edition, p. 552, and 615, Vol. 1. and p. 108, Vol. 2.) This ingenious theory bids fair to solve many perplexing enigmas relating to metallic veins; and to prove that some of them may even now be in a course of formation.

5. M. Neckar and Dr. Buckland suggest, that some mineral veins may have been filled by the sublimation of their contents into fissures and cavities of the superincumbent rocks, by means of intensely heated mineral matter beneath. Thus, it has been shown that by heating galena in a tube, and causing its vapor to unite with that of water, a new deposition of that mineral was produced in the upper part of the tube; and in a similar manner boracic acid, which by itself does not sublime, may be carried upwards and deposited anew. *Buckland's Bridgwater Treatise*, Vol. 1, p. 551. *Phillips' Geology*, p. 273.

*Conclusion.* Probably it will be necessary to call in the aid of nearly all the preceding hypotheses to explain the complicated phenomena of mineral veins.

For accurate accounts of this difficult subject see *Phillips' Treatise on Geology*, Vol. 2, Chapter VIII: Also, *De La Beche's Geological Report on Cornwall and Devon*, Chapter X.

## SECTION IX.

### CONNECTION BETWEEN GEOLOGY AND NATURAL AND REVEALED RELIGION.

#### 1. *Illustrations of Natural Religion from Geology.*

*Remark.* The bearing of geology upon religion, has always excited a good deal of interest and of discussion: and being in some respects peculiar and important, a treatise on geology, which omits this subject, must be considered as deficient.

*Prin.* Geology shows us that the existing system of things upon the globe had a beginning.

*Proof.* 1. Existing continents have been raised from the bottom of the sea, where most of their surface was formed by deposition. 2. with a few exceptions, the existing races of animals and plants must have been created since the deposition of all the rocks except the diluvial; since their remains do not occur in the older rocks. Hence it appears that not only the present races of organic beings, but the land which they inhabit, are of comparatively modern production.

*Inference.* 1. Hence it is inferred that the existing races of animals and plants must have resulted from the creative energy of the Supreme Being: for even if we admit that existing continents might have been brought into their present state by natural causes, the creation of an almost entirely new system of organic beings, could have resulted only from an exertion of an infinitely wise and powerful Being. Indeed, the bestowment of life must be regarded as the highest act of omnipotence.

*Inf.* 2. Hence the doctrine which maintains that the operations of nature have proceeded eternally as they now do, and that it is unnecessary to call in the agency of the Deity to explain natural phenomena, is shown to be erroneous.

*Inf.* 3. The preceding inferences being admitted, natural Theology need not labor to disprove the eternity of matter; since its eternal duration might be admitted, without affecting any important doctrine. See Chalmers Works, Vol. 1, on Natural Theology; where this subject is admirably treated.

*Prin.* Several different systems of organic life have appeared on the globe, adapted to its varying conditions, as to temperature, moisture, food, and other circumstances. In the opinion of many geologists, also, numerous changes took place on the globe previous to the creation of animals and plants; all of which tended to prepare it for their dwelling place.

*Inference.* 1. Hence it appears that the Deity has always exercised over the globe a superintending Providence; and whenever it was necessary, has interfered with the regular sequence of events.

*Inf.* 2. A presumption is also hence obtained, that the matter of the globe had a beginning: or at least, all presumption against its creation out of nothing, is taken away: For there must have been a commencement to a series of changes in which there is continued improvement; (such as the globe has actually experienced) and it is a priori as probable, that at the beginning of these changes, matter was called into existence, as that at successive periods new races of animals and plants were created.

*Prin.* In all the conditions of the globe from the earliest times, and in the structure of all the organic beings that have successively peopled it, we find the same marks of wise and benevolent adaptation, as in existing races; and a perfect unity of design extending through every period of the world's history.

*Proof.* 1. The anatomical structure of animals and plants was very different at different epochs: but in all cases the change was fitted to adapt the species more perfectly to its peculiar condition. 2. To communicate the greatest aggregate amount of happiness, is a leading object in the arrangements of the present system of nature: and it is clear from geology, that this was the leading object in all previous systems. 3. The existence of carnivorous races among existing tribes of animals tends to increase the aggregate of enjoyment, first, by the happiness which those races themselves enjoy; secondly, by the great reduction of the suffering which disease and gradual decay would produce, were they not prevented by sudden death: and thirdly, by preventing any of the races from such an excessive multiplication as would exhaust their supply of food, and thus produce great suffering. Now we find that carnivorous races always existed on the globe; showing a perfect unity of design in this respect. Thus when the chambered shells, so abundant in the secondary rocks, and which were carnivorous, became extinct at the commencement of the tertiary epoch, numerous univalve molluscs were created, which were carniv-

orous: although till that time these races had been herbivorous.

*Inference.* From these statements we infer the absolute perfection, and especially the immutable wisdom of the Divine character. A minute examination of the works of creation as they now exist, discloses the infinite perfection of its Author, when they were brought into existence: and geology proves Him to have been unchangably the same, through the vast periods of past duration, which that science shows to have elapsed since the original formation of the matter of our earth.

*Rem.* The whole of this subject is admirably developed in the late splendid Bridgewater Treatise, by Dr. Buckland.

*Prin.* Geology furnishes many peculiar proofs of the benevolence of the Deity. The following are the most striking.

### 1. *The formation of Soils by the decomposition of Rocks.*

*Illustration.* The disintegration of rocks, which we every where witness, strikes the mind at first as an exhibition of decay, indicating some defect of contrivance on the part of the Deity. But when we find that the soils resulting from this decomposition are exactly adapted to the growth of plants, and that these are essential to the existence of animals, we can no longer doubt but we have before us a bright exhibition of benevolent design.

### 2. *The disturbances that have taken place in the earth's crust.*

*Illus.* To a person not familiar with Geology, the elevation, disruption, contortion, and overturnings, exhibited by the rocks, present a scene of confusion and chaos rather than proofs of benevolent design. But suppose the strata had remained horizontal, as first deposited. Nearly all the beds of valuable rocks and minerals must have been hidden from human view, and rendered inaccessible. But the disturbances experienced by these strata have brought them within the reach of human industry. Design then is manifest in this apparent confusion.

### 3. *The formation of Vallies.*

*Illus.* In mountainous countries these have resulted mainly from the elevation and dislocation of the strata. They have, however, been greatly modified and rendered beautiful and arable, by means of atmospheric and aqueous agencies; and to these latter causes most of the vallies in level countries owe

their origin. Now without vallies, the earth would be uninhabitable; because there could be no circulation of water, and stagnation and death would pervade all nature, even if we admit enough of inequality to redeem a part of the earth from the ocean.

#### 4. *The distribution of Water.*

*Illus.* We might at first suppose, that in mountainous regions, all the water would soon be accumulated in the valleys. Whereas such are the nature and situation of the soil and rocks, that the ridges are usually as well watered as the valleys. The alternations of pervious with impervious strata form natural reservoirs of water in the earth, and those dislocations of the strata, termed faults, tend to render these reservoirs still more perfect, while the fact that springs occur in almost every part of the earth, show that enough communications exist to the surface to allow of the passage of sufficient water for the support of animals and vegetables. These springs, uniting into rivers, find their way into the ocean; where an equal quantity of water is evaporated, and brought back by clouds into the regions where this perpetual drain is going on. Thus a constant circulation is kept up; while the hydraulic arrangements of the earth's crust are such as to keep a constant supply in all those places where it is needed. Surely here is benevolent design: and design too brought about by apparent disorder and confusion.

#### 5. *The distribution of Metallic Ores.*

*Illus.* If the earth has been in a state of fusion, we should expect that the metals, being generally heavier than other minerals, would have accumulated at the center, and have disappeared from the earth's crust. But by means of sublimation, segregation, and other agencies, enough of these metals has been brought so near the surface as to be accessible to man. Yet they are not so abundant, nor so easily obtained, as not to demand patient industry and ingenuity, whose exercise is indispensable to human improvement and happiness. Again, the most important of these metallic ores—iron, lead, copper, &c. are most abundantly distributed and most easily obtained.

#### 6. *Diluvial Agency.*

*Illus.* The effect of those powerful currents of water, that have swept over large portions of the earth's surface in past

times, has been to wear down its more rocky and salient parts, to convert steep escarpments into gentle slopes, and to increase the quantity of soil, and spread it more extensively over the surface. Hence, though at first a desolating agency, its ultimate effect is most salutary.

7. *Volcanic Agency.*

*Illus.* It operates, in the first place, as a safety valve, to prevent those vast accumulations of heat which exist in the earth, from rending whole continents in pieces: in the second place, it aids in arising continents from the ocean and in the formation of vallies.

*Objection.* Why should not a Benevolent Being, who is omnipotent, secure to his creatures the benefits which result from diluvial and volcanic agency, without the attendant evils, such as the destruction of property and life?

*Answer.* This is a question that meets the student of natural theology at almost every step of his progress: for we find almost universally, that evils are incident to operations whose natural tendency and general effect are beneficial. Probably it is so, because a greater amount of good can thereby be secured in the end. But the existence of evil is one of those difficult subjects, whose complete elucidation ought not to be expected in this world.

8. *The accumulation of extensive deposits of coal, rock salt, gypsum, marble, and other valuable minerals, for the use of man, during the long periods that preceded his existence.*

*Illus.* While the earth was in a state unfit for the animals and plants now existing upon it, it was covered with a gigantic vegetation, whose relics became entombed, and were gradually converted into those beds of coal, which are now in the course of disinterment, and which are so important to human improvement and happiness. Then also, rock salt, gypsum, and marble, were slowly preparing for the service of beings to be created centuries afterwards. Can there be a doubt but this is a beautiful example of the prospective benevolence of the Deity?

9. *The adaptation of the natures of different groups of animals to the varying condition of the globe.*

*Illus.* The Deity intended the world ultimately to become the residence of intellectual and moral beings: but for wise reasons

he chose to bring it by slow processes of change into a fit condition for their residence. Yet his overflowing benevolence prompted Him to people the world, during this transition state, with animals whose natures were perfectly adapted to its condition. And as often as that condition changed, did he change its inhabitants and their constitution. He might have left it desolate during these mighty periods of preparation. But infinite benevolence would not permit.

*Prin.* Geology enlarges our conceptions of the plans of the Deity.

*Example.* 1. The prevailing opinion, until recently, limits the duration of the globe to man's brief existence, which extends backward and forward only a few thousand years. But geology teaches us that this is only one of the units of a long series in its history. It develops a plan of the Deity respecting its preparation and use, grand in its outlines, and beautiful in its execution; reaching far back into past eternity, and looking forwards, perhaps indefinitely, into the future.

2. Each successive change in the condition of the earth thus far, appears to have been an improved condition: that is, better adapted for natures more and more perfect and complicated. In its earliest habitable state, its soil must have been scanty and sterile, and almost destitute of calcareous matter. The surface also, was but little elevated above the waters; and of course the atmosphere must have been very damp; though the temperature was very high. Every subsequent change appears to have increased the quantity and fertility of the soil, the amount of the salts of lime and saline, and the dryness of the atmosphere. Should another change occur, similar to those through which it has already passed, we might expect the continents to be more fertile and capable of supporting a denser population.

3. It appears that one of the grand means by which the plans of the Deity in respect to the material world are accomplished, is constant change; partly mechanical, but chiefly chemical. In every part of our globe, on its surface, in its crust, and we have reason to suppose, even in its deep interior, these changes are in constant progress: and were they not, universal stagnation and death would be the result. We have reason to suspect also, that changes analogous to those which the earth has undergone, or is now undergoing, are taking place in other worlds; in the comets, the sun, the fixed stars, and the planets. In short, geology has given us a glimpse of a great principle of *instability*, by which the *stability* of the universe is secured; and at the same time, all those movements

and revolutions in the forms of matter essential to the existence of organic nature, are produced. Formerly the examples of decay so common everywhere, were regarded as defects in nature: But they now appear to be an indication of wise and benevolent design:—a part of the vast plans of the Deity for securing the stability and happiness of the universe.

## 2. Connection of Geology with Revealed Religion.

*Prin.* Revelation does not attempt to give instruction in the principles of science: nor does it use the precise and accurate language of science: but the more indefinite language of common life. Nor does science attempt to teach the peculiar truths contained in revelation.

*Inf. 1.* Hence it is only where revelation incidently touches upon the same points as science, that the two subjects can be brought into comparison.

*Inf. 2.* Hence there may be *apparent* discrepancy between the two subjects, when there is *real* agreement, on account of a difference in the language employed: ex. gr.: the bible apparently contradicts astronomy, when it asserts that the earth is immovable, and that the sun rises and sets: But that here is no real disagreement, is too obvious to require proof.

*Inf. 3.* Hence it is reasonable to expect, only that the principles of science, rightly understood, should not contradict the statements of revelation, rightly interpreted. Unexpected coincidences, however, may occur between the two subjects; and these will tend to strengthen our belief in the truth of both.

*Inf. 4.* Hence the points of apparent discrepancy ought to be more numerous than the points of agreement between science and revelation, in order to prove a real contradiction between them: For it is as difficult to explain an apparent agreement, where there is real discrepancy, as the reverse.

## Points of Coincidence between Geology and Revelation.

1. They agree in representing our present continents as formerly covered by the ocean.

*Proof.* That they were thus submerged, is one of the best settled principles of geology; and that revelation teaches the same, appears from Genesis, L: 1, 9.

2. They agree as to the agents employed to produce geological changes on the globe: viz. water and heat.

*Proof.* Water is the only agent directly named in Genesis: and the elevation of the land is imputed directly to the exertion

of Omnipotence. But in *Psalm 104. 2. 4 to 7*, where this operation seems to be described, *the voice of God's thunder*, there represented as the agent, may reasonably be understood to refer to volcanic agency. This same agency is represented as having destroyed the cities of the plain, according to Dr. Henderson's translation of *Job 22, v. 15 to 20*. A future change in the earth, is also described as resulting from fire. *2d Peter 3 : 10. See Turner's Sacred History of the World, p. 24, 25.*

3. They agree in representing the work of creation as progressive, after the first production of the matter of the universe. *Genesis, First Chapter.*

4. They agree in the fact that man was among the latest of the animals created to inhabit the globe.

*Remark.* This is a very important point. For had the remains of man been found among the earliest organic relics, while the bible represents him as the last animal created, it would have been difficult to see how the two records could be reconciled.

5. They agree in the fact, that the period when the existing races of animals and plants were placed upon the globe, was comparatively recent.

*Proof.* According to revelation, this period could not have been more than 6000 years ago: and although we cannot as yet connect geological and chronological time, there are facts which prove that the commencement of the present order of things, and of the existing races of animals and plants, cannot have been very remote. Their remains occur only in alluvial deposits. Now the quantity of alluvium at the mouths of rivers, although often advancing rapidly, is yet comparatively limited. The accumulation of fragments at the base of steep rocky precipices, is still in most cases going on: as is also the formation of peat. But had these processes commenced at an immeasurably remote period, they ought ere this to be completed. Wide oceans ought to be converted into alluvial plains, precipices should all be levelled, and peat swamps be so filled that the process of its formation would stop.

6. The facts of geology render the future destruction of the earth by fire, a not improbable event.

*Proof.* Nearly all geologists admit that the earth contains vast reservoirs of heat; and if these are brought into action by the fiat of the Almighty, *the elements might be melted and the earth and the things therein be burned up.* Or it is even easy to conceive how this internal heat, without miraculous interference, might, under certain circumstances, produce the same result.

7. It has been usual to regard the last geological deluge as identical with that of Noah, and as furnishing a striking exam-  
23\*

ple of coincidence between geology and revelation. But in another place it has been shown, that this identity cannot probably be made out: And hence we can only say, that the frequent occurrence of geological deluges, furnishes a presumption in favor of the occurrence of such a deluge as is described in the Scriptures, and found in the traditions of all nations.

*Supposed Discrepancy between Geology and Revelation.*

*Descrip.* The supposed discrepancies between geology and revelation, relate first, to the age of the world, and secondly to the period when death was introduced upon the globe.

*Descrip.* Geologists suppose that the changes which have taken place on the globe, must have occupied immense periods of time; and that several successive systems of animals and plants inhabited the world previous to the creation of the existing races: whereas the Mosaic account, according to the common interpretation, represents the matter of the globe to have been produced out of nothing, only a few literal days previous to the creation of man; and that all the animals and plants that ever lived on the globe, were then brought into existence.

*Remark.* I am not aware that this statement has ever been formally adduced by any geological writer in opposition to revelation: But geologists having come to the conclusion that the earth, in some form, must have existed more than 6000 years, some Christian writers have inferred that this was opposed to the Mosaic account, and have attempted a defence of revelation. And hence has resulted the prevailing opinion, that geologists in general, have been hostile to the bible—an opinion which may be refuted by an appeal to their writings.

*Prin.* In order to obviate this objection to revelation, it is only necessary to show, that one or more modes exist, of reconciling the apparent discrepancy, which it would be more reasonable to adopt than to infer any real collision between the two records. Some of these modes of explanation will now be briefly described.

1. Some theological (but no geological) writers maintain, that the fossiliferous rocks were not the result of slow deposition and consolidation: but were created at once, with all their organic contents, just as we now find them.

*Refutation.* This is admitted to be possible; because God's power is infinite. But our only ground for judging as to the cause of any natural changes, is analogy:—and this is entirely opposed to the idea that rocks were thus produced; and every example that can be quoted of rocks in a course of formation, is in favor of their slow formation by second causes.

2. Some maintain that the fossiliferous rocks were deposited by the deluge of Noah.

*Refutation.* 1. That deluge must have been for the most part violent and tumultuous in its action on the globe: for the ocean must have flowed over the land in strong currents; and when it retired, urged on as it was by a wind, similar currents must have prevailed. But a large proportion of the rocks were evidently deposited in quiet waters. 2. If deposited by that deluge, the materials and entombed organic remains of the rocks ought to be confusedly mingled together; whereas in both these respects they are actually arranged with great regularity into groups. 3. The period occupied by the Noachian deluge was vastly too short for the deposition of rocks five or six miles in thickness, and with a great number of entire and distinct changes in their nature and organic contents. 4. The organic remains in the rocks do not correspond to the animals and plants now living on the globe. But this deluge took place since the creation of the present races; and, therefore, by this hypothesis, they ought to be found in the rocks. Hence they were deposited before that event.

*Remark.* An apology is due to the geological reader, for introducing a formal refutation of an hypothesis, which, to him, appears so entirely absurd. The apology consists in the fact, that many intelligent men are still found maintaining this hypothesis.

3. Some suppose the fossiliferous strata to have been deposited in the interval of 1600 years between the creation of man and the deluge.

*Refutation.* 1. The time since the deluge has been twice as long as 1600 years: But the amount of alluvia deposited has not been one thousandth part as great as the whole fossiliferous rocks. Hence 1600 years is vastly too short a period for their deposition: Since no reason can be given why the process of their formation was essentially more rapid before than after the deluge. 2. By this hypothesis the sea and land must have changed places at the deluge; in order to bring the fossiliferous rocks from the bottom of the sea. But geology renders it extremely probable that no interchange of this sort took place so recently. 3. On this hypothesis the organic remains ought to consist of species of the existing races, with man among the number: unless we suppose that several new and distinct creations of animals and plants have taken place on the globe since man was placed upon it, none of which are mentioned by Moses. 4. There is the strongest evidence that the primary as well as the fossiliferous rocks, have resulted from secondary agencies: that is, they have existed in some previous form, before assuming their present state. But these changes could not

have taken place after the creation and multiplication of man ; because to take away the primary rocks is to take away all *terra firma* on which he could have subsisted.

4. Some regard the six days of creation, (called the *demiurgic days*) in the Mosaic account as not literal days of 24 hours, but periods of indefinite or unequal length, or as the representatives of indefinite periods.

*Remark.* Three varieties of opinions are embraced in this theory, as above stated. 1. The more common supposition is, that the term day is here to be understood figuratively, as embracing a long period of time : a mode of using the term, that is frequent in all languages. 2. Some, as Bishop Horsley and Professor Jameson, suggest that the revolution of the earth on its axis was at first "inconceivably slow," and that it did not acquire its present rate till the close of the fourth day ; so that the four first days may have been of vast duration. (*Philosophical Magazine*, Vol. 47. p. 243 : also Vol. 46. p. 227.) Still more recently this theory has been ably elucidated by Dr. Keith in his *Demonstration of the Truth of Christianity*, p. 127 *First American Edition*, 1839.) 3. Others, as Hensler in Germany, and Professor Bush in this country, suppose that each of the six demiurgic days stands as the closing day, or representative, of an indefinite number of days, which make up six periods of unknown and perhaps unequal length : during which geological processes might have been going on. (*American Biblical Repository*, Vol. 6. p. 297. *Bush's Questions and notes upon the Book of Genesis*, *Second Edition*.)

#### *Arguments in favor of this Theory.*

1. The word day is often used in Scripture to express a period of indefinite length, Ex. gr. Luke 17. 24.—John 8. 56. Job. 14. 6. &c. 2. The sun moon and stars were not created till the fourth day ; so that the revolution of the earth on its axis in 24 hours did not probably exist before that time ; and some other measure of time must have been adopted, which Moses tells us was light and darkness : and how often these succeeded one another, is not revealed ; and therefore is unknown. 3. The seventh day, or the sabbath, has not yet terminated ; and will not, until God shall resume the work of creation ; that is, it will continue from the beginning to the destruction of the world, and there is no reason why we ought not to regard the other demiurgic days as of at least equal length. 4. In order to reconcile the declarations of scripture with the discoveries of astronomy, it is necessary to depart as much from the literal meaning as this interpretation demands. 5. This interpretation corresponds remarkably with the traditional cosmogonies of many heathen nations ; as the ancient Etruscans, and the Hindoos, who describe the demiurgic days as immense periods. 6. This theory is thought by Professor

Jameson and others to develope a striking coincidence between the epochs of creation as described by Moses and by geologists. (*Bakewell's Geology*, p. 450.)

*Objections.* 1. There is no evidence that the word day is used figuratively in the first chapter of Genesis, as it is in all other places in scripture where it means an indefinite period, except perhaps Gen. 2. 4. On the contrary, the Mosaic description of the creation appears to be a very simple and perfectly literal history, adapted for the most uncultivated minds. 2. In the fourth commandment (Exodus 20:—9. 10. 11.) no one can doubt but the six days of labor and the Sabbath, spoken of in the 9, and 10, verses, are literal days. By what principle of interpreting language, can the same word in the next verse, where the creation is described, be understood to mean indefinite periods? See a parallel passage, Exodus, 31. 17. 3. It seems from Genesis 2. 5, compared with Gen. 1. 11, 12, that it had not rained on the earth till the third day. If the days were only of 24 hours, this would be very probable, but altogether absurd, if they were long periods. 4. Such a meaning is forced and unnatural; and therefore not to be adopted without a very urgent necessity. 5. By this theory, existing species of animals and plants ought to be found mixed with the extinct species in all the fossiliferous rocks, for Moses describes only one creation of the different races. Now the fact that they are not thus mixed, shows that they could not have been contemporaries. If then the Mosaic account includes the fossil species, it does not include the living species, and if it embraces the latter, it cannot comprehend the former. It is hence inferred, that the Mosaic account embraces only existing races, and if this be admitted, there is no necessity of supposing the demiurgic days to be longer than literal ones. 6. If this theory be admitted, instead of exhibiting coincidence between the Mosaic and the geological account of the epochs of creation, it produces between them manifest discrepancy. For Moses describes vegetables to have been created on the third day, but animals not until the fifth. Hence about one third of the fossiliferous rocks, reckoning upwards, or those deposited during the first three days, ought to contain only vegetables. Whereas animals are found as deep in the rocks as vegetables: nay, in the lowest group, nothing but animals has yet been found. 7. The conclusion from all these statements, is, that Moses does not describe the fossil but only the existing races of animals and plants; and if so, there is no necessity for an extension of his demiurgic days into long periods, in order to reconcile his account with Geology.

*Remark.* For a fuller examination of the preceding theory, See Faber's *Treatise on the Patriarchal, Levitical and Christian Dispensations*, *De Lu's Letters on the Physical History of the Earth: Bakewell's Geology 2d. American Ed. p. 439*, and the *American Biblical Repository* for October 1835. It ought perhaps to be remarked, that Faber, who had advocated this theory with great ability, has recently given it up. *Buckland's Bridgewater Treatise, Vol. 1. p. 597. 2d. Ed. 1837.*

5. Some suppose that the Mosaic account is a pictorial representation of the successive production of the different parts of creation, having truth for its foundation, yet not to be regarded as literally and exactly true. The terms employed, however, are to be understood in their literal sense.

*Illustration.* Conceive of six separate pictures, showing the work in different stages of its progress. "And as the performance of the painter, (says Dr. Knapp) though it must have natural truth for its foundation, must not be considered or judged of as a delineation of mathematical or scientific accuracy: so neither must this pictorial representation of the creation be regarded as literally and exactly true." *Knapp's Theology, Vol. 1. p. 364.*

*Inference.* Whether this interpretation of the Mosaic account be admissible, is a question of mere philology and cannot be discussed in this place: but admitting its correctness, it affords a solution for the apparent disrepancy between geology and revelation: For when it is conceded that the earth may have existed a longer time than the usual interpretation of the Mosaic account allows, there is no reason why the time may not be indefinitely extended; which is all that geology requires.

6. The theory of interpretation which is now the most extensively adopted among geologists, supposes that Moses merely states that God created the world in the beginning, without fixing the date of that beginning; and that passing in silence an unknown period of its history, during which the extinct animals and plants found in the rocks might have lived and died, he describes only the present creation, which took place in six literal days, less than 6000 years ago.

*Arguments in favor of this theory with objections against it.*

1. It is maintained by some able writers, such as Dathe, Doederlin, &c. in Germany, Milton in England, and Prof. Bush in this country, that the language employed by Moses in the first chapter of Genesis, does not mean a creation of the world out of nothing; but only a renovation, or re-modelling of previously existing materials. (*Penteteuchus a Dathio, p. 8. Doederlinii Theologia, p. 485. Bush's Questions and Notes on Genesis.*) Such writers of course admit the existence of the globe during an indefinite period before the six demiurgic days. The arguments for their opinions may be found in their works above referred to. *See also American Biblical Repository, Oct. 1835, p. 280.* 2. The phrase, "in the

*beginning*, is certainly indefinite as to time, and therefore Moses in Genesis does not fix the time of the original creation, even if we admit that he does describe that event; and therefore, it is doing no violence to his language, to admit this long intervening period between the creation of the universe and of man. If it be said, that in the fourth commandment Moses does declare the creation of the world out of nothing to have been contemporaneous with the first demiurgic day, it may be replied, that when a writer describes an event more than once, his briefer description is to be explained by his more extended account: so that the fourth commandment is to be explained by the fuller description in Genesis, of the same event. 3. This view of the first chapter in Genesis has been adopted in its essence by many distinguished Christian writers, long before the existence of geology as a science: as for example, by Augustine, Theodoret, &c. in ancient times; and by Rosenmuller senior, Bishop Patrick, &c. in modern times. 4. If such an interval be admitted, it is sufficient entirely to reconcile the scriptural and geological accounts: because, during that period, all the fossiliferous rocks except the alluvial, might have been formed. 5. Astronomy shows us that probably other worlds are now undergoing slowly the process of preparation for habitable globes, in a manner analogous to that which is supposed to have taken place in the materials of the earth, anterior to the demiurgic days. And thus we obtain a glimpse of a general principle in the universe. 6. If it be objected that according to Moses, the sun, moon and stars were not created till the fourth day; it may be replied that a more just interpretation of his language shows his meaning to be, not that the heavenly bodies were created on the fourth day, but that they were then first appointed to serve their present offices; and that they might have been in existence through countless ages.

7. In his late able and most interesting work, *On the Relation between the Holy Scriptures and some parts of geological Science*, Dr. John Pye Smith, who is at the head of a Theological Institution in England, and who is distinguished for his knowledge of theology, biblical philology and geology, has proposed such an addition to the interpretation of Genesis just explained as in fact to form a new method of reconciling geology and revelation. His principal positions are the following. 1. The first verse of Genesis describes the creation of the matter of the whole universe, probably in the state of mere elements, at some indefinite epoch in past eternity. 2. The term earth, as used in the subsequent verses of Genesis describing the work of six days, was "designed to express the part of our world which God

was adapting for the dwelling of man and the animals connected with him." 3. "The narrative of the six days work is " a description in expressions adapted to the ideas and capacities of mankind in the earliest ages, of a series of operations, by which the Being of omnipotent wisdom and goodness adjusted and finished not the earth generally, but as the particular subject under consideration here, a PORTION of its surface for most glorious purposes. This portion of the earth I conceive to have been a large part of Asia lying between the Caucasian ridge, the Caspian Sea, and Tartary, on the north, the Persian and Indian Seas on the south, and the high mountain ridges which run, at considerable distances, on the eastern and western flank." (p. 285, *Lond. Ed.*) 3. "This region was first by atmospheric and geological causes of previous operation under the will of the Almighty, brought into a condition of superficial ruin, or some kind of general disorder." Probably by volcanic agency it was subinerged, covered with fogs and clouds, and subsequently elevated and the atmosphere by the fourth day rendered pellucid. 4. The sun moon and stars were not created on the fourth day: but then "made, constituted, or appointed, to be luminaries." 5. The Noachian deluge was limited to that part of the world occupied by the human race, and therefore we ought not to expect that any traces of it on the globe can now be distinguished from those of previous and analogous deluges.

*Rem.* It is impossible in this place to present even a summary of the powerful reasoning and accurate erudition by which Dr. Smith sustains the above positions in his Lectures. The evidence in favor of several of them has already been exhibited: and I shall merely state the two leading principles by which he supports what is peculiar in his system.

*Proof.* 1. In the description of the Divine Character and of natural phenomena, the sacred writers use language accommodated to the knowledge that existed among the people whom they addressed, and conformed to their notions of the universe. Hence, when they wished to speak of the universe to the Jews, they called it the heavens and the earth. But when they spoke of the earth only, we are not to suppose that they used the term in an astronomical sense, but to designate that limited part of it which was inhabited. For this was all the idea which the mind of the Jew attached to it; since he knew nothing of the earth beyond those limits. Hence the six days work of creation may have been limited to a small part of the earth's actual surface. 2. This view corresponds to the fact that there appear to have been numerous centers of creation; both of animals and plants, instead of one spot from which all proceeded. 3. Also with the fact that a considerable number of species of animals and plants, which were created much earlier than man, as their

remains in the tertiary strata show—still survive and do not appear to have perished since their first creation. 4. Universal terms are often used (in Scripture) to signify only a very large amount in number or quantity: As for instance, *all the earth came to Egypt to buy from Joseph: for the famine was extreme in all the earth.* Hence the terms descriptive of the deluge may not have literally embraced the whole earth; but have included only the earth then inhabited.

8. Some contend, that even if all the methods of reconciling the two records that have been described, should be regarded by any as unsatisfactory, it would be premature, in the present state of geology and of sacred philology, to infer any real discrepancy between them: and especially to infer that the sacred historian is in error.

*Proof.* 1. Because the rapid progress of geological discovery, and the not unfrequent changes of opinion among geologists on important points, show us that possibly more light may yet come from that quarter. 2. Because the exegesis of the first chapter of Genesis cannot by any means be regarded as settled: in proof of which, it is only necessary to refer to the great diversity of opinion, on many parts of this chapter, yet to be found among very able commentators. Hence we may hope for new light from this quarter. 3. Other apparent discrepancies between science and revelation, even more striking than that above examined between geology and revelation, have disappeared when the subjects were better understood. For instance, the doctrine introduced by the astronomers 200 years ago, that the earth revolves on its axis, and that the heavenly bodies do not actually rise and set, seemed to the most acute and learned theologians of those times, to be in *point blank* opposition to the bible; which declares, that *the sun also ariseth and goeth down; and that God laid the foundation of the earth that it should not be removed forever.* They also *felt* the earth to be at rest; and *saw* the heavens in motion; so that this new doctrine of the Copernican system was opposed, not only to the bible, but to the senses. Yet who now suspects any collision between astronomy and revelation? How premature then, to infer from a less striking apparent discrepancy between geology and the bible, that any real opposition exists!

### *Second Supposed Discrepancy.*

*Descrip.* The general interpretation of the Bible has been, that until the fall of man, death did not exist in the world even among the inferior animals. For the bible asserts that by *man*

*came death (1 Cor. 15. 21.) and by one man sin entered into the world and death by sin. (Rom. 5. 12.)* But geology teaches us that myriads of animals lived and died before the creation of man.

*Solution of the difficulty.* Admitting that geology does show that violent and painful death was in the world before the fall of man, the following suggestions furnish a plausible reconciliation of the supposed difficulty.

1. Not only geology, but zoology and comparative anatomy, teach us that death among the inferior animals did not result from the fall of man, but from the original constitution given them by their Creator. One large class of animals, the carnivorous, have organs expressly intended for destroying other classes for food. Nor will it avoid the difficulty to suppose, as some have done, (although obviously in the face of the plain meaning of the first chapter of Genesis,) that carnivorous animals were not created till the time of the deluge. For other animals must have lived on vegetables, and in doing this, they must have destroyed a multitude of minute insects, of which several species inhabit almost every species of plant. Much more difficult would it have been, to avoid destroying millions of animalculæ, which abound in many of the fluids which animals drink, and even in the air which they breathe. Still farther, throughout the whole range of organic nature, vegetable as well as animal, decay and dissolution are inevitable after a longer or a shorter period. In this respect, the human system is constituted just like all other organic natures. So that death appears to be a universal law of organic being, as it exists on earth. Moreover, without miraculous interference for protection, or an entire change of the present laws of nature, animals must have been exposed to occasional violent disorganization: as for instance, from the falling of heavy bodies upon them, or from the shock of projectiles; even though there were no tendency in their natures to dissolution. In short, death could not be excluded from the world, without an entire change in the constitution and course of nature; and such a change we have no reason to suppose, from the Mosaic account, took place when man fell. 2. But God could remove any race of animals, say man out of the world, and introduce them into another state, without violence, disease, or suffering; and make the change, in fact, like many changes in life, a pleasant one; free from those concomitants which now indeed constitute death. He has already removed a few from the world in this manner; as Enoch and Elijah, and the bible informs us that those who remain alive at the second coming of Christ, will in

a similar manner be *translated* and not die. (1 Corinth. 15: 51, 52.) This probably would have been the happy lot of all mankind, if they had not sinned. That they could not have continued on earth indefinitely, is certain: provided the present laws of their multiplication were not suspended: because the world ere long would have been filled. 3. The threatening of death to Adam for disobedience, seems to imply a knowledge on his part, of what death was, that is he had seen it among the inferior animals: for it would be a strange legislation, that imposed a penalty of which those under the law could form no idea. 4. The two most striking passages of scripture, respecting the introduction of death into the world, have been already quoted. In regard to that from Romans, 5: 12, *by one man sin entered into the world and death by sin*, the conclusion of the sentence—*and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned*—shows that its meaning must be limited to the human race. For it says, not that death passed upon all animals, but upon all men; and because all had sinned, an act of which the inferior animals, destitute of moral natures, are not capable. In like manner, the passage from 1 Corinth. 15: 21, *For since by man came death*, is limited to the human race by the concluding part of the verse: *by man came also the resurrection of the dead*. For the object here is to draw a contrast between Adam and Christ, as to their influence upon the human family. If the inferior animals are included, then they must not only share in the resurrection, but be interested in the redemption by Christ. 5. Able writers on the bible have adopted these views in regard to the nature and extent of death, long before geology was known as a science. To quote only Jeremy Taylor. "That death," say he, "which God threatened to Adam, and which passed upon his posterity, is not the going out of this world, but the manner of going. If he had stayed in innocence, he should have gone hence placidly and fairly, without vexations and afflictive circumstances, he should not have died by sickness, misfortune, defect, or unwillingness, but when he fell he began to die, &c." *Holy Dying*, p. 295. *Amherst*, Ed. 1831.

Rem. For a full and able discussion of this whole subject, see Dr. J. P. Smith's *Lectures on Scripture Geology*, p. 96, 294, and 361.

*General Inference.* It appears from the preceding statements first, that the coincidences between geology and revelation, upon points where we might reasonably expect collision, if both the records were not essentially true, are much more numerous than the apparent discrepancies: and, therefore, the presumption is, that no real disagreement exists. Secondly, it appears that there are several modes of reconciling the few apparent dis-

crepances, which, on general principles, it would be far more reasonable to adopt, than to infer any real disagreement between the two records. And this is all that sound philosophy requires.

---

## SECTION X.

### THE HISTORY OF GEOLOGY.

*Prin.* Geology is eminently an inductive science. Now it is only within the last half century, that sufficient facts had been collected to make any important correct inferences respecting the causes of geological change. Hence all the speculations of philosophers previous to that time, on this subject, must have been mere hypothesis; sometimes indeed displaying great ingenuity, and approximating closely to the truth, but more commonly, so extravagant as to be the butt of ridicule.

*Prin.* Geology is likewise dependent upon an advanced and accurate knowledge of chemistry, botany, and zoology; such a knowledge as has been attained only within the last half century. On this account also, all previous speculation on geology must have been crude and fanciful.

*Inference 1.* Hence the earlier hypotheses on cosmogony, which have been so long the subject of ridicule, ought not to be connected with the science of geology, as they have long been, to its reproach.

*Inference 2.* Hence the history of the earlier hypotheses, usually called Theories of the Earth, is of little importance in its bearing upon the science of geology; though highly amusing and instructive, as illustrating the struggles of the human mind after the truth. A brief sketch only will therefore be here given of these hypotheses.

*Descrip.* One of the most prevalent opinions among ancient philosophers, and which constituted a fundamental principle in their cosmogonies, supposes the world to have been subject to successive destructions and renovations by fire and water. The Grecian philosophers, who derived their notions from the Egyptian, denominated those catastrophes the *Cataclysm*, or deluge; and the *Ecpyrosis*, or destruction by fire. The interval between these changes was variously estimated from 120,000 to 360,000 years.

**Descrip.** Pythagoras entertained very accurate notions respecting the operation of existing causes of geological change on the globe; such as the changes of sea into dry land, and the reverse; the formation of deltas and other alluvial deposits; and the formation of islands by the action of oceanic currents. In fact, this philosopher approximated as nearly to the modern views of geologists on these subjects, as he did to those of modern astronomers respecting the heavenly bodies.

**Descrip.** We find Strabo, the geographer, explaining the manner in which fossil marine shells were brought into their situation upon the dry land, in a manner that would do no discredit to a modern geologist. He supposes them deposited originally at the bottom of the ocean, whose bed was subsequently elevated by earthquakes and volcanic agency.

**Descrip.** In modern times, after the dark ages, science began first to be revived among the Arabians. Even as early as the tenth century, some of their writers, as Avicenna and Omar, produced some works on mineralogy and geology, which were not without considerable merit.

**Descrip.** Among Christian nations, geological facts first began to excite attention in Italy, in the early part of the sixteenth century. Two questions were stated respecting organic remains: First, whether they ever belonged to living animals and plants: Secondly, if the affirmative of this question be admitted, whether the petrifaction and situation of these remains could be explained by the deluge of Noah.

**Descrip.** These questions occupied the learned world for nearly 300 years. At the commencement of the controversy in Italy, in 1517, Fracastoro maintained, in the true spirit of the geology of the present day, that fossil shells all once belonged to living animals, and that the Noachian deluge was too transient an event to explain the phenomena of their fossilization. But Mattioli regarded them as the result of the operation of a certain *materia pinguis*, or "fatty matter," fermented by heat. Fallopio, professor of Anatomy, supposes that they acquire their forms in some cases, by "the tumultuous movements of terrestrial exhalations;" and that the tusks of elephants were mere earthy concretions. Mercati conceived that their peculiar configuration was derived from the influence of the heavenly bodies; while Olivi regarded them as mere "sports of nature." Felix Plater, Professor of Anatomy at Basil, in 1517, referred the bones of an elephant, found at Lucerne, to a giant at least 19 feet high: and in England similar bones were regarded as those of the fallen angels!

**Descrip.** At the beginning of the 18th century, numerous

theologians in England, France, Germany and Italy, engaged eagerly in the controversy respecting organic remains. The point which they discussed with the greatest zeal, was the connection of fossils with the deluge of Noah. That these were all deposited by that event, was for more than a century the prevailing doctrine, which was maintained with great assurance; and a denial of it regarded as nearly equivalent to a denial of the whole Bible.

*Descrip.* The question, also, whether fossils ever had an animated existence, was discussed in England till near the close of the 17th century. In 1677, Dr. Plot attributed their origin to "a plastic virtue latent in the earth." Scheuchzer in Italy, however, in ridicule of this opinion, published a work entitled, *Querulae Piscium*; or the *Complaints of the Fishes*; in which those animals are made to remonstrate with great earnestness that they are denied an animated existence.

*Descrip.* Such discussions, however, tended to lead men to the collection of facts; and in 1678, we find Lester publishing an accurate account of British shells, to which were added the fossil species, under the name, however, of *turbinate* and *bivalve stones*. He also first proposed the construction of regular geological maps.

*Descrip.* In 1680, the distinguished mathematician Leibnitz, published his "Protogaea," in which he developed a theory of the formation of the earth, and of subsequent changes in its crust, almost exactly like that which is now so widely adopted among geologists under the name of the igneous theory.

*Descrip.* In the posthumous works of Robert Hooke, an English physician, published in 1688, are many views much in advance of his time, respecting geological changes and phenomena: especially respecting earthquakes and organic remains; which, he maintains could not have been produced by the Noachian deluge.

*Descrip.* The famous naturalist, Ray, who published in 1692, had similar views with Hooke: but he made improvements upon his predecessor; especially in describing the effects of aqueous agencies in modifying the earth's surface.

*Descrip.* In most of the theories of the earth, however, that appeared in England in the latter part of the 17th and the first part of the 18th century, a strong determination is manifested to connect geology with theology. This gave rise to what has been called the Physico-theological School of writers. In 1690, Burnet published a visionary work, entitled "The Sacred Theory of the Earth; containing an account of the Original of the Earth, and all the general changes which it hath already

undergone, or is to undergo, till the consummation of all things." This being written in an elegant style, attracted no little attention. About the same time, Woodward, a Professor in Medicine, published a theory of the earth, in which he maintained that "the whole terrestrial globe was taken to pieces and dissolved at the flood, and that the strata settled down from this promiscuous mass, as any earthy sediment, from a fluid." In 1724 his disciple, Hutchinson, came out with the first part of his "Moses' Principia," in which he attacked the theory of his master, as well as Newton's theory of gravitation: And he and his numerous followers maintained, that the Scriptures, when rightly understood, contain a perfect system of natural philosophy. This was the dogma which chiefly distinguished the Hutchinsonian, or Physico-Theological School; and its pernicious influence on the cause of religion and learning has scarcely yet ceased.

*Descrip.* The Italian Geologists, who were contemporaries of these English cosmogonists, were far more rational in their views. They devoted themselves with considerable success to an examination of geological phenomena, and rejected the visionary notions of the English. The writings of Vallisneri, Moro, Generelli, Donati, Targioni, &c. discover a good deal of industry in observation and acuteness in reasoning.

*Descrip.* In 1749, Buffon, the French naturalist, produced an elegantly written hypothesis upon the formation of earth, based chiefly upon the views of Leibnitz already explained. Some of his views gave offence to the Faculty of Theology at Paris; and he was compelled, like Galileo, to retract opinions, which at this day are maintained by geologists, with no suspicion that they contradict the scriptures.

*Descrip.* About the middle of the 18th century, some valuable works were produced by Lehman, a German mineralogist, by the botanist Gesner of Zurich, and by Michell an Englishman, on Earthquakes. About the same time, appeared the work of Catcott on the Deluge: and although of the physico-theological school, he gave some valuable facts relating to diluvial currents.

*Descrip.* Numerous other writers on geology, towards the close of the 18th century, might be named. But Pallas and Saussure were the most distinguished. The former examined the mountains of Siberia, and pointed out the order in which the rocks there occur. The latter spent most of his time in studying the nature of the Alps, and provided valuable materials for his successors.

*Descrip.* In Germany, France, and Hungary, schools have

long existed for giving instruction in the art of mining. In 1775 Werner was appointed professor in one of these institutions, at Freyberg, in Saxony: and in his lectures he attempted certain generalizations, in regard to the position and origin of rocks, that were very extensively adopted, and for a long time excited much controversy. He supposes that all rocks, the unstratified as well as the stratified, were deposited by water; and that originally every formation was universal on the globe: and that veins were filled by matter introduced from above, in aqueous solution. On account of his referring all deposits to the agency of water, his views were denominated the Neptunian Theory.

*Descrip.* Nearly at the same time, a Scotch geologist by the name of Hutton, published a Theory of the Earth, opposed in most respects to the doctrines of Werner. He supposes that the rocks which form our present continents were derived from the ruins of former continents: which were abraded and carried into the sea by the agency of running water; just as the same agency is now spreading over the bottom of the ocean, deposits of mud, sand, and gravel. Afterwards the unstratified rocks, in a melted state were protruded through these deposits, by which they were consolidated, rendered more or less crystalline, and elevated into their present condition. Many of the fissures also, were filled with metallic and other matter, injected from beneath. When our present continents are nearly all worn down, Hutton supposes this process of consolidation and elevation may be repeated. Indeed, in these changes he sees "no traces of a beginning, no prospect of an end." Professor Playfair, however, in his illustration of this theory, endeavors to show that Hutton did not mean by such language that the world is eternal: but only that geology, like astronomy, does not disclose to us the time when this series of changes commenced.

*Descrip.* These rival hypotheses excited a great deal of discussion, both on the European continent and in England, for a great number of years. The final result is, that the theory of Werner has been almost universally abandoned; especially so far as the unstratified rocks are concerned; while that of Hutton, denominated also the Plutonian theory, has, in its essential principles, been adopted by most geologists of the present day.

*Descrip.* During these discussions between the Neptunists and the Plutonists, a humble individual in England, Mr. William Smith, was accomplishing more for geology than all its learned professors. He explored the whole of England on foot; and in 1790, published a "Tabular View of the British Strata,"

in which he classified the secondary rocks: and although not acquainted with Werner's arrangement, he proposed essentially the same order of superposition among the rocks as that geologist. He also ascertained that strata, somewhat remote from one another, could be identified by their organic remains. By extraordinary perseverance, he was able, in 1815, to publish a geological map of the whole of England.

*Descrip.* One important effect of excessive theorizing, was to produce an almost universal scepticism in unprejudiced philosophical minds in respect to all geological hypotheses; and to make them feel the importance of amassing facts. Out of these feelings grew the London Geological Society, which was founded in 1807; and which has contributed more than any other public institution, to advance the science. This Society selected a sentence for their motto, from the *Novum Organum* of Lord Bacon, which invites "those to join them as the true sons of science, who have a desire, and a determination, not so much to adhere to things already discoverd, and to use them, as to push forward to farther discoveries; and to conquer nature, not by disputing an adversary, but by labor; and who, finally, do not indulge in beautiful and probable speculation, but endeavor to attain certainty in their knowledge."

*Descrip.* The example thus set in England, has been followed in nearly every part of the civilized world; and geological societies, both local and national, have been formed in so great numbers, that even their names cannot here be given. The London Geological Society has already produced eight quarto volumes of transactions. Many of the ablest philosophers of the age have devoted themselves to geological researches: and have applied the principles of induction with great success: so that probably no other science has made so rapid advances within the last half century, as geology. Very numerous geological collections have been formed in almost every part of the civilized world: accurate geological maps have been constructed, of nearly all Europe: and much interest is felt in the subject among all classes of the community.

*Descrip.* The rapid progress of the collateral branches of science, and their successful application to palaeontology, are to be regarded as among the most important means by which geology has been thus rapidly advanced. The most important application of this sort, was that of Comparative Anatomy, to determine the character of organic remains by the Baron Cuvier, in his great work entitled, *Ossemens Fossiles, &c.* in 7 quarto volumes; first published in 1812. Numerous successful applications have also been made of the discoveries in the

various departments of zoology and botany, to the same object: the result of which has been, the great works of Goldfuss, Sowerby, Bronn, &c. on petrified molluscs, zoophytes, &c.: that of Agassiz on fossil fishes; and those of Adolphe Brongniart and of Lindley and Hutton, on fossil plants. The splendid work of Cuvier and Alexander Brongniart "on the mineral geography and Organic Remains of the neighborhood of Paris," published in 1811, constituted an era in geology; because it directed the attention of geologists to the tertiary strata, from which they have since gathered so rich a harvest.

*Descrip.* The present state of facts and theories in geology may be learnt from the preceding pages. Very many of the principles, which are now regarded as belonging to the science, may be considered as settled, as much as they are in most physical sciences: though some of them may doubtless experience slight modifications. A few points of importance yet remain in a great measure unsettled. Perhaps on no one is there more diversity of opinion, than concerning diluvial action. Indeed, the whole history of opinions on this subject is very instructive. When the subject was first discussed, as much as 300 years ago, it was assumed as a most unquestionable fact, that whatever marks of a deluge any part of the earth's surface exhibited, or even of the former presence of the ocean on the land, all must be referred to the deluge of Noah. Nay it was soon maintained that the whole solid framework of the globe was dissolved and re-deposited by the diluvial waters. One after another have these extravagancies of hypothesis been given up, and nearly all geologists have come to the conclusion, though without denying the occurrence of the Noachian deluge, that no certain marks of that event are now to be discovered on the globe. Nay, the question now is, whether there is any evidence of the occurrence of a general flood at any epoch. Not a few believe that no such evidence exists: while those who admit of a general deluge, for the most part, regard it as having taken place anterior to man's existence on the globe. But after centuries of discussion on this subject, it is just beginning to be found out, that the facts are yet too imperfectly known to form the basis of a sound conclusion: and geologists are now busily employed in examining and digesting the facts.

*Descrip.* In American mineralogy and geology, almost literally nothing had been done at the commencement of the nineteenth century. A few individuals indeed, among whom may be mentioned Dr. Seybert, of Philadelphia, Dr. S. L. Mitchell of New York, and Dr. B. Waterhouse of Harvard University,

had commenced, rather earlier than this, to make collections, and to call the public mind to these subjects. But the return of Mr. B. D. Perkins, and of Dr. A. Bruce from Europe, in 1802, and 1803, with beautiful collections, and of Col. Gibbs in 1805, with his splendid cabinet, began to awaken more interest; so that ere long courses of lectures upon them were introduced into several of our colleges. In 1807, William Maclure returned from Europe, and commenced single handed, the Herculean task of exploring the geology of the United States; and after several years of labor, during which he crossed the Allegany range of mountains at different places not less than fifty times, he actually produced a geological map of this whole country; which, though it gives only the Wernerian classes of rocks, forms a most valuable outline, and is a monument of great industry and perseverance. In 1810, Dr. Bruce commenced his Mineralogical Journal, the first scientific journal ever undertaken in this country. But though ably commenced, it reached only the fourth number, in consequence of the sickness and death of its editor. In 1818, Professor Silliman, who had long been among the most distinguished and successful pioneers and teachers of these sciences, commenced the American Journal of Science; a work which has been continued, often at great personal and pecuniary sacrifices on the part of its editor, till it has now completed its 38th, volume; and which has been a most efficient means of promoting, not only mineralogy and geology, but all the physical sciences in the United States. In this connection, the valuable Elementary Treatise on Mineralogy and Geology by Professor Cleveland, another of the early and distinguished cultivators of those sciences in this country, ought to be mentioned. It was published in 1816; and for a long time continued to be almost the only American work on these subjects of any importance.

*Descrip.* In 1818, the American Geological Society was organized. But it has never accomplished much for the science; not having published any separate volume of transactions. The Academy of Natural Sciences at Philadelphia, the Lyceum of Natural History at New York, and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences at Boston, have from time to time given valuable papers in their transactions on mineralogy and geology; while several societies of more recent organization, but limited to particular districts of country, have been still more devoted to these subjects. The want of a general organization for the whole country, has long been felt to be a most powerful obstacle to the progress of Geology: and in April 1840, those gentleman who are engaged in the state surveys, met in Philadel-

phia, and formed themselves into the *Association of American Geologists*. Their second annual meeting is to be in the same city, on the first Monday of April, in 1841.

*Descrip.* An important feature in the history of American geology, is the numerous Geological surveys that have been executed, or are still in progress, under the patronage and direction of the state authorities, as well as the United States Government. The leading object of these surveys, is to develop those mineral resources of the country, that are of economical value. But with a commendable liberality, the Legislatures have encouraged accurate researches into the scientific geology, and sometimes also into the botany and zoology of the several states. So numerous have these surveys become, that I may not be able to give in all cases their entire history up to the present time; but since they constitute an important era in our geology, I shall give all the useful facts within my reach.

*Descrip.* The first survey, authorized by the government of a state, was that of North Carolina; which was committed to Professor Olmsted; who made a valuable Report in two parts, the first in 1824, and the second in 1825; in which the economical geology of a considerable part of the state was given in a pamphlet of 141 pages.

*Des.* The survey of Massachusetts was proposed by Gov. Lincoln in 1830, and commenced the same year by the author of this work. The first Report on the Economical Geology of the State was made in 1832, in a pamphlet of 70 pages. In 1833, a full report on the whole subject was made, in a volume of 702 pages, with an atlas of plates and a geological map; of which a second edition was directed to be printed in 1834. In 1837, on recommendation of Governor Everett, a farther examination of some parts of the geology of the state was ordered: and in 1838 a report of this re-examination, embracing only the economical geology, was made in a pamphlet of 139 pages. The final report is now in the press; and will form a quarto volume of 500 pages, with 50 plates and about 200 wood cuts. The report of 1833, embraced also the zoology and botany of the state; and when the re-examination was ordered, these departments were committed to Professors Dewey and Emmons: Rev. W. O. B. Peabody, Drs. Harris, Gould, and Storer; and George B. Emerson Esq. who made a report in 1838 of 107 pages, reserving a full report for a future occasion. That by Dr. Storer and Mr. Peabody has appeared in a volume of 416 pages.

*Descrip.* Tennessee was only two or three years later than Massachusetts in commencing a geological survey, under the

superintendance of Professor Troost. In 1839 he had made five annual reports, the three last of which were pamphlets of 32, 37, and 75, pages; with a geological map of the whole state in that of 1839.

*Descrip.* In 1834, Professors Ducat and Alexander were directed to make a Reconnoissance of the state of Maryland; and their report the next year was a pamphlet of 38 pages. This survey embraces the topography; of which Prof. Alexander has charge. In 1836 these gentlemen had made three annual reports in addition to the Reconnoissance: with six large folded maps.

*Descrip.* G. W. Featherstonehaugh in 1834, received a commission from the Government of the United States, to examine geologically "the territory of Arkansas and the adjacent public lands." His first report of 97 pages, with an extensive geological section, embracing 1600 miles, appeared in 1835, and his second of 168 pages, with four sections, in 1836.

*Descrip.* The first Report on the geology of New Jersey, was made by Professor Henry D. Rogers in 1836, in a pamphlet of 188 pages, with extensive sections; the survey having been ordered the preceding year. His final report is now in the press and will be accompanied by a geological map of the state.

*Descrip.* The survey of New York was commenced in 1836. It embraced zoology and botany as well as geology; and was put into the hands of four principal geologists, viz. Profs. Mather, Vanuxem, and Einmons with Mr. Conrad, who were to employ each an assistant; one botanist viz. Prof. Torrey; one zoologist, viz. Dr. J. E. De Kay; and one chemist, viz. Professor L. C. Beck. Subsequently Mr. Conrad was appointed Palaeontologist to the survey; and Mr. J. Hall took his place as geologist. These gentlemen made their first report in 1837, in a pamphlet of 212 pages, their second report in 1838, of 384 pages; their third report in 1839, of 351 pages; and their fourth report in 1840, of 484 pages.

*Descrip.* The first Report, which was a Reconnoissance of the geology of Virginia, was made by Prof. Wm. B. Rogers in 1835, of 36 quarto pages: His second Report, in 1836 of 30 pages; his third in 1837 of 54 pages; his fourth in 1838, of 32 quarto pages; and his fifth in 1839 of 161 pages. Prof. Rogers is aided in this work by five assistants: two of whom are occupied in the chemical laboratory.

*Descrip.* A survey was directed of the state of Maine in 1836, under the care of Dr. Charles T. Jackson. He made his first Report in 1837, of 128 pages: His second in 1838, of 168 pages; and his third in 1839, of 340 pages. The work is

now suspended, at least for a season: though it is hoped that it will not be finally abandoned. Dr. Jackson had also a commission from Massachusetts and Maine, to examine the unsettled lands owned by them jointly, and he has made two Reports on this subject in 1837 and 1838.

*Descrip.* The Survey of Connecticut was commenced in 1835; and committed to Dr. J. G. Percival for the geology, and to Prof. C. U. Shepard for the mineralogy. The latter gentleman made a report in 1837, of 188 pages. Dr. Percival has not yet made his report.

*Descrip.* The Survey of Pennsylvania was begun in 1836, by Prof. Henry D. Rogers; who the same year made a Report of 22 pages: and in 1837, another of 93 pages: also one in 1838, and another in 1839 of 252 pages. Prof. Rogers has five assistants, one of whom is devoted to the laboratory; and four sub-assistants.

*Descrip.* The first Geological report on the State of Ohio, was submitted to the Government in 1839 of 134 pages. This survey is under the direction of Prof. W. W. Mather, as principal geologist, aided by Dr. S. P. Hildreth, J. P. Kirtland, and Locke, and Professor Briggs, J. W. Foster, Esq. and Col. J. W. Whittlesey. The latter gentleman has charge of the topographical department, and Drs. Kirtland and Locke of the Zoology and Botany. Their second Report in 1838 contains 286 pages with numerous drawings. This Survey is for the present suspended.

*Descrip.* In Delaware the work was commenced in 1837, by James C. Booth, Esq. who has made two Annual Reports, in 1838 and 1839, in a pamphlet of 26 pages, and his final report will soon appear.

*Descrip.* In Michigan, the Survey was committed to Douglass Houghton, Esq with two sub assistants in Geology, one assistant in Zoology, one Botanist and Zoolologist, and one Topographer and Draughtsman. In 1838, the first Report appeared of 37 pages: In 1839, the second Report of 123 pages: and in 1840 the third Report of 124 pages.

*Descrip.* The survey of Indiana was commenced in 1837, by Dr. D. D. Owen; who in 1838, produced his first Report of 34 pages; and in 1839, his second Report, of 54 pages.

*Descrip.* In 1839, the Legislature of Rhode Island commissioned Dr. Charles T. Jackson to make a Geological and Agricultural Survey of that State, and his Report is now in the press with a Geological map.

*Descrip.* Some three or four years since, the Government of Georgia appointed Mr. John R. Cotting, to make a Geological

Survey of that State. But I have not learnt that he has made any Report, and do not know what progress has been made in the work.

*Descrip.* In 1838 the Legislature of Kentucky directed a Geological Reconnoisance of the State to be made, preparatory to a more accurate survey. This was executed by Prof. W. W. Mather, who reported at the close of the year in a pamphlet of 40 pages. But I believe the work has not yet been prosecuted farther: although the developments made in Prof. Mather's Report, of the mineral resources of the state, are such that there can hardly be a doubt but the survey will be continued, by a people as intelligent as those of Kentucky.

In 1839, Dr. D. D. Owen was commissioned by the Government of the United States, to examine the Territory of Iowa: or at least, its most promising mineral districts. The work was prosecuted by Mr. Owen with as many as 40 assistants; and a large collection of specimens were forwarded to Washington in the winter of 1840: But I have not learnt whether his report has been printed.

*Result.* Thus it appears, that including those ordered by the Government of the U. States, twenty surveys have been undertaken in this country, only one of which is yet entirely completed and the final report published: viz. that of North Carolina, which was finished several years before another was commenced. In Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island, New Jersey and Delaware, the field work is closed, and the final reports, will soon appear with geological maps. The annual reports which have been noticed above, are almost exclusively confined to the economical geology: so that a vast mass of facts of great scientific interest, must be in the hands of the surveyors, which will appear in their final reports. It is their intention also, in all cases to prepare geological maps. Hence we may hope, that in the end, we shall have an accurate geological map of the whole United States. For the above mentioned States cover an area of 532,855 square miles: and in some of the States not named above, efforts have been made towards effecting a survey; and we have reason to hope that ere long it will be done in every state in the Union.

*Descrip.* It ought not to be omitted in this connection, that at an earlier date than any of the state surveys were undertaken, the late Hon. Stephen Van Rensselaer, with great liberality and munificence, directed a geological survey to be made of the region bordering upon the Erie Canal; and that Mr. Amos Eaton, who was employed, made a report of 163 pages in 1824; with an extended section from the Atlantic to Lake Erie.

*Descrip.* Previous to the year 1833, the Government of France had ordered a Geological Map of the whole kingdom to be constructed: and the work has since been executed by M. Elie de Beaumont and Dufrenoy.

*Descrip.* In his Anniversary Address before the London Geological Society in February 1836, (*Philos. Mag. Vol. 8. 3d Series* p. 568.) Mr. Lyell says, "Early in the Spring of last year, an application was made by the Master General and Board of Ordnance, to Dr. Buckland and Mr. Sedgwick, as Professors of Geology in the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge; and to myself, as President of the Geological Society, to offer our opinion as to the expediency of combining a geological examination of the English Counties with the geographical surveys now in progress." The plan was adopted; and H. L. De la Beche commissioned to make the Survey. In 1839 he made a Report on the Geology of Cornwall, Devon, and West Somerset, in a volume of 684 pages, with 12 Plates.

*Inf.* Those whose recollection enables them to compare the state of geological science 30 years ago with its present condition, and the almost universal interest now taken in it, with the almost entire absence of all interest or knowledge on the subject then, will hardly venture to predict what will be its condition 30 years hence.

## SECTION XI.

### GEOGRAPHICAL GEOLOGY.

*Def.* By Geographical Geology I mean a description of the geology of different countries of the globe. Like simple geography, this must be very imperfect in regard to many countries. Indeed, the geology of some extensive regions must be considered as too little known to admit of description.

#### EUROPE.

##### *England.*

*Rem.* The rocks of no country on the globe have been studied so carefully and successfully as those of England. Indeed, the descriptions of rocks in general, given in this treatise, is based upon those of Great Britain: and, therefore, little more will here be needed than to describe briefly their distribution in that country.

**Descrip.** The primary rocks are confined chiefly to the west or mountainous parts of England, viz. Wales, Cumberland, Cornwall, and Devon. In proceeding easterly, the country becomes hilly and then level, and the rocks generally become newer and newer, until we reach the alluvium of the eastern coast. The unstratified rocks are mostly confined to the western districts, as are the Cambrian and the Silurian Groups. The Estuary of the Thames contains the principal deposit of the tertiary strata.

**Descrip.** Probably coal is the most important mineral found in England; and that country is remarkably well supplied with it. Conybeare and Phillips describe five great coal districts. 1. That north of the Trent: 2. Central Coal District: 3. Western Coal District: 4. Middle Western, or Shropshire; 5. South Western. Some statements, however, have already been made in respect to the coal deposits of England, on page 58. The annual amount of coal dug and consumed in England and Ireland is about 15,500,000 tons.

**Descrip.** Extensive deposits of iron often accompany the coal of England; as well as the limestone necessary for smelting the ore; and the firestones for the furnaces; while the coal supplies the fuel. In 1839, the amount of iron manufactured from ore in England, was 1,312,000 tons. *Mining Review, Dec. 1839, p. 182.*

**Descrip.** England contains several mining districts where other metals are found; the chief of which are, copper, tin, lead, and antimony. In Cornwall and Devon, the mines of these metals are in primary or transition rocks. Rich lead mines with copper and zinc, are also found in the mountain limestone in England and Wales. The amount of oxide of tin raised in 1839, was 4868 tons. *Mining Review for Feb'y. 1840, p. 14.* The amount of lead in 1835, was 46,112 tons, and the amount of copper in 1837, was 11,209 tons.

**Descrip.** In the New Red Sandstone at Northwich, is a valuable deposit of rock salt, the two beds being 60 feet in thickness and a mile and a half long. The salt springs at Droitwich produce 700,000 bushels of salt yearly, and the whole amount in all England, is 15,000,000 bushels. In the London clay, the septaria produces the valuable Roman Cement; which is carried all over the world. Many other valuable minerals exist in the rocks of England, which cannot be here specified.

### *Scotland.*

**Descrip.** Scotland is much more mountainous than England,

and is composed generally of primary and older secondary rocks. All the varieties of the former occur here, and are fully developed. They consist of granite, sienite, porphyry, trap, and serpentine; which are unstratified, and of gneiss, mica slate, quartz rock, and clay slate, which are stratified. The secondary rocks are graywacke, old and new red sandstone, mountain limestone, coal formation, lias and oolite, which are covered with diluvium and alluvium.

*Descrip.* The amount of iron smelted in Scotland in 1839, was 200,000 tons. Copper, lead and silver, are also obtained there. The annual value of lead is about 603,000, and of the silver, \$44,400. Several important coal fields exist, which furnish a large supply. The Mid Lothian coal fields produce annually 390,000 tons; and they are calculated to contain 2250 millions of tons: which would supply the whole of Great Britain, which annually consumes 30 millions of tons, for 75 years. *Mining Review, Oct. 1839, p. 149.* The Brora coal is said to be in oolite: but its quality is poor.

*Descrip.* The Western Islands of Scotland are remarkable for unstratified rocks, which produce much wild and interesting scenery. *See Macculloch's Western Islands, in three Volumes. London, 1819.*

#### *Ireland.*

*Descrip.* All the primitive and older secondary rocks, both stratified and unstratified, occur in Ireland on an extensive scale. Chalk also is found beneath the trap. Perhaps the most striking feature of Irish geology is the vast deposit of trap in the northern part of the island. It occupies an area of 800 square miles, and is 545 feet in average thickness. Where it extends to the coast, it exhibits the famous columns, which constitute the Giant's Causeway and Fingal's Cave: the latter being upon the island of Staffa. The chalk on which this trap rests, is often changed into granular limestone. Beneath the chalk lie green sand, lias, and variegated Marls.

*Descrip.* Ireland contains several coal fields. Nearly all that in the Province of Munster is anthracite; which is used to some extent for burning lime. The other basins produce bituminous coal. The peat bogs in that country occupy it is said, more than one tenth of the whole island, and are from 15 to 25 feet thick. Iron is also wrought to some extent; as are copper and lead: The single mine of Allihies produces more than 2000 tons of copper annually; and those of Coonbane

and Tigrony, in 1811 produced 1046 tons. Native gold also occurs in considerable quantity.

### *Denmark.*

*Descrip.* This low and flat country is composed almost entirely of deposits of Weald Clay and Chalk, covered by tertiary and diluvial strata; and these in their turn often by diluvium.

*Descrip.* Iceland and the Faroe Islands, which are under the jurisdiction of Denmark, are composed almost entirely of igneous rocks of two eras: the first that of dolerite or greenstone; and the second, that of modern volcanos. Some of the most terrible eruptions of modern times have occurred in Iceland. The amygdaloidal rocks of these islands are celebrated for the splendid zeolites which they afford.

### *Sweden, Norway and Lapland.*

*Descrip.* These extensive countries form the ancient Scandinavia. It is rough and mountainous, and the rocks are mostly primary, with the older secondary; though chalk is said to occur: and in Sweden some recent tertiary strata. The mountains are mostly gneiss with mica and talcose slates, and in Norway are extensive deposits of porphyry and sienite. But the diluvium or boulder formation that is spread over this country, is perhaps the most remarkable in the whole series. This however has been already described in a preceding Section. I would only remark here, that diluvial phenomena in Scandinavia appear to resemble those in New England more nearly than in any European country. And there is a good deal of resemblance in the rocks and minerals; especially between those of Norway and New England.

*Descrip.* The mines of Sweden have long been well known. Those of gold and silver yield much less now than formerly. Those of Kongsberg have been considered the richest in Europe. A mass of native silver, was once found here weighing 600 pounds. The copper mines are very prolific: that of Fahlun alone yielding annually 510 tons. Cobalt is also wrought in several places. From the sulphurets of iron and copper sulphate of iron or copperas is manufactured in large quantity. In Sweden and Norway 120,000 tons of iron were manufactured in 1839. The immense beds of iron are usually connected with the gneiss. Extensive quarries of granite, marble, and porphyry,—the latter the finest in Europe, are also worked.

*Holland and Belgium.*

*Descrip.* These countries are proverbial for the flatness of their almost entire surface; although some parts are hilly. But much of the land lies even below the level of the sea, and is defended by dykes. As might be expected, no primary rocks occur: nor any unstratified rocks. Clay slate is the oldest; and most of these secondary strata are superimposed upon this, with one or two tertiary basins, and a coat of diluvium.

*Descrip.* Both anthracite and bituminous coal are found in Belgium; the latter in great abundance. In 1837 her 250 coal mines yielded 1,600,000 tons: and the iron mines in 1839, 80,000 tons. *Mining Review for July, 1838 p. 109; and for January, 1840. p. 6.*

*France.*

*Descrip.* This extensive country, embracing an area of more than 200,000 square miles, is generally level: though in its central parts mountains rise 5000 or 6000 feet: and the highest mountains of Europe, the Alps, are on its borders. Nearly all the stratified and unstratified rocks, from the oldest to the most recent, are found here. The carboniferous strata are far less extensive than in England: but the new red sandstone, and the jura or oolitic limestones form extensive tracts. Chalk also occurs in vast abundance: and there are not less than six extensive basins of tertiary deposits. Diluvium is abundant, and interesting by the remains of extinct animals, especially the pachydermata. But perhaps the most remarkable of the formations is the district of extinct volcanos in Avergne; which has long been classic ground for the geologist. The rocks are trachyte, basalt, and tufa.

*Descrip.* In 1837, the one hundred and ninety eight coal mines of France produced 1,150,000 tons of coal; and her iron mines 600,000 tons of iron in 1839. (*Mining Review, July, 1838 and Jan'y, 1840.*) Her lead mines yield annually about 1525 tons, and her silver mines about 2800 pounds Troy. Besides these, there are mines of copper, antimony, manganese, alum, and vitriol. Cobalt, arsenic, nickel, and tin, also occur in small quantity. Quarries of marble, slate, gypsum, flint, and buhrstone, are likewise extensively wrought.

*Spain.*

*Descrip.* The surface of Spain is strikingly irregular ; some of the mountains, as the Pyrenees, rising more than 11,000 feet above the ocean. The central axis of these mountains is usually primary, or older secondary rocks ; both stratified and unstratified. The middle secondary strata, however, sometimes rise to a great elevation, as in the Pyrenees. The more recent secondary, even to the chalk, as well as tertiary deposits, occur. Around Olot in Catalonia is a region of extinct volcanos, occupying 20 square leagues, according to Maclure, who first pointed it out. (*Lyell's Principles of Geology*, Vol. 2, p. 325.)

*Descrip.* Lead occurs in great quantity in Spain : one district yielded in 1828 no less than 30,000 tons. This deposit is in transition limestone. There are also rich quicksilver mines in clay slate. An extensive deposit of rock salt exists at Cardona, in the cretaceous rocks. The iron smelted in 1839, was only 18,000 tons, although the ores are said to be very abundant. Extensive deposits of coal are found in the province of Asturias. The sands of the river in this country have long been known as yielding gold.

*Portugal.*

*Descrip.* The geological structure of Portugal is similar to that of Spain : the older stratified and unstratified rocks constituting the mountains. Gold occurs in the sands of a few of the rivers, and is still sought, but with small success. There are also mines of coal, of graphite, of iron, and of quicksilver ; and formerly tin was explored.

*Italy.*

*Descrip.* Italy contains the loftiest mountains in Europe, viz. a part of the Alps, including Mount Blanc, St. Bernard, and the Apennine chain. Between these mountains are most beautiful plains. The Apennines are made up in a good measure of limestone, belonging to the newest of the primary, or the oldest of the secondary rocks : though in some parts are slate, euphotide, and gabbro. The sub-Apennine hills, at the base of the Apennines, are composed of tertiary strata, often containing species of shells such as now exist in the Mediterranean. And there is evidence that the Apennine chain has been elevated 3000 or 4000 feet since the deposition of these tertiary strata.

ta. In Calabria, granite, gneiss, and mica slate exist. Primary rocks occur also in the Alps and on the island of Sicily: though most of the rocks on this island are secondary and tertiary. Most of the English newer secondary rocks occur here. In this island, also, is volcanic Etna, nearly 10,000 feet high. On the main land, Vesuvius is the only acting volcano, nearly 4000 feet in height: though near Naples is a *Solfatara*, which continually gives off gases and vapor. Brocchi estimates the number of craters of extinct volcanoes in the vicinity of Naples, at 27. The Lipari Islands, as also Procida and Ischia, are all of volcanic origin; and among the former is the perpetually active volcano, Stromboli. In Corsica and Sardinia, the prevailing rocks are primary and the older secondary. Jura limestone, however, is found there; and in Sardinia, are tertiary strata covered by diluvium with volcanic rocks. Malta and Gero are chiefly composed of soft limestone. Along the shores of the Mediterranean are deposits of alluvium; and in the fissures and caverns of the rocks, is a calcareous deposit, called bone breccia, made up of the fragments of the bones of extinct animals, cemented by carbonate of lime.

*Descrip.* Italy has long been celebrated for its marbles, such as the Carara, the Pentelic, Lumachella, &c. Coal occurs there, but is not abundant. In the province of Coserza, are extensive beds of rock salt. Silver, lead, copper, and iron, have been wrought: the latter especially. In 1839, Italy, with the islands of Elba and Sardinia, produced 50,000 tons of iron. The iron mines of Elba have been wrought from the earliest times. Sicily has long supplied nearly all Europe with sulphur, dug from the tertiary clays.

#### *Switzerland.*

*Descrip.* The geology of this country of mountains has been explored by many of the ablest geologists of Europe, commencing with Saussure. And although its structure is complicated, it has afforded many fine illustrations of geological principles. The central parts of the Alps are primary: or gneiss, mica slate, talcose slate, hornblende slate, and limestone. In the gneiss, talc often replaces the mica; and the rock is then called protogine: of which Mount Blanc is formed. On the flanks of the mountains are deposits of new red sandstone, lias, oolite, green sand, chalk, and tertiary strata; over which are accumulations of diluvium. The tertiary rocks are from 2000 to 4000 feet above the ocean; and mark the height to which these mountains have been raised since those strata were deposited. All

the older unstratified rocks, as granite, sienite, porphyry, and greenstone, are found in the Alps.

### *Germany.*

*Descrip.* The south western, and eastern borders of Germany, consist of lofty mountains of primitive rocks: which occur also in several places more central, as in the Hartz Mountains. Secondary rocks occur in many places; though relatively less abundant than in Great Britain. Yet nearly all the fossiliferous rocks of Great Britain are found in Germany, and in the same relative position: A part of the extensive plains of northern Germany is composed of tertiary rocks, covered with diluvial detritus from Scandinavia. As many as four other tertiary basins occur in Germany. Indeed, nearly every stratified rock that has been found in any part of the world, exists in Germany.

*Descrip.* Several coal deposits are found in this country, which annually produce about 1,000,000 tons of coal. Salt and Gypsum, are also found in the new red sandstone and of the former, the annual produce is 157,500 tons. The amount of iron manufactured in 1839, in Germany, was about 300,000 tons: of which Austria produced 100,000; Prussia the same, and the Hartz Mountains, 70,000. The annual produce of the gold mines of Germany, is 182 marks: of Silver, 123,000 marks: of Copper, 1950 tons: of Lead, 9560 tons: of Tin, 400 Tons: of Mercury and Cinnabar, 699 tons: of Cobalt, 825 tons: of Calamine, 4140 tons: of Arsenic, 630 tons: of Bismuth, 75 tons: of Antimony, 120 tons: of Manganese, 90 tons. Indeed, this country is the most remarkable one in Europe for mining operations, and for the scientific skill with which they are conducted.

### *Hungary with Transylvania, Sclavonia, Croatia, and the Bannat.*

*Descrip.* This extensive region has the Carpathian mountains on its north and eastern border, and the Julian Alps and other mountains on the south. The country in the interior is in general hilly, except several plains of great extent. Primary rocks occur in several places; but they are not relatively very abundant. Nearly all the secondary and tertiary stratified deposits hitherto described, occur here; and above them diluvium and alluvium. The common unstratified rocks are also found here; and in addition we have Trachyte in abundance, with

trachytic porphyries, tufas, and conglomerates; which are of more recent date than the tertiary strata: and one solfatara at least exists in the trachytic region of Transylvania.

*Descrip.* Hungary produces more gold and silver than any country of Europe. Hassel states the annual amount of the former to be 1050 pounds; and of the latter, 41,600 pounds. But this is greater than the quantity now obtained. The iron annually smelted is about 10,000 tons: of copper, 19,000 tons: of lead, 1225 tons: and large quantities of coal and salt are obtained.

#### *Poland and Russia in Europe.*

*Descrip.* Poland and Russia are for the most part a vast plain, bounded on the east by the Uralian mountains, and on the south by the Carpathian and Silesian chains. These mountains are chiefly primary and older secondary; as are also Finland and Russian Lapland. But the tertiary and alluvial strata predominate in most parts of the country. Nearly all the stratified secondary rocks occur; such as old and new red sandstone with the coal formation intervening; lias and other limestones, and green sand and chalk. The tertiary strata correspond rather to those in Hungary and France, than to those of England and Italy. Over the tertiary is a deposit of clay, sand, and boulders, from 30 to 100 feet thick, which has been brought from the northeast; and this deposit contains the bones of many extinct terrestrial animals. Unstratified rocks are uncommon: but trachyte occurs in the Caucasian chain.

*Descrip.* In Poland occurs in the tertiary strata, the most extensive deposit of salt in Europe. Several other deposits of this mineral are found in the new red sandstone with gypsum, in Russia. Some coal mines have been opened: but they are not extensively wrought. The iron mines of Russia and Poland yielded in 1839, about 158,000 tons. Copper is obtained also, on the western side of the Uralian mountains.

#### *Greece and Turkey in Europe.*

*Descrip.* The geology of these countries is very similar to that of Hungary, but it has not been minutely described.

### ASIA.

#### *Turkey in Asia and Arabia.*

*Descrip.* Although many insulated facts are known respecting the rocks of these extensive and mountainous regions, yet

no connected view of their geology can be made out. It is certain, however, that rocks of every age, stratified and unstratified, are found there. A few statements of interest can be made respecting the geology of Syria, Palestine, and Arabia.

*Descrip.* In Syria and Palestine, limestone, probably of the newer secondary class, is the most abundant rock. It forms the greater part of the mountains of Lebanon, Anti Lebanon, Carmel, the mountains of Galilee, and the ridges stretching south from the Dead Sea. Much of it is yellowish white and compact, not a little resembling the stone used in lithography. At least, this is the character of the limestone on which Jerusalem is built; and of which the ancient temple of Solomon and the houses of the city were constructed; and it was the material from which the tessellated pavement of the streets was formed.\*

*Descrip.* Mount Lebanon has been recently described by M. Botta, as consisting of three groups of calcareous rocks. The upper group consists of limestone of variable hardness, alternating with marls: the middle group embraces siliceous beds and nodules, with fossil echini and fishes: and the lowest group is mostly sandstone, with beds of silico-calcareous matter, iron ore and lignite. The whole formation he refers to the chalk.

*Traite Elementaire de Geologie, Par M. Rozet, p. 524.*

*Descrip.* Mount Hor and Wady Mouss, in the ancient Edom, are composed of variegated or new red sandstone; and the excavations of Petrea, the ancient capital of Edom, are in this rock; which extends to Mount Sinai, and still farther south. On the borders of the Dead Sea, tertiary strata occur and rock salt, probably imbedded in those strata.

*Descrip.* Some of the highest peaks around the Red Sea, are said to be composed of granitic rocks. Mount Sinai is wholly granite, or perhaps sienite: as are also the mountains on each side of the Arabian Gulf. Porphyry and greenstone exist also in the same mountains. Trap rocks occur at Akaba, the eastern extremity of the Red Sea: and according to Burckhardt, ancient volcanic craters may be seen in the same region. According to Von Buch, the valley of the Jordan, from Mount Libanus to the Red Sea, is a fissure, through which volcanic agency has been active, and the character of the dead sea, as well as the thermal springs on its margin, the existence of volcanic rocks in the same region, the rock salt and great amount of bitumen, and the columnar and amygdaloidal rocks existing near the Jordan, render it highly probable that this igneous agency

\* These statements respecting Jerusalem, I derive from specimens with labels, sent by the Rev. Henry Homes, American Missionary in Constantinople, to the Social Union Society of Amherst College.

has been exerted at no very distant period. *American Biblical Repository, Vol 3. Second Series, p. 24, 324.*

**Remark.** Since the above was written, I have received an extensive series of specimens illustrating the geology of Syria and Palestine, especially that of Mount Lebanon, from Rev. Story Hebard, Am. Missionary in Syria, who had paid a good deal of attention to geology before leaving this country. They confirm the preceding statements essentially. The limestones of Mount Lebanon are often pulverulent, and even chalky; though some of them are compact. They often contain siliceous nodules, sometimes as large as a man's head, which, on breaking open, present splendid geodes of crystals of quartz, or sometimes of mammillary chalcedony. Solid nodules of hornstone, passing into chalcedony, are also common. The limestone contains fine petrifications of one or two species of *Tellina*, and *Venus*, a *Terebra*, a *Trochus*, a *Dolium*, an *Ostrea*, an Echino-derm, and fishes on a white marl slate somewhat like that of Monte Bolca, and with homocercal tails. The sandstones are highly ferruginous, and resemble those in this country that are referred to the lower part of the cretaceous group. In this sandstone occur beds of asphaltum, especially at Carmel on Mount Lebanon, and at Hermon on Anti-Libanus, at the former place, in ferruginous sandstone. Lignite is also found on Lebanon. Near the tops of this mountain occur a brittle bituminous shale, and on the borders of the dead sea, a black highly bituminous limestone. Genuine greenstone is found with the limestone on the east side of Anti-Libanus; and a vesicular basalt with olivine. The same rock exists at Hauran, southeast of Damascus. Genuine basaltic vesicular lava occurs in an ancient crater five miles west of Sufet; and a still more porous variety on the north shore of the Dead Sea. The ruins of Jericho furnish a similar rock. (See the specimens in the Cabinet of Amherst College.)

*Persia, including Cabul, Afghanistan, Baloochistan, &c.  
as far as the River Indus.*

**Descrip.** The little that is known of the geology of this vast region, consists of a few insulated facts. On the north, commences the largest inland sea in the world, viz. the Caspian; which is 600 miles long, and 300 broad, and salt like the ocean. In the northwest part of Persia is the lake Ooromiah, 300 miles in circumference, whose waters hold in solution at least one third more salt than the sea, and contain so much sulphuretted hydrogen as to tarnish silver rapidly, after having been brought to this country. The sea of Aral, in Tartary, east of the Cas-

plain, is also salt. These facts, particularly those in respect to Oromiah, indicate volcanic agency in those regions; and the remarkable springs and deposition of asphaltum, in the region of ancient Assyria, as well as the sulphur in the soil, lead to a similar conclusion. An extinct volcanic crater is said to exist in the vicinity of Mount Ararat; and that mountain itself, is made up of ancient lava. A crater also exists in the Kourdish Mountains. Near Tiflis in Georgia, are hot springs; and a, boiling spring on the river Akhour. In the Caucasian mountains are extensive groups of basaltic columns. Near lake Oromiah occurs the beautiful white or yellowish calcareous alabaster of Tabreez, which is deposited by thermal waters in great abundance. Near the ruins of the city Tact-i-Solomon is another enormous deposit of calc sinter. Copper, lead and silver, are mined near Tokat, where 50 furnaces are in operation. Iron, copper and silver, are also wrought near Samsoon. *Sir Robert Ker Porter's Travels from 1817 to 1820. See Am. Journal Science, Vol. 37. p. 347.*

**Descrip.** From specimens and their labels sent by Rev. Justin Perkins and J. L. Merrick, American Missionaries in Persia, I learn the following facts. 1. That on the vast plain northwest of Mount Ararat, are diluvial elevations and depressions in gravel, like those in this country. 2. That the principal rock in the mountains around the city of Oromiah is granitic gneiss, having a dip from  $10^{\circ}$  to  $30^{\circ}$ . 3. That graywacke is very abundant in the same region. 4. That quartz rock exists there, as well as in some of the islands of the lake, and in several other parts of Persia. 5. That tertiary limestone is abundant around Oromiah, similar to the common rock of the island of Malta. 6. That red sandstone and conglomerate (probably the new red sandstone,) constitute a mountain just back of Tabreez, some part of which appears as if it had been exposed to very powerful heat: and that similar rocks occur in other parts of Persia. 7. That beautiful rock salt is dug from a mountain near Tabreez. 8. That rich ore of copper, composed of native copper, and the green and blue carbonates, exists in large quantity 60 miles northeast of Tabrez, from which the Persian government have manufactured cannon. 9. That the marble in the ruins of Persepolis resembles lias with casts of Turbo (?)

### Tartary.

**Descrip.** The interior portion of Asia is crossed by four grand systems of mountains from east to west; viz. on the south, the Himalayah, next northerly the Kuenlun, then the

Thian-chan, and the Altaian. The first is in India; the second separates Tartary from Thibet, and the last from Siberia; while the Thian-chan occupies its central parts. The Altaian chain presents its magnificent displays of primary and transition rocks; over which are secondary and tertiary deposits. In these rocks are numerous metallic deposits. The quantity of gold annually derived from thence, is 1140 pounds avoirdupois; and of silver, 41.992 pounds.

*Descrip.* Active and extinct volcanos occur in central Asia; occupying a space of 2500 square leagues. The most remarkable volcanic mountains are Pechan, Houtcheon, Ouroumptsi, Kobok, and Aral-toube. These are between 900 and 1200 miles from the sea.

*Rem.* It has been already stated (p. 11,) that the supposed extensive depression of central Asia around the Caspian Sea, below the level of other oceans, does not exist.

### *Siberia.*

*Descrip.* The geology of the Uralian Mountains, which separate Siberia from Europe, is similar to that of the Altaian range in its general features.

*Descrip.* The Uralian mountains, especially on the Siberian side, have long been celebrated for their mineral treasures. In 1828, about 53 tons of gold were thence obtained. As long ago as 1782, this mountain yielded 66.000 tons of iron, and 31.500 tons of copper. The Altaian chain of mountains, also, yields an immense quantity of silver, as well as much gold and copper. In 22 years, 12.348 pounds of gold, and 324.000 pounds of silver, were dug from the single mountain of Schlangenberg. In 1828, the entire produce of silver in Siberia was 182 tons. In the Uralian mountains, within a few years, platinum has been found in such quantity that it is now used as a coin in Russia.

*Descrip.* Other interesting minerals are found in Siberia: among which are the diamond, topaz, emerald, beryl, onyx, lapis lazuli, beautiful crystals of quartz, rubellite, avanturine, carnelian, chalcedony, agates, &c.

### *Hindostan, Thibet, and Further India.*

*Descrip.* The two first of these countries are separated by the Himalayah mountains, the highest on the globe, and their geology becomes, therefore, of great interest. On approaching this chain from the plains, on the south, we first meet with a

sandstone belonging to the newer secondary series; next in succession argillaceous slate, mica slate, talcose slate, quartz rock, hornblende slate, and limestone. The highest part of the range is composed chiefly of gneiss, traversed by granite. The mica slate is traversed by porphyry. At the base of these mountains, also, occur tertiary strata, in which the bones of the mastodon have been found in Burmah; and between the river Sutlej and the Ganges, bones of the elephant, mastodon, hippopotamus, rhinoceros, elk, horse, deer, crocodiles, gavials, sivatherium, and the monkey. Diluvial deposits are said also to occur in these mountains. In Middle India, the vast plains are composed mostly of clays, sand, and gravel, with organic remains of animals and fossil wood. Good coal also occurs here in a formation resting on granite. Peninsular India is composed in a great measure of unstratified rocks; such as granite, sienite, and trap: though nearly all the stratified primary ones are present also. Extensive deposits of secondary and tertiary strata exist there likewise; as well as diluvium and alluvium. The geology of Further India is but little known.

*Descrip.* Southeastern Asia has long been known as a region of gems. The diamond occurs in several places in Hindostan; both in conglomerate and the alluvium. Corundum, from its coarsest to its finest state, is found there. Pegu is well known to produce the most beautiful variety of the oriental ruby, which is a sapphire. Topaz, zircon, tourmaline, garnets, carnelian, jasper, agates, amethyst, catseye, chrysolite, &c. are common. The annual value of carnelian formerly exported from India, was \$50,000. Burmah is celebrated for the vast amount of petroleum collected in wells: which amounts to 92,781 tons per annum. India also contains gold, tin, iron, lead, and zinc: though not enough of these metals is obtained for home consumption. Rock salt is also found. From Thibet is brought a large quantity of borax. This is obtained from a lake, which contains also common salt. The Thibetans are said to work mines of copper and mercury.

### *Ceylon.*

*Descrip.* The geology of this large island, lying near the coast of southern India, is quite simple. It is made up almost entirely of primary rock, most of it stratified. The prevailing rock is gneiss; which is associated with dolomite, and subordinate masses of quartz rock. Granite, sienite, and greenstone; also, exist there.

*Descrip.* Iron is almost the only valuable metal found in Ceylon. But the gems are numerous. Amethyst, rose quartz, catseye, prase, topaz, schorl, garnet, pyrope, cinnamon stone, zircon, spinelle, sapphire, and corundum, have been found; most of them in connection with graphite in gneiss. *Transactions of the Geological Society, Vol. 5. Part 2. p. 311.*

#### *China.*

*Descrip.* Little is known of the geology of China. We only know that granite, sienite, porphyry, sandstone, &c. occur there. But its minerals are more known. Gold and silver, mercury and copper, lead, tin, and arsenic, are among those which are wrought. Rubies, corundum, topaz, lapis lazuli, jasper, agate, jade, porcelain clay, and marble, are enumerated among its valuable minerals.

#### *Japan.*

*Descrip.* It is known that these islands contain several volcanos, but their other geological features are little understood. Gold and silver abound, and copper and mercury occur. Sulphur exists in great quantities: and coal is found, as well as amber, porcelain clay, marble, &c.

#### *East Indian Archipelago.*

*Descrip.* In Sumatra are four volcanos, nearly 12000 feet high: while granite, trap, limestone, and other primitive rocks exist there, as well as tertiary clays. In Java, are several ranges of volcanic mountains; and at their bases, are deposits, perhaps tertiary, of limestone, clay, and marl, with rock salt. Banca is said to be composed of gneiss and mica slate with granite. In Borneo, primary formations are abundant, forming the axes of the principal mountain chains; while secondary tertiary and alluvial deposits occupy the lower regions. Volcanos also exist here. The Phillipine Islands are likewise volcanic: as are also the Moluccas: of which Celebes contains primary rocks.

*Descrip.* The mineral treasures of this Archipelago are abundant. Gold occurs in nearly all the islands: and the amount annually collected, is estimated at \$2,922,300. Tin is abundant, especially in the island of Banca; where in 1817, about 2083 tons were smelted. Copper also occurs. Sulphur is obtained in great abundance and purity in Java. Borneo is

celebrated for its diamonds: one of which, in the possession of a prince of Matan, is valued at \$1.194.350.

*Australia, or New Holland.*

*Descrip.* The details of the geology of particular portions of this vast island, or rather continent, have not been given: yet numerous facts on the subject are known. The coast is for the most part rocky and mountainous; and the rocks which have been recognized, are granite, mica slate, talcose slate, quartz rock, ancient sandstones and limestones, the coal formation, red marl, with salt and oolite: also porphyry, greenstone, clinkstone, amygdaloid, and serpentine. There are some traces of former volcanos. Topaz and agate are the most interesting minerals.

*Descrip.* Interesting collections of fossil bones from the limestone caverns of New Holland have been carried to England, and referred to at least 14 species of animals. These animals are all similar to those found living in Australia; such as the kangaroo, dasyurus, *hypsiprimnus*, wombat, a rodent, a saurian, and an elephant. These bones are much gnawed like those in the English caverns, and were probably carried into the caverns by carnivorous races.

*Polynesia.*

*Descrip.* The predominant formations in this vast group of islands are the volcanic and the coral reefs. Those islands formed by the latter, are low and level: but the others rise to a great height. Mouna Roa in the Sandwich Islands is more than 16000 feet high; and Mouna Kea, 18.400 feet. These islands, with a surface of 4000 square miles, are all volcanic: Kiraeua being the most remarkable volcano on the globe. The Society Islands are composed mostly of igneous rocks of greater age; as basalt, which frequently contains most of the zeolitic minerals. The Friendly Islands are mostly volcanic; as are also the Marquesas, the Gallipagos, the New Hebrides, and Gambier's Islands. Juan Fernandes is composed wholly of basaltic greenstone. The South Shetland and Orkney Islands are made up of primary rocks, along with those of more recent igneous origin. The coral Islands are Elizabeth Island, Whitsunday, Queen Charlotte, Lagoon, Egremont, &c. &c. The shores of nearly all the volcanic islands are lined with coral.

*Antarctic Continent.*

*Descrip.* Concerning this new continent, discovered on the 19th of January 1840, by the United States Exploring Expedition, there is but little to say. Although Capt. Wilkes sailed along the coast 70 degrees, or 1300 miles, in about 66 degrees south latitude, he was unable to land: but he describes some part of it as composed of "black volcanic rocks" and high mountains; and from an iceberg he collected specimens of quartz, sandstone, and conglomerate. These few facts afford us some glimpses of the geology of this new world, and show us that probably it is analogous to that of other regions of the globe. *New York Mercury, July, 23d. 1840.*

## AFRICA.

*Egypt.*

*Descrip.* The southern part of this country is primary; consisting of granite, sienite, and other primary rocks. The feldspar in the granite and sienite is red, and the rock has been used for many of the monuments of Egypt, as Pompey's Pillar, Cleopatra's Needle, &c. Sienite took its name from one of these localities, near Syene. North of Syene succeeds a region of sandstone, which appears to belong to the more recent of the secondary rocks. This is succeeded by the limestone tract, which reaches from Thebes several days journey south. Between Thebes and the Mediterranean, the country is wholly alluvial. On the west side of the Nile are the most remarkable examples of dunes that are known.

*Nubia and Abyssinia.*

*Descrip.* Of the latter country nothing of importance is known respecting its geology, though some gold has been found, and large quantities of salt are obtained from a large plain; perhaps the site of a former salt lake. In Nubia, travellers mention granite, sienite, porphyry, sandstone, and limestone; and formerly mines of gold were wrought there.

*Barbary or Northern Africa.*

*Descrip.* The greater part of northern Africa is a level sandy plain. But the chain of mount Atlas extends nearly across the

whole of Barbary from west to east, and rises to the height of 13000 feet. Its higher parts are composed of granite, gneiss, mica slate and clay slate. The northern part of the chain is composed, in a great measure, of calcareous rocks, resembling the lias; though sometimes approaching the transition limestones. Secondary sandstones also occur, and above these, tertiary strata. Among the Secondary and tertiary formations, trap rocks are included. Salt springs and gypsum are found.

#### *Western Africa.*

**Descrip.** This embraces the west coast of Africa, from the river Senegal in 18° north latitude, to the river of Benguela in 18° South latitude. Little is known of its geology. The hills around Sierra Leone are granitic. The district through which the river Zaire flows, is composed of gneiss, mica slate, clay slate, primary limestone, granite, sienite, and queenstone. Not a little gold (estimated in the beginning of the last century from 200,000 to 300,000 pounds sterling annually,) is obtained from the interior, especially along the Gold Coast, and at the head of the Senegal and Gambia rivers. In Angola are very extensive deposits of salt, and some iron and copper.

#### *Southern Africa.*

**Descrip.** The southern part of Africa is crossed by three ranges of mountains, running parallel to the coast; the height increasing towards the interior, till the innermost range rises 10,000 feet. North of these mountains are extensive table lands. The rocks composing these mountains are gneiss, clay slate, graywacke, quartz rock, and sandstone. Sandstone is most abundant; and this forms most of the rock in the table land beyond the mountains, as far north as 30° of latitude. Its strata are usually horizontal; and they give a tabular shape to the summits of the mountains. Table Mountain at the Cape of Good Hope, is formed in this manner. Through these rocks are found protruding masses of granite, as well as basalt, pitch stone, and red iron ore. The relative situation of all these rocks is the same as in Europe.

#### *Eastern and Central Africa, and Sahara, or the Great Desert.*

**Descrip.** Nothing appears to be known of the geology of the eastern side of Africa. Of Central Africa, which is traversed

by the mountains of the Moon, much more is known. The more elevated parts consist of gneiss, mica slate, quartz rock, hornblende rock, clay slate, and limestone; traversed by granite, greenstone, and other trap rocks. At Goree are fine examples of basaltic columns. Extensive beds of rock salt are quarried in Soudan, and salt and natron lakes occur. It is also from this country, that most of the gold carried to the Western and the Eastern Coast is obtained. The Great Sahara or Desert, is chiefly covered with quartzose and calcareous sand; and is the most desolate region on the globe. Occasionally, however, the rocks rise through the sand, and are found in the eastern part to consist of limestone and sandstone, containing rock salt and gypsum, and traversed by trap rocks. Where the Sahara reaches the coast, the rocks are chiefly basalt.

#### *African Islands.*

*Descrip.* A large proportion of the islands around Africa are volcanic, and are composed of lava or basalt. Of this description are the Azores, the Canaries, where the volcanic peak of Teneriffe rises to the height of 12000 feet: also the Cape Verd Islands, St. Helena, Bourbon, &c.

*Descrip.* The longest chain of mountains on the globe, and with one exception the highest, traverses the whole length of this continent near its western side. In South America it is called the Andes: On the isthmus of Panama it sinks into a comparatively low ridge: but rises into the table land of Mexico and Gantimala, 6000 feet high; and some conical peaks shoot up much higher. Beyond Mexico this chain is prolonged in the Rocky Mountains; which rise in some places about 12,000 feet. This chain continues nearly or quite to the Northern Ocean. Parallel to the Atlantic, the Appalachian, or Allegany Mountains traverse the U. States, rarely rising more than 6000 feet and usually not more than than 2000 or 3000 feet. Detached branches from these mountains extend irregularly into Canada, Labrador, and around Hudson's Bay. The mountains which form the West Indies, may be regarded as the southerly prolongation of the Alleganies. Beyond the delta of Orinoco, they appear again in numerous ridges in Guiana and Brazil, extending to the La Plata.

*Descrip.* America is distinguished by vast plains as well as grand mountains. One of these lies along the Atlantic, of variable width, through the whole of the United States, extending to the Appalachian ridge, and occupying a wide extent through the whole of South America. A similar plain, but much narrower, occupies the western side of the continent. But the most extensive plain is the vast region lying in North America between the Appalachian chain and the Rocky Mountains. Another, almost equally vast, occurs in the heart of South America. In its northern part is a vast expanse along the Orinoco; and in the southern part, are the immense Pampas of La Plata.

#### *South America.*

*Descrip.* The basis of the vast chain of the Andes is composed essentially of gneiss and granite: but these are covered by an immense deposit of ancient volcanic rocks; such as pyroxenic porphyries, diorites, basalts, trachytes, with wacke-like conglomerates. The elevated table lands in the vicinity of this range, are covered in a measure by fossiliferous limestone, which occurs from 9000 to 14,000 feet above the ocean: and by new red sandstone, embracing ores of copper and gypsum. The lower table land is covered by diluvial detritus, embracing gold. The mountains in the central parts of America, lying east of the principal Cordilleras, are in a measure composed of various slates, with quartz rock and sandstone: the central axis being usually primary, and the slopes the older secondary. The plains between the different chains are extensively covered by tertiary strata. These strata, with white marl analogous to the lower chalk, and a sand like the green sand, are well developed on the shores of Patagonia. In Brazil, granite frequently abounds in the lower parts of the country, as well as in the mountains, where it is associated with nearly every other stratified and unstratified rock of the primary group. In short, nearly every stratified and unstratified rock on the globe, from the oldest to the newest, from granite to lava, and from gneiss to alluvium, are developed in South America on a magnificent scale, and occupy the same relative position as in other parts of the globe. *Humboldt on the Superposition of Rocks: Rozet's Geologie, p. 525.*

*Descrip.* South America has long been celebrated for its mines of gold, silver, platinum, and diamonds. In Chili the annual produce of the gold and silver mines is about \$8,500,000. More than a hundred copper mines exist, and are much more

profitable than those of gold and silver. Mines of quicksilver, lead, tin, iron, and antimony, also exist there, as well as deposits of nitre, rock salt, and coal. But mining operations are at present in a wretched state; owing to wars and political convulsions.

*Descrip.* Brazil is most celebrated for its gems, especially its diamonds. These are mostly explored in the beds of river by washing the soil. Upon the first discovery of these mines, they sent forth a thousand ounces of diamonds; which affected the market powerfully. At present the annual produce is about 22,000 carats; or 183 ounces. The Brazilian topazes and emeralds are very fine, as well as the chrysoberyl, amethyst and quartz crystals. Gold also is sought after with success in the auriferous sands. Copper ores are likewise abundant; and deposits of common salt and nitre occur.

*Descrip.* Colombia affords some diamonds; also emeralds, sapphires, hyacinths, precious garnets, turquoises, and amethysts. Great expectations have also been excited respecting gold and silver; but from 1810 to 1820, only \$2,000,000 were annually coined from the native metal: but much more might be obtained with proper management. Copper and quicksilver mines are wrought, as well as tin and rock salt; the latter yielding a revenue of \$150,000.

*Descrip.* Peru, including Bolivia or Upper Peru, is perhaps the most remarkable region on the globe for the precious metals. Gold, silver, and mercury, are the most important. The silver mountain of Potosi alone, yielded in 225 years, no less than \$1,647,901.018: and yet but a small part of it has been excavated: the whole mountain being a mass of ore: and it is 18 miles in circumference. One mine of quicksilver is 70 feet thick, and formerly yielded an immense amount. The other mines of gold and silver are very numerous; but their produce is much less than formerly, on account of the imperfect manner in which they are wrought. There are also mines of copper, lead, tin, and rock salt. Most of the mines are situated in the eastern range of the Andes, which consists of mica slate, sienite, porphyry, new red sandstone, and oolite.

#### *West Indies.*

*Descrip.* These islands appear like the fragments of a former continent; and most of them contain mountains, which, in Cuba, Hayti, and Jamaica, rise to the height of 8000 or 10,000 feet. The highest mountains in Cuba are mica slate, and through the secondary formations of the lower regions, project

gneiss, granite, and sienite. Veins of gold, silver, and copper, also occur here, and coal exists in a vein—which is a very rare occurrence. (*Philosophical Magazine*, Vol. 10, p. 160.) In the south part of Hayti is a mountain of granite. The highest part of Jamaica is composed chiefly of graywacke with trap rocks. Upon these lie red sandstone, marl, and limestone, with trap and porphyry; the whole covered by diluvium and alluvium. The eastern part of the Caribbean Group, as Tobago, Barbadoes, Antigua, Bermuda, &c. are principally composed of limestone, probably tertiary. Antigua has been described minutely by Dr. Nugent, (*Transactions of the Geological Society*, Vol. 5.) and more recently by Prof. Hovey, (*American Journal of Science*, Vol. 35, p. 75.) It consists of graywacke, (*indurated clay* of Prof. Hovey,) recent calcareous deposits, and trap. Lying above the graywacke, is a singular siliceous deposit embracing an immense number of silicified trees of every size, up to 20 inches in diameter; along with vast numbers of shells. These form most splendid agates, and admit of a high polish. (See fine specimens in Prof. Hovey's Cabinet bequeathed to Amherst College.)

*Descrip.* Prof. Hovey has also given an interesting account of the geology of St. Croix. (*Am. Journal of Science*, Vol. 35, p. 64.) He finds there the same stratified formations as occur in nearly all the West India Islands; viz. graywacke, and tertiary and alluvial limestone; but unstratified rocks are wanting. The tertiary strata consist mostly of limestone, more or less indurated, and abounding in shells and corals; many of which are identical with those now living in the ocean. A similar deposit is now forming upon the shores: and it was in this recent deposit that the human skeletons, now in the British Museum and Garden of Plants, were found. (Numerous specimens of the rocks and fossils of St. Croix and Antigua may be seen in Prof. Hovey's Collection above referred to.)

*Descrip.* The western parts of the Caribbean Islands, are mostly volcanic: such as Grenada, St. Vincent, St. Lucia, Martinique, Dominica, Gaudalope, Montserat, Nevis, St. Christophers, and Jamaica. On some of these islands no eruption has occurred within the historic period: but craters are visible, and trachytic and basaltic rocks are common.

*Descrip.* Trinidad is a continuation of the continent, and consists mostly of primary rocks. The famous Pitch Lake, three miles in circumference, has already been described.

*Gautimala and Mexico.*

*Rem.* The geology of Gautimala is very similar to that of Colombia, on the south, and of Mexico on the north; being in fact the same as that of the Andes generally; and, therefore, in this brief sketch nothing farther need be added, except to say that this country contains mines of silver and of sulphur.

*Descrip.* Mexico consists mainly of a vast and very elevated table land; being in fact a flattening down of the Andes on the south, and the Rocky Mountains on the north. This vast plain, 1500 miles over, is occasionally diversified by an elevated insulated peak, which is often a volcano, recent or extinct. The basis of the country seems to be primary rocks; such as gneiss and granite; but its upper portion is covered with porphyry and trachyte. Secondary sandstone and limestone also occur. A line of volcanos, of which there are five principal vents, traverses Mexico from east to west, about in the latitude of the capital.

*Descrip.* The rocks of Mexico are rich in gold and silver, particularly the latter. They occur in veins traversing clay slate and talcose slate, transition limestone, graywacke, and porphyry. New Spain yields annually 1,541,015 pounds Troy of silver: or two thirds of the silver which is obtained on the whole globe; and ten times as much as is produced by all the mines of Europe. The number of mines is 3000. The quantity of gold annually obtained is only 4315 pounds Troy. Tin, copper, lead, mercury and iron, are mined in Mexico to some extent and the ores are abundant. Beds of rock salt occur on the Rio Colorado.

*Westerly and Northerly Regions of America.*

*Descrip.* The regions embraced under this name are those lying west of the United States and north of the Canadas. The Rocky Mountains, which are a prolongation of the Cordilleras of South America, are the principal chain, and are composed of primary rocks with extensive secondary deposits upon their sides, among which are clay slate, graywacke and limestone. On Mackenzie River, brown coal occurs in tertiary clay. The coast of the Arctic Ocean, from Cape Lyon to Copper Mine river, is composed of clay slate covered by trap rocks; and most of this northern region is strewed over by bowlders of limestone, granite, porphyry, greenstone, &c.

*Descrip.* Melville Island, in latitude  $74^{\circ} 26'$  north, is composed of sandstone, probably of the coal formation, with re-

mains of coal plants of a tropical character. Around Hudson's Bay, are found all the great classes of rocks, except the tertiary; and almost every other variety found in the other parts of North America.

*Descrip.* No part of the extensive regions above described appear to be truly volcanic, except a strip between the Rocky Mountains and the Pacific Ocean. Whether any recent volcanos exist there, may be doubtful: But genuine lava is brought from thence, as well as trachyte, and other volcanic productions; and immense deposits of basalt, massive and columnar, are found along the principal rivers. Volcanic mounds, cracked at the top, and surrounded by fissures, are numerous over the whole region. This is probably a continuation northward of the great volcanic chain of the Cordilleras of South America and Mexico.

*Descrip.* The mineral treasures of this region have been but imperfectly explored. Near the head of Salmon River, on the west side of the Rocky Mountains, Rev. Mr. Parker saw a bed of pure rock salt, among strata which he says resemble the description of those at Wieliczka in Poland. He used the salt and found it good. The great salt lake in the same region farther south, contains so much salt that it is deposited in large quantities on the shore. Epsom salts occur also, on both sides of the Rocky Mountains, in thick incrustations in the bottoms of ponds, which have been evaporated in the summer. *Exploring Tour Beyond the Rocky Mountains, p. 328, second Edition, Ithaca, 1840.* Beds of rock salt occur in other places besides those mentioned above west of the Rocky Mountains and of great thickness. *Prof. H. D. Roger's Report to the British Association at the Fourth Annual Meeting.*

#### *United States and British America.*

*Rem.* A more accurate idea can be given of the geology of this vast region, by considering the United States and the British possessions as a single extended district.

*Descrip.* In proceeding southeasterly from the coast of Labrador, we meet ere long with ranges of mountains, at first not high, having a southwest and northeast direction. On the south shore of the St. Lawrence they become very elevated, forming in fact the northeastern termination of the Allegany range. In the northern part of Maine they rise to the height of 5300 feet; and in New Hampshire, (the White hills) 6234 feet. The western side of this range forms the eastern side of Lakes Champlain and George, and the valley of Hudson river.

The range occupies all New England, and extends southwest-  
erly into the middle and southern states, crossing the Hudson  
at the Highlands; and in Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia,  
North Carolina, South Carolina, and Tennessee, forming sever-  
al parallel and lofty ranges of mountains: four of which are  
sometimes reckoned; distinguished as well by their physical  
features, as by their geology. The most easterly, Prof. Rogers  
denominates the *Eastern System* of mountains: the next  
in order, the *Blue Ridge System*: the third, the *Appalachian*  
and the last the *Alleghany System*. They rise in Black Moun-  
tain in North Carolina, to the height of 6,476 feet, and in  
Roan Mountain, 6,234 feet.

*Descrip.* On the north shore of the St. Lawrence, are two  
ranges of mountains running parallel to the river; one at the  
distance of 15 or 20 miles, and the other 200 miles distant.  
On the west side of Lake Champlain, is a remarkable developement  
of these mountains, in Essex county in New York; where they rise to the height of 5,400 feet. From Essex County  
these mountains stretch to Kingston in Upper Canada, where they become blended with another low range, which has  
been traced by Dr. Bigsby along the northern shores of Ontario, Simcoe, and Huron, and probably extends nearly or quite  
to the Rocky Mountains. These latter mountains form the  
western boundary of the region under consideration.

*Descrip.* The vast region of comparatively level country be-  
tween the Rocky and Allegany Mountains, forms the valley of  
the Mississippi. At its southern extremity, this valley unites  
with the Atlantic Slope. This slope is several hundred miles  
wide at its southern extremity, but becomes gradually narrower  
until it terminates at New York; with the exception of Long  
Island, Nantucket and Martha's Vineyard.

*Descrip.* The way is now prepared for explaining the simple  
and grand outlines of the geology of this wide region. All  
the mountainous region east of Hudson river, even to Labrador,  
with some few exceptions to be noticed subsequently, is  
composed of primary rocks: such as gneiss, mica slate, tal-  
cose slate, quartz rock, and limestone; intersected and up-  
heaved by granite, sienite, porphyry, and greenstone. South  
of the Hudson, this primary range is continued, as the High-  
lands, through New Jersey and Pennsylvania, where it termi-  
nates. Its southeastern border passes near New York City,  
including Staten Island, and extending to Perth Amboy. Here  
it is covered by red sandstone, until near Trenton it reappears  
and forms a second band of primary rocks, parallel to that just  
described as terminating in Pennsylvania, and separated from

it by a trough of red sandstone. This most easterly belt, from 80 to 100 miles wide, ranges through Virginia, North and South Carolina, and Georgia, as far as Alabama river, where it passes beneath the alluvium of the Mississippi valley. On the southeast side, these primary rocks are covered by the cretaceous and tertiary strata of the Atlantic slope.

*Descrip.* The mountains of Essex County, on the west of Lake Champlain, are composed chiefly of Labrador feldspar and hypersthene rock: similar to the rocks in the northern part of Lower Canada, and the coast of Labrador: and a similar rock is found north of the lakes in Upper Canada: so that probably they may form a connected range almost across the continent. Nearly all the rocks in Upper Canada appear to be primary. The only other primary rocks in the United States, of much extent, are the Ozark mountains west of the Mississippi.

*Descrip.* It appears then, that the great central basin of the United States is surrounded by primary rocks, except on the south. The rocks which rest on the primary over most of this vast area, consist of clay slate, transition limestone, and the varieties of that group usually denominated graywacke. Mr. Conrad and Vanuxem are of opinion, that the recent divisions of this group, can easily be distinguished here, especially the Silurian. Professor H. D. Rogers points out eleven different varieties of these rocks below the coal measures, whose aggregate thickness is more than 5 1-2 miles: yet obviously all belonging to the same geological formation: that is, deposited during the same geological period. These rocks constitute all the ranges of the Allegany mountains that have been described, except the Eastern System of mountains which is primary.

*Descrip.* It is a remarkable fact, that while in Europe gypsum and rock salt are usually found in the new red sandstone group lying above the coal measures, in this country gypsum and brine springs, so far as ascertained, are universally situated in the rocks beneath the coal formation.

*Descrip.* In many parts of the vast deposit of transition rocks that have been described, a regular coal formation rests upon them; and it is a singular fact, that the coal along the southeastern part of the great valley of the Mississippi, is usually destitute of bitumen; and as we recede from the primary strata, it becomes more and more bituminous.

*Descrip.* Some of these coal deposits are among the largest yet discovered in the world. The anthracite deposit of Pottsville, is 60 miles long and about five broad: that of Shamokin, commencing near Lehigh, is of the same length and width: and that of Wilkesbarre, is 40 miles long and two miles broad.

In some instances a single seam of coal in these strata is 60 feet thick; and near the middle of the valley, between the Sharp and Broad Mountains, no less than 65 seams have been counted. The bituminous coal field, embracing the western part of Pennsylvania, and a part of Ohio, extends over an area of 24000 square miles: the largest accumulation of carbonaceous matter probably in the world. In fact the bituminous coal measures can probably be traced almost continuously, from Pennsylvania to the Mississippi, and even into Missouri, 200 miles west of that river. Indeed, coal exists on the eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains: and it would not be strange if this should be found to be the western outcrop of coal bearing strata, whose eastern extremity is in Pennsylvania. At any rate, it is certain that extensive seams of bituminous coal exist in Pennsylvania, Virginia, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Tennessee, Alabama, and Missouri. The world cannot furnish a parallel to this immense mass of carbonaceous matter, to say nothing of the smaller deposits in Henrico, Chesterfield, and Prince Edward Counties in Virginia; those in Nova Scotia and New Brunswick; and that of anthracite in Rhode Island and Massachusetts. The identity of nearly all these formations with the coal measures of Europe, seems now to be pretty satisfactorily made out.

*Descrip.* It has been intimated that there are some exceptions to the general statement that the whole country between Hudson river and Labrador is primary. Thus, along the St. Lawrence, is a deposit of black fossiliferous limestone. All the northern part of Nova Scotia is composed of secondary sandstone, embracing gypsum and salt springs, with overlying trap, and underlaid by clay slate; while between the sandstone and the slate are coal measures. Coal is also found in the interior of New Brunswick, along with graywacke and clay slate; but how extensive are these formations it does not yet appear. In the eastern part of Maine, fossiliferous rocks occur. In Rhode Island and the eastern part of Massachusetts, are interrupted patches of a rock analogous to graywacke, and containing anthracite. In the valley of Connecticut river also, strata of red sandstone occur, with protruding greenstone.

*Descrip.* In going south of the Hudson river, the same red sandstone just described, as occurring in Nova Scotia and the valley of Connecticut river, appears in New Jersey; where it forms a wide belt southeast of the Highlands. Thence it passes through Pennsylvania, from Buck to York Counties: thence into Frederick County, in Maryland; thence into Virginia;

thence into North Carolina; and probably still farther south. Throughout the whole extent of this deposit, from Nova Scotia to Virginia, ores of copper, bituminous shale and limestones, and protruding masses of greenstone, are associated with it. In Virginia the deposit appeared to be eminently calcareous; and one of its lowest beds is the well known brecciated Potomac marble.

*Descrip.* I have for many years been in the habit of regarding this rock as the equivalent of the European New Red Sandstone Formation; and have so named it in my Reports on the Geology of Massachusetts. The geologists of our country however, have generally hesitated to adopt this opinion: though they admit that this deposit belongs to the newer secondary strata. But the more I examine, the stronger evidence I find, that it is the new red sandstone. There is not room in this work to state fully the grounds of this opinion. But the main argument is as follows. Prof. W. B. and H. D. Rogers seem to have shown, that this rock in New Jersey, Pennsylvania and Virginia, lies above the coal formation. Now in Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New Jersey, fossil fishes have been found in it with heterocercal tails, of the genus *Palaeoniscus*. Hence, according to Agassiz, this rock must be older than the oolite; because fish with such tails do not occur as high as the oolite. If, therefore, this formation lies above the coal formation, and below the oolite, it must be the new red sandstone.

*Descrip.* Prof. W. B. Rogers has found a sandstone in Virginia, which may be of the same age as the European Oolite. But nowhere else in this country has this formation been identified. Very extensive strata occur, however, which have been referred by our geologists, on account of their organic remains, to the cretaceous group. They are entirely wanting in chalk, which gives the name to the European series; and consist in this country of sands, sandstones, marls, and limestone. In New Jersey, Delaware, and Maryland, they are characterized by the green sand, which is so valuable as a fertilizer. Farther south they consist almost wholly of marls and limestones. From these strata Dr. Morton has enumerated 108 species of Zoophyta, mollusca, and echinodermata: only one of which is common to this country and Europe. But there is such a resemblance between the genera, and those of the chalk, that it is supposed the rocks must belong to the cretaceous period. Several interesting genera of saurians, tortoises and fishes, also, occur in these rocks; among which are the *plesiosaurus*, *ichthyosaurus*, *mososaurus* and the *batrachiosaurus*. Among the fishes are several species of sharks; some of which are common to the chalk formation of England.

**Descrip.** The cretaceous rocks of this country probably commence as far east as the islands of Nantucket and Martha's Vineyard, which they may underlie, as well as Long Island; although hidden by diluvial and tertiary strata. In New Jersey they form a belt across the state, which stretches across Delaware, Maryland, North and South Carolina, Georgia and Alabama. They also occupy large tracts in Mississippi, Louisiana, Tennessee, Arkansas, and Missouri. A large part of many of these southern states is occupied by this formation.

**Descrip.** The principal tertiary deposits of the United States occur along the Atlantic coast of the southern states to the southeast of the cretaceous rocks just described. These tertiary groups however, commence as far east as the island of Martha's Vineyard, on the coast of Massachusetts; where they are well developed, and seem to belong to the eocene period. They next appear in the southeast part of New Jersey; from whence they extend almost continuously through the eastern portions of Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, and North Carolina; and in interrupted patches through South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, and Louisiana. Mr. Conrad and others suppose that they are able to distinguish in this vast area of our tertiary formations, the four groups which are recognized in Europe; viz. the Newer Pliocene, the Older Pliocene, the Miocene, and the Eocene.

**Descrip.** The tertiary rocks of the United States occupy nearly all the level parts of the southern states, east of the Alleghany range, and the southern part of the Mississippi valley. Hence we learn that that they are of vast extent.

**Descrip.** The diluvium of the United States has already been sufficiently described in Section VI.

**Descrip.** The most extensive alluvial deposit in this country is the Delta of the Mississippi. But similar deposits exist along the banks and at the mouths of all our larger streams.

**Descrip.** Either in alluvial or diluvial formations, the following extinct species of the higher orders of mammalia have been found. *Elephas primigenius* occurs in Kentucky, South Carolina, New Jersey, Maryland, and Mississippi: *mastodon maximus* in Kentucky, New York, Virginia, New Jersey, Connecticut, Mississippi, Ohio, Indiana and most of the western states: *megatherium* on Skiddaway Island, coast of Georgia; *megalonyx* in Virginia and Kentucky; several species of ox in Kentucky, and Mississippi; *Cervus Americanus*, or fossil elk, in Kentucky, and New Jersey: *walrus* in Virginia. Mr. Cooper estimates that the specimens already carried away from the Big Bone Lick in Kentucky, must have belonged to 100 skeletons of

Mastodon, 20 of the elephant, one of the megalonyx, 3 of the ox, and 2 of the elk. He is of opinion that these remains occur in diluvium. But at some other localities it is not improbable they may have become extinct still more recently.

*Descrip.* No evidence of volcanic agency in this country east of the Rocky Mountains, since the protrusion of greenstone, has yet been found. Pumice does indeed float down the Missouri : but it probably comes from the Rocky Mountains. Thermal Springs also occur on the western borders of Massachusetts ; and near Seneca falls in New York : and Dr. Daubeny considers the mineral springs at Ballston and Saratoga as thermal ; likewise numerous and abundant springs west of the Blue Ridge in Virginia, whose maximum temperature is 102° F : in Buncombe county, North Carolina, with a temperature of 125° : in Arkansas near the river Washita, 200 miles west of the Mississippi, where are not less than 70 springs with a temperature from 118° to 148°. *Daubeny's Sketch of the Geology of North America, Oxford, 1839.* p. 69.

*Descrip.* The mineral resources of the United States and the British Possessions have as yet only begun to be developed. The most important mineral in an economical point of view, is coal ; but the extent of our coal fields and mining operations has already been given on pages 58 and 313. Details respecting the brine springs of the Western States and Upper Canada have likewise been presented on page 181. The coast of Massachusetts and Maine furnishes a vast supply of beautiful granite. Vast deposits of the most beautiful porphyry also occur in Massachusetts, and of serpentine and steatite in various states ; as well as inexhaustible supplies of primary and transition marbles.

*Descrip.* An extensive deposit of gold exists in the primary range of strata extending from the river Coosa in Alabama, to the Rappahannock river in Virginia. The metal occurs in veins of porous quartz, traversing gneiss, mica slate, and especially talcose slate. It is found also in the detrital deposit covering the rocks. Silver has sometimes been found in connection with the gold, as well as lead and copper. Even as far north as Somerset in Vermont, gold occurs in the quartz traversing talco-micaceous slate : and probably it exists in the space intermediate between this place and Virginia. The value of gold sent to the mint from the gold region of the United States from 1823 to 1836 was 4,377,500 dollars ; and it was thought that this was not more than one half of the actual product of the mines.

*Descrip.* The principal deposit of lead in the United States

is in a limestone of the older secondary formations, in Missouri, Wisconsin, and Illinois. Much of it is obtained also, from the detritus above the rock. The Missouri mines produce annually about 3,000,000 pounds: and the mines on the Upper Mississippi, about 8,000,000 pounds. Lead exists also abundantly in granite in Hampshire county in Massachusetts; as well as at Rossie in New York, and in smaller quantities at other localities. Copper is common in the new red sand stone, near its junction with the trap, in Massachusetts, Connecticut, New Jersey, Virginia, &c. but it has not yet been extensively explored. Zinc abounds in New Jersey in the form of red oxide and the Franklinite: also in the form of a sulphuret in Massachusetts and Pennsylvania. But it has not been much explored. Tin has been found only in single crystals in Massachusetts, and recently in Connecticut: but there is reason to hope that it may be found in workable veins.

*Descrip.* The deposits of specular iron ore in Missouri, are among the largest on the globe. They are connected with porphyry, and are separated from the metaliferous transition limestone of that region, by a deposit of granite with trap dykes, six miles in width. Pilot Knob, which rises 500 feet, is partly, and the Iron Mountain, 300 feet high, and 2 miles in circumference, is entirely composed of this ore. Vast deposits of iron ore exist also in the northern parts of New York; and sufficient for present use is found in almost every part of the country. The primary regions of New England, New Jersey and Pennsylvania, abound especially in the magnetic oxide. In 1830 the quantity of pig and bar iron manufactured in the United States was 304,396 tons: which since that time, has been greatly increased. In Nova Scotia are valuable mines of iron.

*Descrip.* The gems or precious stones of this country have as yet excited but little attention, because the expence of cutting them here is so much greater than in Europe. Hence we cannot say, in many cases, whether our localities will furnish elegant specimens or not. It may be well, however, to mention the most important. It has been often stated that the diamond has been found in North Carolina. (*Feuchtwanger's Treatise on Gems*, p. 67.) The blue sapphire occurs in Orange County, New York, in New Jersey, North Carolina, and Connecticut: the chrysoberyl at Haddam in Connecticut, and in Saratoga county, New York; the spinel, especially the blue variety, in Orange county, New York; as well as in Massachusetts: the topaz at Monroe, in Connecticut, in great quantity, but coarse: the beryl in a variety of places; but pure enough for jewelry, at Royalston in Massachusetts, and at Haddam in

Connecticut (at the former place a rare variety can hardly be distinguished from the chrysolite) : the zircon or hyacinth in the northern part of Vermont, in Canada, and North Carolina : the garnet in almost every part of the primary region of our country ; and the pyrope especially, of great beauty, at Sturbridge, in Massachusetts : the cinnamon stone, a variety of garnet, at Carlisle in the same state : the green and red tourmaline, of great beauty, at Paris in Maine ; also at Chesterfield in Massachusetts ; limpid quartz at Little Falls and Fairfield in New York, and a multitude of other localities : the smoky quartz in a variety of places ; as at Canton, Connecticut, Williamsburgh, and Brookfield, Massachusetts : the amethyst in Nova Scotia is very fine, and at Bristol Rhode Island, and many other places : jasper in a great variety of places : hornstone and chalcedony of various sorts, forming agates, in the trap ranges of the eastern states, along the shores of lake Superior, &c : chrysoprase at New Fane, Vermont : iolite at Haddam, Connecticut, and Brimfield, Massachusetts : adularia of various colors in Brimfield, Southbridge, &c. Massachusetts : Labrador in Essex County, New York, hypersthene at the same place : kyanite at Chesterfield, Massachusetts : fluor spar in the northern part of New York ; Satin spar at Newbury, &c. precious serpentine at the same place : red oxide of titanium at Middletown, Connecticut, and Windsor and Barre, Massachusetts.

#### *General Inferences.*

*Inf.* 1. It appears that the axes of all the principal chains of mountains on the globe, are composed of primary rocks, stratified and unstratified ; while the secondary series lie upon their flanks, at a lower level ; and the tertiary strata at a still lower level.

*Inf.* 2. Hence a similar process of the elevation of continents at successive epochs, has been going on in all parts of the world.

*Inf.* 3. Hence there is every reason to believe that continents once above the waters, have sunk beneath them, as those now above the waters were gradually raised : for since the quantity of matter in the globe has always remained the same, its diameter cannot be enlarged permanently ; and therefore as one part rose, other parts must sink.

*Inf.* 4. Hence the geology of any district, that embraces all the principal groups of rocks, affords us a type of the geology of the globe. This is what we should expect from the uniform-

ity and constancy of nature's operations; and facts show that such is the case.

*Inf. 5.* Hence we have no reason to expect, that new discoveries in unexplored parts of the earth, will essentially change the important principles of geology. Slight modifications of those principles are all that can reasonably be expected from future researches.

## INDEX.

### A.

Abyssinia, geology of, 304.  
Actynolite Schist, 61.  
Africa, geology of, 304.  
—, eastern and central, geology of, 305.  
Agassiz, work on fishes, 282. His classification of fishes, 129.  
Age of rocks, how determined, 76.  
Agency of man, 203.  
Alleghany Mountains, 312.  
Alluvium defined, 30.  
Alps, curved strata in, 34.  
Alumina in the earth, 40.  
Alluvium, its lithological character, 47.  
Alluvial Sandstone, conglomerate and Breccia, 50.  
Algae, fossil, 104.  
Aleutian islands, 217.  
Ammonites in the strata, 99.  
— sketch of, 125.  
Amazon, delta of, 164.  
America, geology of, 306. Westerly and Northerly parts of, their geology, 310.  
American geology, history of, 282.  
Geological society, 283. Geologists, association of, 284.  
Amygdaloid described, 70.  
Andesite described, 69.  
Andesitic lava, 75.  
Animals in the rocks, 113. Articulated, 120. Ancient, many lost, 160. Adapted to the changing condition of the earth, 262.  
Animaleculæ living, 118. Fossil, 119.  
Antarctic Continent, geology of, 304.  
Anaplotherium, 141.

Annularia of Mansfield, sketch of, 110.  
Anthracite, where found, 43.  
Antigua, geology of, 309.  
Antimony, its uses and position, 45.  
Anticlinal axis, 29.  
Aqueous agency early, 182.  
Apothemite, described, 50.  
Apteryx, 203.  
Ararat, an extinct volcano, 226.  
Arsenic, its ores and situation, 45.  
Argillaceous strata described, 60.  
Artesian wells, 179.  
Arabian writers on geology, 277.  
Arabia, geology of, 297.  
Asia, geology of, 296.  
Asteroids nebulous, 251.  
Asphaltum, 177.  
Astronomy, apparent discrepancy of, with revelation, 273.  
Augustine, his views of creation, 271.  
Auvergne, extinct volcanos in, 225.  
Augite rock, 69. Porphyry, 69. And hornblende, their identity, 64.  
Axis folded, 33.  
Azores, 271.

### B.

Babbage on the propagation of heat, 240.  
Bailey, Prof. his discoveries respecting fossil animalculæ, 119.  
Baltic, its shores rising, 222.  
Bannat, geology of, 295.  
Barbary, geology of, 304.  
Basalt described, 70. Where found, 42.  
Bed of rock defined, 11.

Beaumont *Etude*, on the elevation  
     of mountains, 153.  
 Beaumont's theory of elevation, 241.  
 Beaches how formed, 172.  
 Becquerel on metallic veins, 257.  
 Belgium, geology of, 292.  
 Belemnite, 126.  
 Belemnosepia, sketch of, 127.  
 Benevolence of the Deity proved, 260.  
 Bismuth, its ores, &c. 45.  
 Bitumen, 50.  
 Birds, fossil, 138. Their tracks, 138, 147.  
 Bone caverns, 139. Cavern in  
     Vermont, 140. Buckland's de-  
     scription of, 139.  
 Boxes of the fallen angels, 277.  
 Borings for water, 180.  
 Boston Harbor, sketch in, 171.  
 Bowlders defined, 51. Their size, 189.  
 Bowditch, his opinion on internal  
     heat, 236.  
 British America, geology of, 311.  
 Brongniart, A. His classification of  
     rocks, 35. On the tertiary strata, 53.  
 Brönn's works, 282.  
 Bruce, Dr. A., his journal, 283.  
 Buckland on metallic veins, 257.  
 Buffon's theory of the earth, 279.  
 Burnet's do, 278.  
 Bush, Prof., his exegesis of day,  
     268. Views of creation, 270.

C.

Calamites, sketch of, 107.  
 Calcareous tufa, 47.  
 Camel, fossil, 143.  
 Cape May, worn away, 169. Eliza-  
     beth, light houses on, 170. Ann,  
     light houses on, 171.  
 Carbon in the earth, 39. Its vegeta-  
     ble origin, 44.  
 Caribbean islands, geology of, 309.  
 Cataclysm of the Egyptians, 276.  
 Catcott on the deluge, 279.  
 Cephalaspis, sketch of, 130.  
 Ceylon, geology of, 301.  
 Chambered shells, 123.  
 Changes improve the condition of  
     the globe, 161.  
 Chemistry of geology, 39.  
 Chemical deposits, 54.

Chirotherium, tracks of, 147.  
 Chili, its coast elevated, 212.  
 China, geology of, 302.  
 Chlorite slate, 61.  
 Chlorine in the earth, 39.  
 Cipolin, 74.  
 Claystone, 63.  
 Claystones in clay, 14.  
 Claystone porphyry, 69.  
 Clay where found, 42.  
 Clay slate system described, 59, 60.  
 Classification of rocks, 30. Prin-  
     ciples of, 37.  
 Cleavage, 17.  
 Cleaveland, Prof. his works, 283.  
 Climate of Europe, whether chang-  
     ed, 204. Of early times tropical,  
     102. Ultra tropical, 103. Grad-  
     ually sunk, 104.  
 Clinometer, 27.  
 Clinkstone, 68. Porphyry, 69.  
 Coal, its accumulation, 262. Basin,  
     sketch of, 179. Measures, 57.  
     In Great Britain, 58. In the  
     United States, 58. Where found  
     in the rocks, 43. Its mode of oc-  
     currence, 43. Deposits of the U.  
     States, 313.  
 Cobalt, its ores and situation, 45.  
 Coincidences between geology and  
     revealed religion, 264.  
 Columnar structure, 26.  
 Comets, their nature, 251.  
 Comparative anatomy, its use, 52.  
 Compact feldspar, 68.  
 Conifers and Cycadeæ, 110.  
 Coniferous plants in the rocks, 91.  
 Conchology defined, 123.  
 Concretions of iron ore, 15. Con-  
     cretions in unstratified rocks, 25.  
     At Sandy Bay, Nahant and Wor-  
     cester, 26.  
 Connecticut river, its bed, 165.  
     Valley, 167.  
 Constancy of nature, 162.  
 Consolidation of rocks, 209. In  
     Pownal, Vermont. In West  
     Stockbridge, Mass. Cornwall,  
     Eng. and coast of Asia Minor,  
     210.  
 Continents elevated from the sea,  
     152. At different times, 152.  
 Conybeare's classification of rocks, 34.  
 Coprolites, 132.  
 Copper, its ores and situation, 45.

Coral reefs, 204, 47, 49. Their extent, 206.  
 Cornean, 69.  
 Cosiguina, volcano of, 214.  
 Cosmogony, hypotheses of, 276.  
 Cotopaxi, lava thrown from, 216.  
 Cotta, Dr., on fossil foot marks, 149.  
 Craters defined, 25.  
 Crater of elevation, 115.  
 Creation, progressive, 265. Of six days, 270. Numerous centers of, 272.  
 Cretaceous system, 55. Of Egypt and United States, 87. Rocks of U. States, 316.  
 Crinoideans, 114.  
 Croatia, geology of, 295.  
 Crocodile, fossil, 137.  
 Crustaceans, fossil, 121.  
 Crust of the globe, derived from animals, 161. Its thickness, 235.  
 Currents, oceanic, 173. Their velocity and effects, 174.  
 Cuttle fish, 127.  
 Cuvier on the tertiary strata, 53. His works, 281.  
 Cycas, sketch of, 112.

D.  
 Days of creation, supposed long periods, 268.  
 Dathe, 270.  
 Daubeny, on thermal springs, 224.  
 Dead Sea, its origin, 215, 225.  
 Death before the fall, 273. Results from the constitution of animals, 274. Penal in the case of man, 274. Threatened only to man, 275.  
 Deer, fossil, 143.  
 De La Beche's classification of rocks, 34.  
 Delos, 916.  
 Delta of the Mississippi, Rhone, Nile, Amazon, Ganges, &c. 164.  
 Deluge of Noah, 205, 267. The supposed cause of most geological changes, 278. Opinions concerning, 282.  
 Denmark, geology of, 291.  
 Deposition of rocks, horizontal, 63.  
 Detritus of Rocks, 163.  
 Diamond, where found, 44.  
 Dillage rock, 74.  
 Diluvium, or drift defined, 30, 51.

Consolidated, 52. Its dispersion, 183. In Nova Scotia, 183. In Massachusetts and New York, 184. In the Western States, 185. In Europe and South America, 186. Organic remains in, 189.  
 Diluvial elevations and depressions 187. Sketches of 188. Valleys on Holyoke, 193. Sand and clay, 52, 192. Grooves, 190. Agency, 182. Action, first and second theories of, 194. Third do. 195. Fourth do. 197. Fifth do. 199. Sixth and seventh do. 201. Beneficial, 261.  
 Dinothrium, sketch of, 146.  
 Diorite, 69.  
 Dioritic porphyry, 69.  
 Dip of strata, 26.  
 Dipodichnites, 151.  
 Discrepancy, supposed between geology and revelation, 266.  
 Divisional structures, 16.  
 Divine character perfect, 260.  
 Disturbances geological, beneficial, 260.  
 Dodo, 203.  
 Dolerite, 69.  
 Domite, described, 70.  
 Doederlin, his views of creation, 270.  
 Downs or Dunes, 172.  
 Drift wood, 208.  
 Drongs on Jewell's Island, 169.  
 Dykes, 21. Of trap in England, 22. In Cohasset, Mass. 22. In Salem, Mass. 23.  
 Dynamics of volcanos, 215. Table of, 216. Of geological causes, 162.

E.  
 Earth, its form, 10. Specific gravity, 10. Earliest condition, 250. Future destruction of, 265. Existed long before man, 266.  
 Earthquakes, their proximate cause, 220. Their precursors, 220. Their effects, 221.  
 East Indian Archipelago, geology of, 302.  
 Ecyprosis of the Greeks, 276.  
 Egypt, geology of, 304.  
 Ehrenberg, his discoveries, 84, 118.  
 Elevation of strata, 28.  
 Elevations and subsidences, alternation of, 155.

Elevation of continents, 152. Of the coast of Chili, 222. Of continents, the cause of, 239.

Elements in the earth, 39.

Elephant in frozen mud in Siberia, 88.

Elk, Irish, 203.

Encrinites, 114.

England, geology of, 288.

Encrinial limestone, 58.

English channel, how formed, 169.

Eocene strata, 53.

Epoch, geological, defined, 51. Of elevation, 153.

Eruptions of volcanos, their number, 213. Phenomena of, 214.

Etna, eruptions of, 214. Quantity of lava from, 216.

Fuphotide, 74.

Eurite, 63.

**F.**

Fallopio on organic remains, 277.

Fault defined, 28.

Ferns, 105.

Firestone, 61.

Fingal's cave, 72.

Fishes, 129. Their distribution in the strata, 129, 130.

Fluorine in the earth, 39.

Folded axis, 33.

Fool's gold, 46.

Formation defined, 27.

Fossil footmarks, 146. Synoptical view of, 151.

Fossiliferous rocks, their extent, 84. How deposited, 86.

Fourier on heat, 236.

Fox on metallic veins, 25, 67.

Fracastoro on geology, 277.

France, geology of, 292.

Fucoides, 105.

Fumerole, 212.

**G.**

Gabbro, 74.

Galt, 56.

Ganges, delta of, 163.

Gangue of a vein, 255.

Gay Head, strata of, 53.

Gas springs, 182.

Gaudaloupe, human skeleton from, 309.

Gantimala, geology of, 310.

Geine and geates, 206.

Gems in the U. States, 318.

Geology defined, 9.

Geognosy, 9.

Geogony, 9.

Geological maps and sections, 79.

Geology and revealed religion, 264.

Geographical Geology, 288.

Germany, geology of, 295.

Geysers of Iceland, &c. 210.

Giant's Causeway, 73.

Globe, its early hypothetical state, 250.

Gneiss porphyritic, 63.

Gold, where found, 44, 45. In the United States, 317.

Goldfuss on petrifications, 282.

Gorge defined, 29.

Granite where found, 42.

Graphite, where found, 43.

Graphite slate, 60.

Graywacke system described, 59.

Granite described, 66.

Granité, porphyritic and graphic, 66. Graphic of Goshen, 67.

Greece, geology of, 296.

Greenland, its shores sinking, 223.

Greenstone, where found, 42. In Connecticut and Massachusetts, 25. Described, 69. Columnar, 71. And basalt, at Giant's causeway and Titan's pier, 71. At Fingal's cave, 72. At Titan's piazza, 73. Of Rowan County, South Carolina, 73. Of Hudson river, 74. Columnar, their origin, 74.

Graystone lava, 75.

Green sand, analysis of, 56. Use of, in Agriculture, 56. Description of, 55.

Gres bigarre, 57.

Group defined, 29.

Greystone lava, 75.

Gypsum, where found, 42. Sought in the wrong place, 46. How deposited, 211.

**H.**

Halloy's classification of rocks, 35.

Hebard, Rev. Story, specimens from, 297.

Hensler, his exegesis of the days of creation, 268.

Herculanum buried, 214.

Hindostan, geology of, 300.

Hippopotamus, fossil, 143.

History of geology, 276.

Holland, geology of, 292.

**Hooke's theory of the earth, 278.**  
**Hornblende rock, 69.**  
**Hornblende slate, 61. Hornblende and Augite identical, 64.**  
**Hornitos, 215.**  
**Hornstone, 69.**  
**Hornstone porphyry, 69.**  
**Horsley, his exegesis, 263.**  
**Horse fossil, 143.**  
**Hovey, Prof. on the W. Indies 309.**  
**Human remains, 95. Skeleton in rock, 309.**  
**Hungary, geology of, 295.**  
**Hutchinson's theory of the earth, 279.**  
**Hutton's theory of the earth, 280.**  
**Hutton and Lindley on fossil plants, 282.**  
**Hyæna fossil, 143.**  
**Hydrate of iron, 50, 177. Of Manganese, 50, 177.**  
**Hydrogen in the earth, 39.**  
**Hypersthene rock, 69.**

**I.**

**Icebergs, 163.**  
**Ice preserved by lava, 218.**  
**Ichnolithology, 146.**  
**Ichnolites classified, 151.**  
**Ichthyosaurus, sketch of, 133.**  
**Igneous agency defined, 211.**  
**Iguanodon fossil, 135.**  
**Iguanodon, sketch of, 136.**  
**Inclination of strata, 26.**  
**India further, geology of, 300.**  
**Infusoria, their skeletons, 84. In Andover, &c. 84. Living, 118. Fossil, 119. Sketch of, 120.**  
**Insects, fossil, 120.**  
**Instability the means of stability, 263.**  
**Intensity of geological agencies, 252.**  
**Internal heat of the earth, 231.**  
**Internal heat, objections to, 246.**  
**Interior of the earth, its state, 134, 235.**  
**Ireland, geology of, 290.**  
**Iron in the Earth, 40. Its ores, 44. Pyrites, 46. In U. States, 318. Mountain in Missouri, 318.**  
**Islands volcanic, 217. Recent, 216.**  
**Italian writers, 279.**  
**Italy, geology of, 293.**

**J.**

**Jameson, Prof. his views of creation, 268.**  
**Japan, geology of, 302.**  
**Joints defined, 16. Their origin, 18.**  
**Jorullo, volcanic, 213.**  
**Jupiter, perhaps covered by water, 251..**

**K.**

**Keith, his theory of the days of creation, 268.**  
**Kirauea, sketch of, 219.**  
**Knapp, his exegesis of the history of Creation, 270.**

**L.**

**Lakes, bursting of, 168.**  
**Lamark's hypothesis of transmutation of species, 91.**  
**Lamination defined, 11. Its origin, 13.**  
**Laminae of Gneiss, 12. Of clay, 13.**  
**Landslips, 162.**  
**Lapland, geology of, 291.**  
**Lava, where found, 42. Described, 65, 75. Trachytic, 75. Augitic or Basaltic, 75. Greystone, 75. Vitrous, 75. Molten, its character, 217.**  
**Lead, its ores and situation, 45.**  
**Lead in U. States, 317.**  
**Lebanon Mt. geology of, 297.**  
**Leibnitz, his theory of the earth, 278.**  
**Lepidodendron, sketch of, 107.**  
**Lester, on British shells, 278.**  
**Lias described, 57.**  
**Lignite where found, 43.**  
**Lily Encrinite, sketch of, 115.**  
**Lime in the earth, 40.**  
**Limestone, where found, 42. Primary, 62. Dr. Eumon's views of, 58. Mountain, 58.**  
**Lindley, Prof. on fossil plants, 282. His experiments on the preservation of plants, 112.**  
**London geological society, 281.**  
**Ludus Helmontii, 15.**  
**Lycopodiaceae, 106.**  
**Lyell's classification of rocks, 34. His theory of ancient climate, 231. Of causes in action, 252. Objections to internal heat, 248.**

M.

Macculloch's classification, 34.  
MacLure's map of the U. States, 79.  
Magnesia in the earth, 40.  
Malpais, eruption in, 215.  
Mammalia, 138. Fossil of U. States, 316.  
Mammoth, sketch of, 192.  
Man, when first appeared on the earth, 95. The last animal created, 265.  
Man's geological agency, 203.  
Manganese, its use and position, 45.  
Mantell's classification, 35. Maps geological, 79. Of various countries, 79.  
Marl, where found, 42. Alluvial, 175, 176. Its use and position, 47, 48.  
Mastodon's teeth, sketch of, 142.  
Matrix of a vein, 255.  
Mattioli on organic remains, 277.  
Megalonyx, 145.  
Megalosaurus, 134.  
Megatherium, sketch of, 145.  
Metaphyre, 69.  
McIville Island, geology of, 310.  
Mercati on organic remains, 257.  
Mercury, where found, 44, 45.  
Merrimack, its alluvial matter, 165.  
Metallic veins, character and repletion of 254.  
Metalloids in the earth, 39.  
Metals in the earth, 39. Where found, 44. The mode in which they occur, 44. Their distribution, 261.  
Mexico, geology of, 310.  
Mica slate described, 62.  
Milton, his views of creation, 270.  
Mineral waters, 180.  
Minerals defined, 9. In the rocks, 41. Useful, their situation in the rocks, 42.  
Mines, temperature of, 242.  
Miocene strata, 53.  
Mississippi, delta of, 164.  
Mitchell, Dr. S. L., 282.  
Mollusca living, 123.  
Monkey fossil, 143.  
Moon volcanic, 251.  
Mosaic account of creation, 266.  
Mososaurus, 134.

Mosses, 105.  
Mountain limestone, 58.  
Mountains, 10. Of Europe elevated at different epochs, 153.  
Murchison's classification, 36.  
Muschelkalk, 57.

N.

Nautilus, 124.  
Nebulae, their nature, 251.  
Necker, on metallic veins, 257.  
Nevado de Toluca, volcanic, 213.  
New England, its waste, 169.  
New Holland, geology of, 303.  
New Red Conglomerate, 57.  
Niagara falls, and river, 168.  
Nicaragua, volcano in, 218.  
Niger, delta of, 164.  
Nile, delta of, 164.  
Nitrogen in the earth, 39.  
Norway, geology of, 201.  
Nova Scotia, its waste, 169.  
Nubia, geology of, 204.  
Nummulite sketch of, 127.

O.

Obsidian, 75.  
Ocean, its depth, 10.  
Ocean, its geological agency, 169.  
Old Red Sandstone, 58.  
Omalius D'Halloy's classification of rocks, 35.  
Oolitic system described, 55.  
Ophicalce, 44.  
Ophiolite, 74.  
Ophite, 74.  
Order of creation, table of, 93.  
Organic remains described, 80. How preserved in the rocks, 82.  
Determined, 82. Classification of, 83. Mostly marine, 83. Amount of in the rocks, 83. Height of, above the sea, 84. Distribution of, 85. In different formations, 87. How far they identify strata, 88. Tabular view of, 89, 90. Vertical range of, 86. Compared with living species, 101. Number of species of, 101. Tropical in high latitudes, 102. Description of particular species of, 104. Not contemporaries of existing species, 156.  
Orinithichnites, 147.  
Orinoco, delta of, 164.  
Ornithoidichnites, sketch of, 148.

**O**rthoceratites sketch of, 125.  
**O**ryctology, 80.  
**O**sseous Breccia, 52.  
**O**x fossil, 143.  
**O**xigen in the earth, 39, 40.

**P.**  
**P**achydermata, extinct, 141.  
**P**alæoniscus, sketch of, 132.  
**P**alæontological classification, 36. Chart, 99.  
**P**alæontology, 80.  
**P**alæotherium, sketch of, 141.  
**P**alestine, geology of, 297.  
**P**alisadoes, 74.  
**P**allas, on geology, 279.  
**P**apandayang, volcano of, 215.  
**P**arker, Rev. Mr. his tour, &c. 222.  
**P**arrot, his objections to internal heat, 247.  
**P**atrick, Bishop, his views of creation, 271.  
**P**ear encrinite, sketch of, 116.  
**P**eat, 47. How formed, 207. Analysis of, 208.  
**P**egmatite, 66.  
**P**ele's hair, or volcanic glass, 86.  
**P**entacrinitite Briarean, 115.  
**P**eperino, 76.  
**P**eriod geological defined, 51.  
**P**eriods of geology, long, 159.  
**P**eriods of organic being on the globe, 92, 147.  
**P**erkins, Rev. Justin, specimens from, 299.  
**P**ersia, geology of, 296.  
**P**etrification its nature, &c. 81. Recent, 82.  
**P**etroleum, 177.  
**P**etrosilex, 68.  
**P**hillips, Prof. John, his classification of rocks, 36. Unstratified do. 65.  
**P**honolite, 68.  
**P**hysico-theological school, 279.  
**P**ic, volcano of, 275.  
**P**urgatories, of Newport, R.I. 171.  
**P**itch lake in Trinidad, 177, 309.  
**P**itchstone, 75.  
**P**lans of the Deity as shewn by geology, 263.  
**P**latters giant, 277.  
**P**latinum, where found, 44, 45.  
**P**layfair's Illustrations, 280.  
**P**lesiosaurus, sketch of, 134.  
**P**liocene strata, 88.

**P**lot on organic remains, 278.  
**P**lutonic rocks, described, 66.  
**P**o, delta of, 164. Embankments on, 204.  
**P**oisson's objections to internal heat, 249.  
**P**oland, geology of, 296.  
**P**olynesia, do. do. 303.  
**P**olyparia, agency of, 204.  
**P**olypoi or Polyparia, sketch of, 116.  
**P**olypodichnites, 151.  
**P**ompeii buried, 214.  
**P**opocatapelt, 218.  
**P**orphyry described, 68. Pyroxenic, 69. Where found, 42.  
**P**ortugal, geology of, 293.  
**P**otassa in the earth, 40.  
**P**recious stones in diluvium, 53.  
**P**rimary conglomerates, 54. Plutonic rocks, 77. Rocks defined, 31. Described, 60. Their origin, 242, 244.  
**P**roducta, sketch of, 128.  
**P**rotogine, 163.  
**P**rovidence of God over the world, 259.  
**P**rovinces Botanical and Zoological, 85.  
**P**terodactyle, sketch of, 137.  
**P**xenic porphyry, 69.  
**P**ythagoras, his views of geology, 277.

**Q.**  
**Q**uaquaversal dip, 29.  
**Q**uartz Rock, 61.

**R.**  
**R**adiata, 113.  
**R**aindrops, impressions of, on stone 150.  
**R**ay's theory of the Earth, 278.  
**R**ecent Plutonic rocks, 77.  
**R**ed River Raft, 208.  
**R**ed Sandstone, 57. Of Nova Scotia, N. England, New Jersey, &c. 314.  
**R**eptiles, 132.  
**R**hinoceros fossil, 143.  
**R**hone, delta of, 164, 209.  
**R**ivers, their agency, 164.  
**R**obinson, Dr. on the cities of the plain, 226.  
**R**ock salt described, 50. In Persia, 10. Where found, 42.

Rocking stones, 51. In Barre, 52. in Fall River, 52.  
 Rocks, chemical composition of, 40. Defined, 9. How worn down, 163. Primary, stratified, their origin, 242, 244. Useful, their situation in the earth, 421.  
 Roman cement, 16.  
 Rozet's classification, 35.  
 Russia, geology of, 296.

**S.**

Saurians fossil, 132.  
 Saurodichnites, 148.  
 Saliferous system, described, 57.  
 Salt Rock, its origin, 211. In Siberia and Mexico, 211. Salt springs, 181.  
 Sandwich islands, volcanic, 217.  
 Saturn covered by a fluid, 251.  
 Saussure on the Alps, 279.  
 Schenck on fossil fishes, 278.  
 Schools of mines, 279.  
 Slavonia, geology of, 295.  
 Scorpion fossil, 121.  
 Scotland, geology of, 289.  
 Seals, their number, 203.  
 Seam, defined, 11.  
 Secondary Plutonic Rocks, 77.  
 Secondary rocks defined, 31. Described, 55.  
 Section ideal of the earth's crust, 19.  
 Sections geological, 79.  
 Sedgwick on metallic veins, 256.  
 Sedgwick's classification of Rocks, 36.  
 Sedimentary rocks 54.  
 Septaria, 15.  
 Scrope's classification of unstratified rocks, 65.  
 Serpentine, 61, 74. Where found, 42.  
 Seybert, Dr. 282.  
 Shark fossil, 131.  
 Shark's tooth, sketch of, 131.  
 Shells, chambered, 123. Microscopic, 84. Their vertical range in the strata, 98. The number of living and fossil, 101.  
 Siberia, geology of, 300.  
 Sienitic greenstone, 69.  
 Sienite described, 67. Where found, 42.  
 Sigillaria, sketch of, 108.  
 Silica in the earth, 40.

Skaptar Jokul, quantity of lava thrown from, 216.  
 Skiddau, system of, described, 60.  
 Slime pits near the dead sea, 226.  
 Smith, Dr. J. P. his views of creation, 271.  
 Smith, Wm. his labors, 280.  
 Soda in the earth, 40.  
 Soil, its composition, 47.  
 Soils, a proof of divine goodness, 260.  
 Solfatara defined, 212.  
 Somma, 215.  
 South America, geology of, 307.  
 Southern Africa, geology of, 305.  
 Sowerby, on fossil shells, 282.  
 Spain, geology of, 293.  
 Species had once a wider range, 86. How limited, 86. Their distribution, &c. 204.  
 Spiders, fossil, 121.  
 Spirifer, sketch of, 128.  
 Spirula, 125.  
 Springs, gas, 182. Phenomena of, 178. Salt in the United States, 181. Their origin, 181.  
 St. Croix, geology of, 309.  
 Stabæ buried, 214.  
 Steatite of N. England, 61.  
 Stenocerasurus, 137.  
 Stigmaria, sketch of, 109.  
 Strabo on geology, 277.  
 Strata bent, 14. Elevation of, 28. how identified, 88. Overturned in N. England, 32. In the Alps, 31. Their thickness, how known, 63. In England, 83. Europe, 64. Pennsylvania, 63. Tauris, 64.  
 Stratification, defined, 11.  
 Stratified rocks, deposited from Water, 54.  
 Strike of strata, 26.  
 Stromboli, 18.  
 Structures in rocks, how caused, 18.  
 Subsidence, on Columbia River, 222.  
 Subteranean forests, 111, 223.  
 Sulphate of Lime, deposited from water, 50.  
 Sulphur in the earth, 39.  
 Sumbawa, eruption in, 214.  
 Sun, its present supposed state, 251.

Siliceous marl, 47, 49. Sinter, 47, 49.  
 Silliman, Prof. his journal, 283.  
 Silurian system described, 58.  
 Silver, where found, 44, 45.  
 Simple substances in the earth, 39.  
 Sinaite, 68.  
 Sinter siliceous, 176.  
 Sivatherium, 143.  
 Superposition of fossiliferous rocks, 31. Primary, 31.  
 Survey, geological, of Arkansas, 285. Of Connecticut, 286. Of Delaware, 286. Of England, 288. Of France, 288. Of Georgia, 286. Of Indiana, 286. Of Iowa, 287. Of Kentucky, 287. Of Maine, 285. Of Massachusetts, 284. Of Maryland, 285. Of Michigan, 286. Of New Jersey, 286. Of New York, 285. Of North Carolina, 284. Of Ohio, 285. Of Pennsylvania, 286. Of Rhode Island, 286. Of Tennessee, 284. Of the Erie Canal, 287. Of Virginia, 285.  
 Sweden, geology of, 291. Its shores rising, 222.  
 Switzerland, geology of, 294.  
 Synclinal axis, 29.  
 Syria, geology of, 297.  
 System of things the same in all ages, 259. Present, had a beginning, 258.  
 Systems of elevation, 153. Of organic beings on the globe, 259.

T.

Tacosa, volcanic, 213.  
 Talcose slate, 61.  
 Tartary, geology of, 299.  
 Taylor, Jeremy, his views of death, 275.  
 Teleosauri, 137.  
 Temperature of the globe from external sources, 230. Internal, do. 231.  
 Terebratula, sketch of, 128.  
 Terrain defined, 28.  
 Tertiary strata, defined, 30. Described, 53, 54. Plutonic rocks, 77.  
 Tetrapodichnites, 151.  
 Thermal Springs, 224, 233.

Thibet, geology of, 300.  
 Tides, their geological effect, 172.  
 Time, geological and chronological, 96.  
 Titan's pier, 71.  
 Toadstone, 71.  
 Toads preserved in rocks, 81.  
 Tortoises fossil, 137. Tracks of, 147.  
 Totten, his experiments on the expansion of rocks, 240.  
 Trachyte described, 69.  
 Trachytic lava, 75. Porphyry, 70.  
 Tracks human, 149. Of animals, 146. How preserved, 150.  
 Transition rocks, 31.  
 Transylvania, geology of, 295.  
 Trap rocks, 69. West of Rocky Mountains, 74. Tuff, 75.  
 Travertin, 47, 49. How formed, 175.  
 Tree ferns, 106.  
 Tribolites fossil, 121. Sketch of, 122.  
 Trinidad, pitch lake in, 177.  
 Truttenburg, the deepest mine, 205.  
 Tufaceous conglomerate, 76.  
 Tuff, 75. Volcanic, 75.  
 Turkey, in Asia, geology of, 296. In Europe, 296.

U.

Ulodendron, sketch of, 108.  
 Uniformity of nature, 188, 162.  
 United States, geology of, 311.  
 Unstratified rocks, 11. Lithological character of, 64. Of igneous origin, 227. Their fusibility, 76. Their mode of occurring, 20.

V.

Valley of the Mississippi, geology of, 313.  
 Valleys, how formed, 29, 260. Of denudation, 165. Of elevation, 168. Of subsidence, 168. Of the Connecticut, 167. Terraced, 145. Transverse and longitudinal, 166.  
 Variegated marl described, 57.  
 Vegetable life when begun, 91. Remains, 91. In the newer strata, 92. In the Carboniferous strata, 92.  
 Veins defined, 20. In Beverly, 23. In Chester, 26. In Cohasset, 23. In Colrain, 25. In Conway, 25. In Cornwall, Eng. 25. In

Salem, 24. In Westhampton, 23. Metallic, their width, 255. How filled, 256. In Cornwall, sketch of, 256. Most productive near unstratified rocks, 255. Rocks traversed by, 255. Of injection, 21. Of Segregation, 20. Their relative age, 23.

Villarica, 218.

Volcanic action, defined, 217. Hypothesis of, 237. Agency bene ficial, 262. Breccia, 75. Craters ancient, 226. Glass of Sandwich Islands, 76. Power, its seat, 220. Tuff, 75. Volcanos central, 212. Extinct and active, 212, 224. In lines, 212. Products of, 76. Submarine and aerial, 212. Their number, 218.

Von Buch on Craters, 215.

W.

Wacke described, 71.

Ward, Dr. on fossil footmarks, 148.

Water, its distribution, 261.

Watt's experiments on Basalt, 74.

Waves their effect, 169.

Wells artesian, 179.

Werner's Theory of the earth, 280. Of veins, 256.

West Africa, geology of, 305. Indies, 309.

Whitsunday Isle, sketch of, 205.

Woodward's theory of the earth, 279.

World, had a beginning, 259. Its supposed eternity, 258.

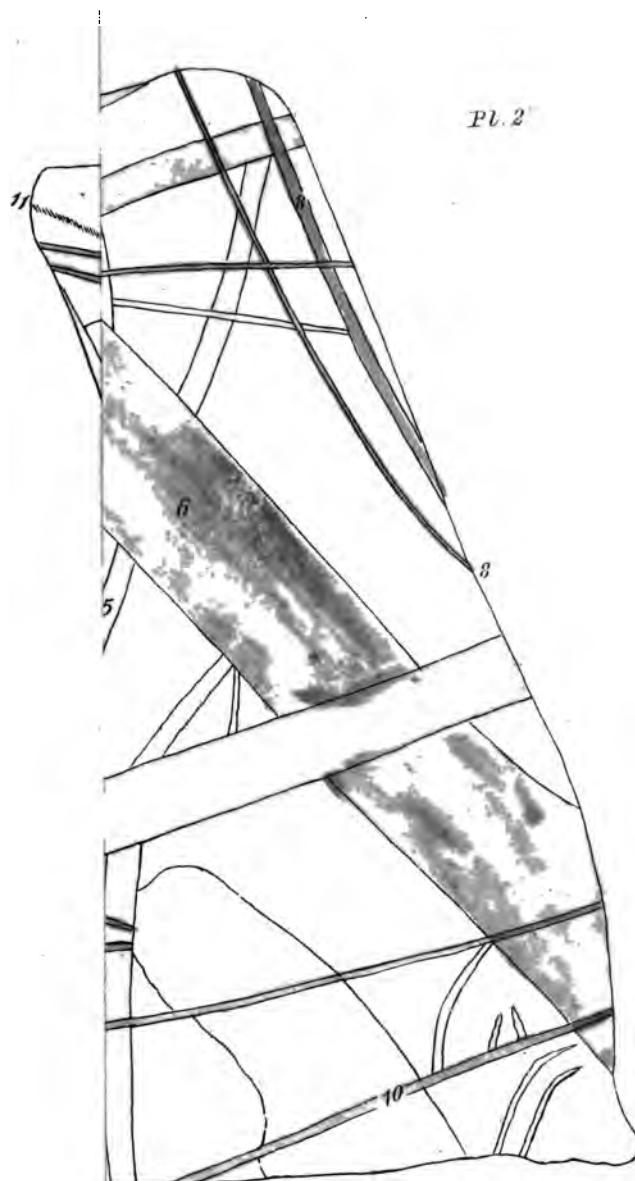
## Z.

Zechstein, 57.

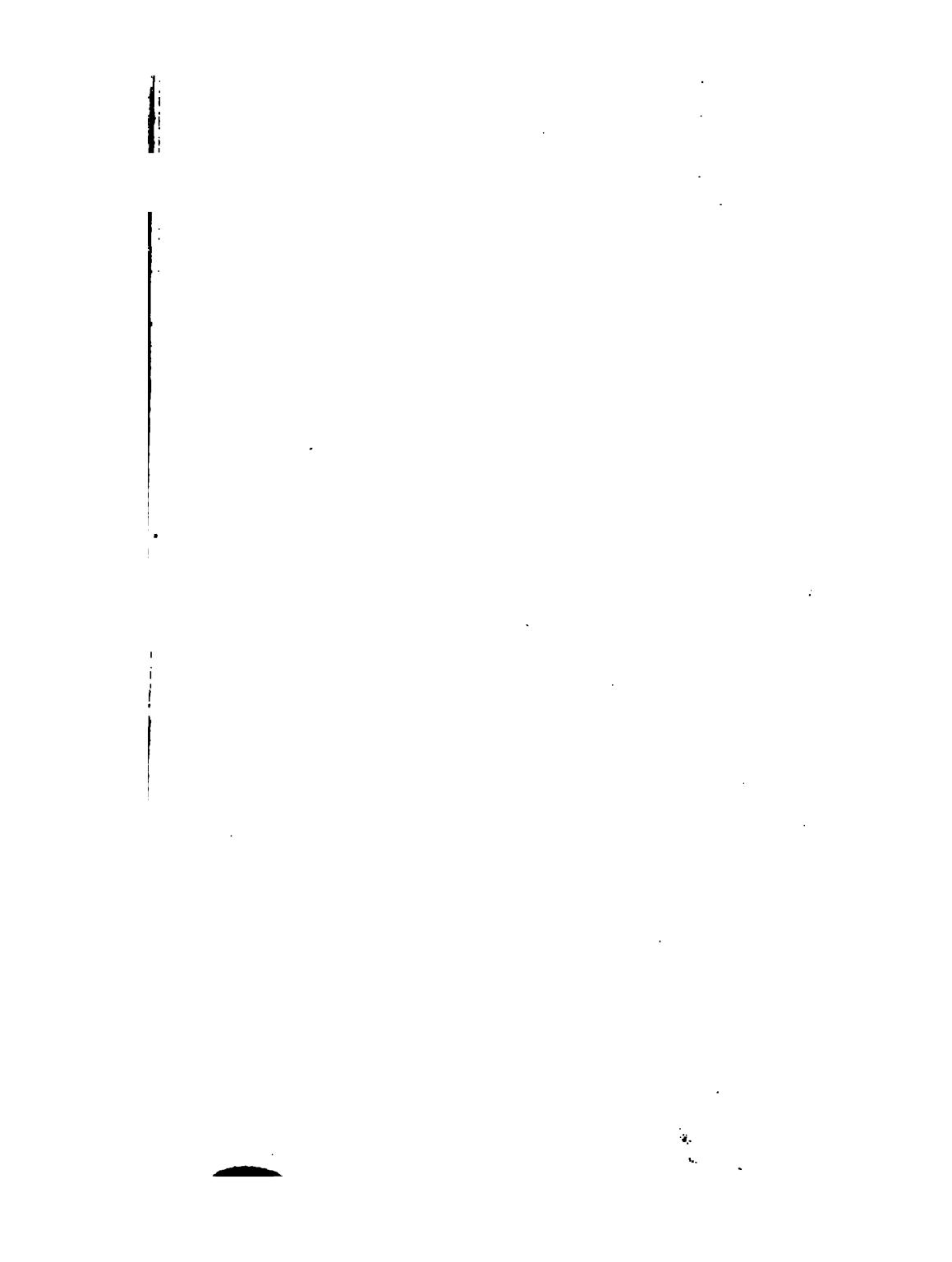
Zinc, its ores and situation, 45.

Zoophytes, their vertical range in the strata, 97.

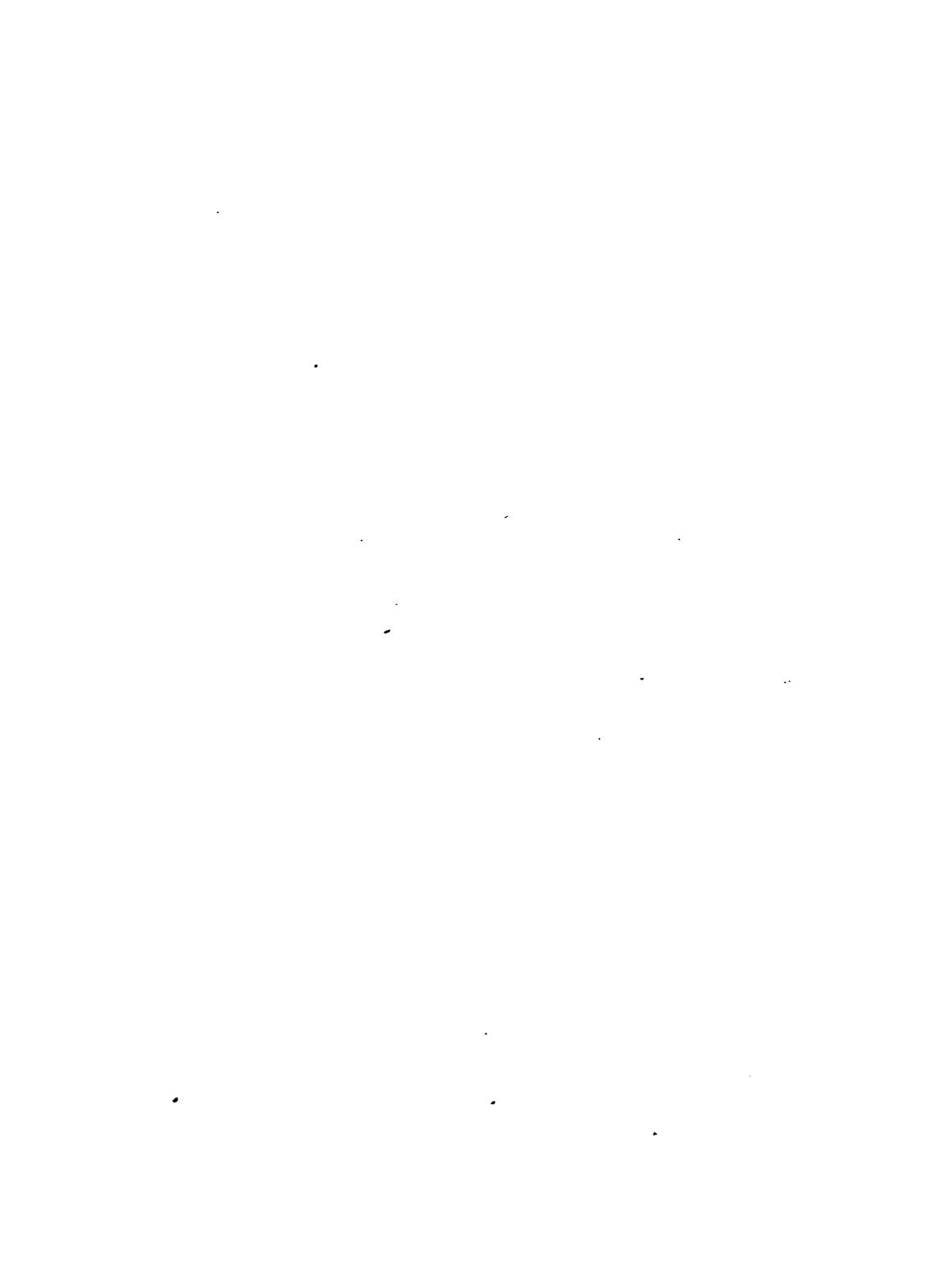
Pl. 2

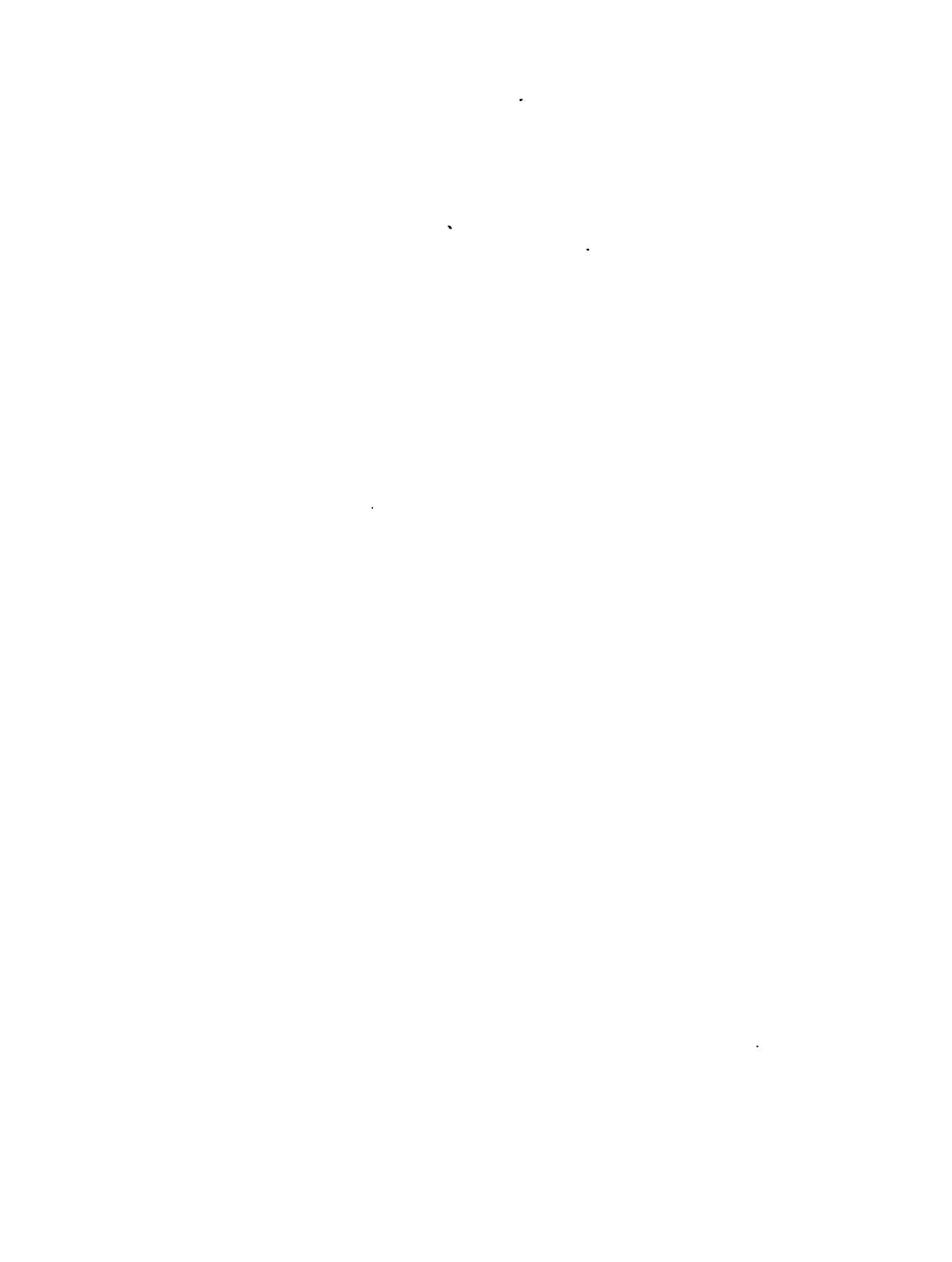


E, SALEM.



















550 .H674

Elementary geology.

C.1

Stanford University Libraries



3 6105 032 264 751

W3671.6

